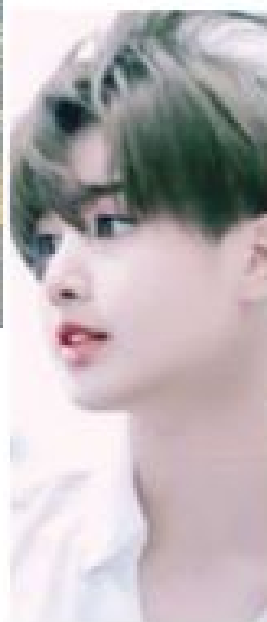




LiskookiAnne

How To Be A Real Man 101



Liskook AU

How To Be A Real Man 101 | Liskook [COMPLETED]

Anne Nature

Published: 2020

Source: <https://www.wattpad.com>

Cast of Characters

Pranpriya Manobal

19 years old

Missing Princess of Thailand

Limario Manoban

19 years old

Mysterious Transferee from an unknown country

Lalisa Brucshweiler

19 years old

A student at Ladium Elite University

Jeon Jungkook

19 years old

Son of the President of South Korea

Kim Taehyung

20 years old

Son of the Chief Justice of South Korea

Park Jimin

20 years old

Son of the Prime Minister of South Korea

Mario Chayut

26 years old

Son of the Prime Minister of Thailand

Tzuyu Chou

18 years old

Princess of Taiwan

Other casts are members of Blackpink



Author's Note

I love reading comments so please leave me some 🐼🐼🐼

A Broken Promise

At the Palace

Pranpriya's POV

"Where could she be?" I tried not to giggle as I hide inside my closet.

"We must see her or else the queen will scold us." one of the servants said.

"How can a princess act like this!" the other servant frustratedly asked.

I just covered my mouth to stop myself from laughing. Then I heard footsteps leaving my room.

Finally clear!

I went out of the closet and peeked at the outside door.

I saw a lot of servants and guards in panic of finding me. They are really worried.

But I will not show myself yet.

I need to leave this place

I need to leave this palace.

I need to see him.

My dearest friend.

Finally I was able to sneak out of the palace. And head to our secret place. My friend and I's secret place.

A smile crept on my lips when I saw him under the tree lying on the grass with closed eyes.

I tiptoed to him hoping that I can surprise him but when I was already near,

"What took you so long Pranpriya?" he said with eyes closed.

"Hmp! How can you know I'm here already?" I pouted.

"I didn't have a big eyes to not see everything." he said then he sat down and finally looked at me.

He observed me from head to toe. And I got conscious.

It's funny how a 9 year old like me will get conscious around him.

But who won't be?

When a perfect looking boy like him is studying your features like this.

"Tell me, did the queen already found out why you're always sneaking out like this?" he asked worriedly.

"No, she doesn't know yet. I plan not to tell her about you" I said

and he frowned.

"Why?" he asked.

"Because she doesn't want me to have friends." I looked down shyly.

My grandmother has always told me not to be friends with other people especially if they're not from the royal family. My friend right here is not from a royal family. He is from a simple one. And I know my queen grandmother will scold me for that.

"I know she just don't want you to be friends with normal people like me." he said with his sad eyes.

I bit my lip because what he said is true.

"I'm sorry.. But nothing will change right? We're still friends?" I said as I sat down beside him.

"Yeah of course. You will still be my precious princess" he said as he tucked a lock of hair behind my ear.

"Tomorrow is my 10th birthday. I want you to be there. We will be having a grand celebration in the palace!" I said excitedly.

"Are you sure I can go? What if your grandmother finds out?" he asked.

"It's okay, a lot of people will go. They won't notice you." I said.

"Okay! I will go. By the way, thank you so much" he said.

"For what?" I asked.

"For being my friend even though I'm just an ordinary boy but you still befriended me."

"You're not just an ordinary boy. You are very special." I said and he smiled.

"By the way, I have something for you." he said and he pulled something from his pocket. He showed me a silver necklace with a heart-shaped pendant.

"Turn around." he said and I turned. He gently placed the necklace on my chest and he locked it on the back.

"Thank you so much!" I said while holding the pendant which rests on my chest.

"Do you like it?" he asked.

"I love it!" I said nodding.

"I'm glad you like it. That pendant is my heart and I'm giving it to you." he said and I smiled widely.

Then he leaned to my face slowly.

He slowly kissed my cheeks and it made my heart warm.

I know I'm still young but what I feel for him is different. He is so special to me.

He's genuinely kind. Unlike others who will just pretend to like me because I'm a princess.

I held my cheek which he kissed.

"We will see each other again" he said.

"Promise?" I offered my pinky finger.

"Promise!" he showed his boxy smile as he twist our pinkies together.

I was very happy that day.

That was my 9 year old self promising to see him again and so I waited.

On my 10th birthday I waited for him.

But he never came.

I looked for him on our secret meeting place but he was not there.

I looked for him everywhere, but not a shadow of him showed.

I waited for him on every birthday celebration I had.

I have a perfect life. A luxurious one.

I can eat whatever I want. I can have whatever I want.

But I have no friends.

He was my only friend.

But he broke his promise.

This day, is my 19th birthday, only one year left and I will be taking over the the country.

My grandmother who is now getting weaker planned to have me sit on her throne as a queen when I turned 20. She has taught me everything on how to rule the country and I gained all the knowledge I need for that.

I want to be a queen. But I also want to be a girl who has friends.

I never had any friends. *He* was my only friend but he's gone without even saying goodbye.

I have a cousin with the same age as mine but she doesn't like me.

I can feel that she hates me and I don't know why.

"Princess, the party will start. Your presence is requested by the queen." I nod at the servant and she bowed her head.

I head out of my room wearing this itchy ball gown as I try to walk elegantly just like how my teacher taught me.

Be elegant all the time.

I slowly walked down the staircase.

Everyone's attention was now focused on me as my name was announced.

I saw my queen grandmother smiling at me but I also noticed my Aunt Sarah and my cousin Eunha's scowling faces.

'Yeah, I know you're not happy, I'm not happy too' I said myself.

Everyone clapped their hands as I walked down.

"Happy birthday my princess!" my grandmother greeted me.

"Thank you so much!" I said as I hug her.

"Happy birthday cousin" Eunha greeted and I just smiled.

"Happy birthday Pranpriya!" Aunt Sarah gave me a small peck on the cheek but I know her too well.

I know they both despise me but I don't know the reason why.

All I know is out of all the people here on this palace, the only person who loves me and cares for me genuinely is my grandmother.

My Aunt who married my Uncle Robert hates me so much. Back then, I heard one of the servant said that she hates me because I will take over the throne instead of her daughter Eunha.

My grandma picked me simply because Eunha is just Uncle Robert's step daughter. Therefore she has no claim to the throne. My grandmother has only two children which is my mother and uncle Robert. But they both died.

My father left me when I was just a baby because my grandmother doesn't want him to marry my mother.

He was just an ordinary citizen and so she made my mother and father broke apart which caused my mother's depression and so she finally committed suicide.

I was left with nothing but my grandmother, my aunt Sarah and my cousin Eunha.

People may think I'm rich but they don't know I'm poor. Poor from love and I long so much for it.

Though I wanted to be a queen to help my country, I also wanted to live a normal life where I can have friends, I can talk to just anyone and I can dance.

Yes. Dancing is my guilty pleasure. When no one is around, I will dance nonstop. I had to keep it a secret tho because my grandma will surely hate it.

She doesn't want me to do unlady-like things.

"Pranpriya, come here." My grandmother called.

"Yes grandmother?" I asked.

"I would like you to meet Mario. He is the son of the Prime Minister." she said.

I looked at the man and he smiled. He took my hand and gently kissed it.

He looks good but not as handsome as *him*.

"Nice to meet you" he said

"Nice to meet you too." I answered.

"I didn't know Prime Minister Chayut has a son?" I asked. I haven't seen him before even though I always see the prime minister and his wife.

"Because he was studying abroad and he just came back" Grandmother explained.

"I see." I muttered. I'm nervous about this. I can tell my grandmother is up to something and I think I'm not gonna like it.

"Pranpriya my dear, Mario Chayut here will be your husband when you take over the crown." she casually said like it's not a big deal.

My eyes flew wide open as I look at her.

"Is this a joke? I asked her.

I can't believe this. This is really insane! I look at Mario but he seemed to be not shocked at the announcement. He must have known about this.

"This is not a joke Pranpriya. I'll explain everything to you later but for now, go and entertain some of the guests. She said and she walked away.

"See you later Princess" Mario said and he left me.

I was frozen on my spot unable to think clearly.

I will marry him? I don't even know him.

How I wish *he* was here. He's the only one I wanted to be with.

If I could only travel to Korea. I know he's there. I know he's also waiting for me just like I wait for him.

I wish my life was different. It would have been simpler. But happier.



Author's Note

Hi guys! How are you all. I miss writing and I plan to start writing again.

I hope you'll support this story just like how you supported the other one. Thank you so much!!! 

The Pincess' Death

Queen's Bedroom

Pranpriya's POV

I knocked on the big wooden door of the queen.

"Come on in, Princess!" sir Rudolph greeted me with a warm smile.

He is my grandmother's most loyal right hand. He looks very strict but he loves me and spoils me so much. I have done a lot of naughty things around the palace but he would always cover up for me. That's why I have a soft heart for the old man. I love him as if he's my father.

"Thank you!" I bowed. Then I entered the queen's very big room only to see her lying on her bed weakly.

I don't know what happened but it seemed she's very weak this time. I walk near her and I cannot hide the worry on my face.

"Pranpriya my dear, come. I need to tell you something very important." She said as she point to the chair next to her bed.

I sat on it and held her hands.

"What is it grandmother?" I asked worriedly. I can tell that what she will convince me about the marriage of Mario and I and I badly wanted to know why.

"I am getting weaker. And the country needs a young and stong successor. You are the only one left in this family Pranpriya and you know you need to take over on your 20th birthday." she said.

I nodded. I know about this already. All my life I was trained and taught to rule the country just like how my grandma does. And I am very confident that I can rule it properly.

"But you're too young and you lack experience. You will need to have someone who will guide you and be there for you." she said. Now I finally understand why she wants me to marry that guy.

In all honesty, I really don't mind marrying someone to help me. I can do anything for the country. But my heart is already beating for someone else. And that is not Mario.

"Mario is the first son of the Prime Minister. He is strong, smart and they are very powerful. I am sure that he will take care of you." she said while looking into my eyes.

"But, did he agree to this?" I asked.

"Yes, that's the reason why he came home just to meet you" she

said while smiling. "You will rule the country Lisa, you will be a good leader. A queen whom everybody loves. Imagine the poor families that you can help. You've always wanted this remember?" she said.

"Yes! I want to help everyone in this country!" I said with voice full of conviction.

"I know you will be a good queen. Just one year left and I can finally rest." she said. Her voice is weak. My grandmother is already in her 70s and she's been holding on just so I can take over at the right time.

"Grandma, what will happen if I suddenly died? Who will take over?" I asked and she was shocked to hear it.

"What are you talking about! You will not die Pranjyoti!" She said.

"But what if?" I asked.

"Well.. it would either be Eunha or the people will vote for someone who they think deserves to be the queen since you are the only one left with a royal blood." she said and I nodded.

"So, you understand now why you need to marry him? Besides you still have a year to get to know him. You can learn to love him. He is handsome and kind. Please do this for me Pranjyoti. Please do this for the country." she said as she squeeze my hand.

"I will" I said and I nodded.

I have no choice. I can do anything for the country and especially for my grandmother.

If this is the only way to help the people of my country, I don't mind marrying anyone.

She smiled at me and I quickly took my leave.

I went to the palace garden where I usually relax everytime I am stressed out or everytime I'm having a problem.

The garden has lots of flowers that I love and they always make me happy.

Even though the garden is dark because it is night time, I can still see the beautiful flowers surrounding it.

I sat on one of the wooden chair and closed my eyes.

This is the life that I have. I will be the queen. I will marry the Prime Minister's son and I will rule the country.

Suddenly, I heard a gun shot.

My chest started aching and when I looked down. I realized it was me who was shot.

Blood started leaking on my chest and I slowly closed my eyes.

Is this It?

The end of me?

My death?

Change of Plan

In a Private Room

Pranpriya's POV

I woke up to see that I'm inside in an unfamiliar room.

"Where am I?"

"Oh my God! Finally you're awake!" I heard Sir Rudolph's voice.

"Where am I? What am I doing here?" I looked down on my chest when I remembered what happened. I was shot but I'm still alive.

"How come?" I asked as I look on my chest with a bandage.

"You were shot" he said.

"By whom?" I asked. Why would I get shot? I don't understand.

"I will explain everything to you Pranpriya and you should listen." he said and I nodded. He seemed to look serious and I can tell I'm in a dangerous situation now.

"Someone is planning to kill you! You were lucky, you were saved by the pendant of your necklace. The bullet was not able to push through your heart because it was blocked by the pendant." he said and my mouth gaped open. He pointed to the bedside table where the necklace is.

I saw the necklace with a bullet hole on the heart pendant.

It was *his* necklace.

It saved me from death.

My brows furrowed. Why would someone kill me?

"Kill me? But why?" I asked worriedly.

"Yes. We suspect that someone wants to have you killed because you are the next in line to the throne." he said and I finally understood.

"Do you know who is behind all of this?" I asked curiously.

"No. We don't know yet but the queen has her suspects. We still need to investigate to know who's behind all of this." he said and I suddenly got worried for my grandma. I know she's worried about me.

"But what are we gonna do now? I survived and they will probably try to do it again if they see me." I said.

I'm worried about myself too. I don't want to die yet. I want to live longer not die like this.

"Princess, I need to tell you something and I hope you understand this. We suddenly had a change of plan." Sir Rudolph said while

looking straight at me.

"The queen has announced that you're already dead." he said and my jaw dropped.

"Why?"

"All of this is the queen's new plan. We have to pretend that you already died because it's the only way to keep you safe until you turn 20. We also need to catch the culprit before you take over. We will just announce that you are still alive on your 20th birthday. Until then, no one should see you." he said and I nodded.

"But what am I gonna do for a whole year? Am I gonna hide in this room the whole time?" I asked.

"No, you will have to travel abroad and hide there. No one must know you're real identity. You need to pretend to be someone else so that no one will know that you are a princess." he said.

"Travel abroad?" I asked. Where? I never expected this to happen to me. All my life I thought I will just live peacefully in my country.

"Yes. You will travel abroad. You will pretend to be a college student and you must study well to gain more knowledge and skills before you finally became a queen. Until then, we can finally catch the person behind the planned murder for you." he said.

"Where will I go?" I worriedly asked.

"South Korea" he said and my heart started hammering out of my chest.

South Korea.

He is Korean.

I know he is there. I can feel it.

I can finally see him.



Author's Note

Can you guess who's she referring to? 🕵️

The Last Day As A Princess

Incheon International Airport

Pranpriya's POV

I look outside the plane window as I wait for the plane to finally land on the country I never thought I would set foot on.

"Are you nervous?" Kunpimook asked. He is the son of sir Rudolph and he is the one to accompany me since his father is staying with my grandmother.

"Yes, I'm nervous!" I admitted.

"Don't worry Pranpriya. Korea is a nice country. You will like it there." he said and I nodded.

Kunpimook studies in South Korea for a year now. And I will also study there. What makes me nervous is that I've never been in a real school before. I was home schooled ever since and the queen just hired tutors for me. I don't know how to act around people you call classmates and a real teacher.

Kunpimook said that the school is big and only those who came from prominent families can enrol. He even said that he is classmates with the sons of the leaders of the countries.

Unlike Thailand's government structure which has A Queen and a Prime Minister as a leader, the South Korean Government is different because it is being lead by a President.

As much as I am nervous, I'm still excited to know the countries traditions and cultures. The knowledge I will gain in the school will greatly help me once I became the queen.

After hours of travel, we finally landed on the country. I can finally remove my covers on my face. I had to leave the country while covering my face so that no one would know that I am the princess.

"We will go to a hotel first Princess. Is that fine with you?" he asked politely.

"Please don't call me Princess here. I'm not a princess here." I said and smiled.

"As you wish princess" he said and I rolled my eyes.

I looked around while breathing the air of the country. Seoul is cold compared to my Thailand but I love the scenery. The place is refreshing and the city is clean.

I'm secretly hoping I can make new friends here. I make it a goal

to befriend all of my classmates.

We ride on his car and we finally arrived on a hotel.

"This will be your room while we still process your enrolment. Dad has already taken care of your fake ids and requirements but you still need to pick the subjects you would want." he explained.

I nodded.

"You think I can pull this off without anyone knowing the truth?" I asked worriedly.

I'm so nervous about this whole plan but Sir Rudolph and Kunpimook are somewhat confident about it.

"You can do it! Trust me Princess." he said and he smiled at me.

"By the way, your uniform will be delivered here tomorrow morning as well as your wig and other clothes." he said.

"Wig?" I asked.

"Yes, you will have to wear a wig because father said you don't want to cut your long hair. My classmates will immediately know that you're a girl if they see your long blonde hair." he said and he chuckled.

I sighed.

Well.. I love my hair and so I have no choice but to wear a man's wig.

Yes. I will pretend to be a boy. The original plan is I'm gonna have to enrol in an exclusive elite university which offers a course on Political Government. The course will help me develop my knowledge more which can be a great help once I became the queen. But the problem is that, the school is an all-boy school. Which means I'm gonna have to pretend that I'm a boy.

Sir Rudolph said it is the best way to hide me from those who would want to kill me. Pretending to be a boy in a foreign country will help me hide from them. Whoever they are who wants to have me out of the picture from rulling the country.

My grandma helped me enrolled in the university without taking the exam. But I still plan on taking the exam tomorrow. I am confident I can easily pass the exam because I think I was taught well by my tutors. I can speak a lot of language and Korean is one of them. Given my age, I will be taking the 2nd year class with 15 classmates and Kunpimook is one of them because we are of the same age.

Kunpimook told me that the university has a controlled number of student so that the professor can focus on teaching the students well.

The students are sons of Korea's political leaders which makes me nervous because I don't know much about the Korean government.

We will be taught about History, International Language,

Government Administration, South Korean Law, Political Science, Economics, International Law and International Relations. The university also offers subjects such as Visual Arts, Music, Dance and Sports. All of which are I'm interested to take.

The name of the University that I'm going to is Yonsei Elite University and it only has a total of 120 students. There are only 15 students per class and 2 sections per year level.

The University has a sister school named Ladium Elite University which is an all-girl school. I really wish I can just go to that school instead of the boy school but Sir Rudolph said it would be dangerous for me.

All of the students enrolled in Yonsei must stay inside the campus dorm. And sadly we are to share a room with one of our classmates. I asked Kunpimook if we can share a room instead but to my dismay he said the rooms' pairing are decided by draw lots.

It will really be awkward for me to share a room with a boy. I just hope he will be a gentleman to me.

Blue Palace

Jungkook's POV

Mom and I are silently eating our breakfast while father who is the president is reading a newspaper while drinking his coffee.

It is seldom we eat this way. The three of us all together. Because my father is always busy and he's always not at home. I too am always not at home because I stay in the dorm of the university I go to.

"This is a very bad news for Thailand." I hear my father say.

"What is it my dear?" My mother asked worriedly.

"The only living heir of the Queen was shot to death. Now the people are enraged because the queen is old enough and someone must take over soon. But the princess is now gone and it worries the people of their country." he explained and we nodded.

"That's too bad dad. Can we help them?" I asked him.

"I'm sorry son but I think there is nothing we can do. The queen must choose another successor to calm their people." he said and I just nodded.

Princess huh? Isn't she the one Taehyung always mentions to us?

Poor Taehyung. He will be really sad if he hears this news that the princess he loves is now dead.

"How was your exam by the way?" My father asked.

It was the qualifying exam I took for me to enrol in the 2nd year of college. I'm taking up Political Government so that I can follow my father's path. Though there's a heavy pressure on my shoulder, I still make sure I do not disappoint him.

"The result is not out yet but I'm confident I will score the highest

again dad." I confidently said.

I know my classmates too well. They are smart I admit but I always score on top. Not a single one of them has beaten me to it.

"Good. Keep it up son!" he smiled.

"Now I have to go, I still have a meeting to attend to." he said then he kissed my mother's cheek and he left us.

It is always like this.

My father will always be busy but my mom will patiently wait for him. My father is lucky to have a loving and understanding wife just like my mother.

I hope that someday, when I became the president myself, I will meet a girl as loving and understanding as my mom.

Someone who will also patiently wait for me at home while I work for the country.

The Disappointing Result

At the Hotel

Pranpriya's POV

"How do I look?" I asked Kunpimook.

"Oh my God Princess, you look different!" he said.

I'm now wearing the wig he ordered and the school uniform.

"Do I look like a real man now?" I asked.

"Yes but there's still a problem." he shyly said.

"What is it?" I asked worriedly.

"Uhhh..I'm sorry princess but.." he shyly pointed at my chest.

When I look at my chest, I realized my breast are obvious.

"What am I gonna do? How will I hide this?" I asked him but he too don't know what to do.

We just looked at each other shyly.

"Uhhh.. There's this thing lesbians do to hide it" he said and I got the idea.

"Oh.. okay I think I got it" I said.

Kunpimook smiled.

I will have to use something to press my breast to make it look flat but I'm afraid it will hurt. Yet I have no choice right?

"By the way, here's your I.D." he said.

I took the id and read it.

"Limario Manoban? why Limario?" I asked him curiously.

"The queen doesn't want you to forget your engagement with the prime minister's son. That's why she combined your nickname and Mario's name. Li from Lisa and Mario from your fiancée's name." he explained and I just nodded.

The queen really wants me to marry Mario. Well, I can't do anything about it.

"Thank you so much for your help." I bowed.

"No princess. My father and me will do anything for you. The queen helped us a lot. She even gave me the opportunity to study in the best university here in Korea. Without her help, we will be nothing." he said.

"But still, thank you for helping me here in this foreign country. I hope we can be good friends." I said and he smiled.

"You want to be friends with me?" he asked.

"Yes. Why? Don't you want to be my friend?"

"Of course I want to. I'm just shocked that a princess like you wants to be friends with me."

"I'm a normal human being Kunpimook and we are all equal in this world." I said.

"You will be a great queen someday" he said and I smiled.

"By the way, can I have a request princess?"

"Sure, what is it?"

"Will you please call me Bam instead? My classmates calls me Bam. Kunpimook is too long to pronounce." he said and I nodded.

"Sure I will if you stop calling me princess!" I said and he nod.

"Are you sure you will take the exam now? The queen already made sure that it will seem like you took it already." he said and I shook my head.

"No, I will take the exam regardless. I want to enrol in the university because of my hardwork and because of my capabilities not because I got a special favor for being a princess.

"Okay then, be ready so that we can go to the university for you to take the exam." he said and I smiled.

This is it. My first step into schooling.

The next day..

Yonsei Elite University President's Club Office

Jungkook's POV

I entered the our private office to see Jimin playing billiards while Taehyung sulking on one corner.

"What's up with him?" I asked Jimin when I was finally beside him.

"Who? Taehyung?" he asked as he look at Taehyung's direction.

"Yes. Why is he sulking like that?" I whispered.

"He found out about the princess's death. Have you heard the news? It's on the TV" he said and I nodded.

"Yes, dad told me about it." I said as I look over Taehyung's direction.

He really is sad. He must have really love that princess.

I wonder how she looked like. I haven't seen her picture yet. I'm really not interested in princesses. I know one princess and she's really annoying.

Princesses are spoiled brats who doesn't know how to rule their countries. They are just puppets controlled by the King and Queen and I don't like them because of that.

But Taehyung told me that this Princess is different. I'm curious about her but now that she's dead I guess there's no more use to being curious.

"How about we make him a cake so that we can make him happy?" Jimin suggested excitedly.

"Cake? I don't think cakes can compare to a princess." I said and he nodded sadly.

"Hey, today is the result of the qualifying exam right? Why don't we go and see the result today?" I excitedly asked.

"What for? We already know that you will top the result again?" Jimin rolled his eyes and I just grinned.

True to that. I know I will top it again that's why I'm excited to see.

"Come on! Let's go" I plead and started pulling him.

"Will you come with us?" I asked Taehyung but he just shook his head.

"Well, I guess it's just the two of us. We really need to add more members in this group." Jimin muttered.

"I think it's best if we keep this friendship with just the three of us. We've been friends since childhood and a new member will find it hard to catch up on us." I said.

We silently walk the pathway leading to the school's bulletin where the result is posted.

When we got there, students are already surrounding the bulletin while looking at the result.

I just cleared my throat and they immediately stepped aside for me to look.

Well, students here are scared of us. Maybe because I am the son of the president that's why they don't want to mess with me. Jimin on the other hand is the prime minister's son and Taehyung is the Chief justice' son. The three of us intimidates the rest of the students that's why no one bothers to join our group.

They think they must level to our standard for them to get in.

I smiled as I look at the result.

4th Jimin Park 97.02%

3rd Taehyung Kim 97.53%

2nd Jungkook Jeon 98.99%

My brows furrowed.

2nd? How come I'm just second?

I looked at the name on top. And I clenched my fists.

1st Limario Manoban 100%

Who the hell is Limario Manoban?!!!



Author's Note

Sorry guys for the super late update. I'm really busy preparing for the New Year's eve dinner.

Happy New Year everyone!!!

The 2nd Placer's Grudge

Jungkook's POV

"Bro, calm down!" Jimin said as he rub my back.

"Come down? How will I calm down if I just got the 2nd place!" I yelled frustratedly.

"Maybe there was just a mistake with the result. How can a person score perfect? Th exam was hard and I know it is really impossible to score like that." Jimin said while holding his temple.

"Yeah you're right! That guy probably cheated." I said.

"Who are you two talking about? You're disturbing my sleep." Taehyung said as he sat up from the couch. He was taking a nap when we came back to the office.

"Jungkook here is disappointed that he only placed 2nd on the qualifying exam." Jimin explained and Taehyung smiled.

"Wow? Really? It's a miracle then. Who beat him?" Taehyung asked happily.

"Why the fuck are you happy?" I asked him annoyingly.

"Because I like seeing your disppointed face when you lose" he said while laughing.

"What makes it more interesting is that a transferee beat him and he even scored perfect." Jimin said which makes me more mad for remembering the difference in our scores.

"Perfect? That's impossible! The exam was hard. No one will be able to perfect it." Taehyung said.

"I know right! That Limario Manoban must have cheated!" I said. I can feel that there's something wrong about that guy. Whoever he is. I will find out and the whole school will know that he cheated.

"I will ask the professors to review the result. I will not let a transferee like him to get away with this!"

Taehyung and Jimin nodded.

At the Hotel

Pranpriya's POV

"That was a very bad idea Pranpriya!" Kunpimook disappointedly said.

"I'm sorry, I just got carried away." I said while looking down.

"I told you to blend in and not cause something that will draw attention but now everyone's attention is on you because you perfected the exam!" he said while shaking his head.

"What will I do now? Is it really bad?" I asked.

"Yes it is. The president's son is now curious about you even the prime minister's son and the chief justice's son." He said worriedly.

"I'm sorry Bam. I was just carried away because the exam was easy and I was used to doing my best at all time." I explained.

"Well we can't do anything about it now. Let's just pray that you won't be assigned to the same section as the B3." he said.

"B3?" I asked.

"B3 is the name of the group. The members are the son's of the President, Prime Minister and Chief Justice. They are rich, handsome and smart students which everyone looks up to. Everyone is also scared of them because they can punish you really well if you mess with them." he said and It made me really nervous.

"But I didn't do anything wrong right? I just scored perfect that's all. Besides they scored high too." I said.

"No, I know Jeon. He hates losing so much. You must be prepared Pranpriya. He will not take easy on you especially that he doesn't know that you're a girl." Bam said with a warning voice.

Uh oh!

What have I gotten myself into?

All I wanted was to make new friends and now the president's son hates me and worse is he's looking for me.

Goodluck princess! I told myself.

On the faculty office

Jungkook's POV

"Here's the handwritten answer sheet of Mr. Manoban. You can study it to see if he really cheated." one of the professors handed us the answer sheet and he left the three of us to study it.

"Wow! Such a beautiful penmanship. Like that of a girl!" Jimin said.

He's right. The guy's penmanship is really beautiful that it looked like it was written by a girl.

I studied the answer sheet and the back of it has formulas and drafts of essays.

"He did not cheated" Taehyung said and I nodded.

"Now I'm more curious about him." Jimin said.

I sighed in approval. The guy is really smart. And I have this itch in me to see him.

All this time I thought I was the pride of this school for achieving everything. But now this guy just proved me wrong.

Just how smart are you Manoban?

I will see you in a week. When the class start, I will show you that Jeon Jungkook will always be on top. No one can beat me.

Just wait and see.

The New Classmate

Yonsei Elite University

Pranpriya's POV

Today is the first day of class. I wore my uniform and made sure my breast are flat. I wore my wig and It looks like a real hair.

All set.

I look like a boy and all I have to do is to avoid myself from talking. My voice sounds like a girl but I practiced last night how to sound like a boy by deepening my voice. Doing it is hard that's why I will just try my best to keep quiet when I'm in school.

Now I need to go to school to look for my section. There are only two sections in second year which are A and B and I really hope I will not be classmates with those three boys. It will be a big trouble if they found out about the real me.

Bam and I went to the University riding his car. My grandma gave the car to him as a gift on his 18th birthday. I wanted to have my own car too but sir Rudolph said grandma will not buy me a car to use here. Since I don't know how to drive and my grandma thinks driving is only for boys.

When we got near the school's premises, I looked around at the university buildings. The gate is big and Bam said we have to walk from the gate to the main building.

"Sorry for making you walk princess. Cars are not allowed inside" he said as we started walking.

"It's okay. Let's just consider this as an exercise" I said and we continued walking.

Suddenly, a luxurious car entered the gates which made me frown my brow.

I looked at Kunpimook raising one brow.

"I thought cars are not allowed? Then why did the guard let that car pass inside?" I asked.

"I forgot to tell you there's an exception to the rule." he said.

"Exception?"

"Yes, the son of the president and his two other friends are exempted from the rule. They can enter the university using their cars." he explained.

"Why? That is so unfair!" I said.

"Well that's how it is here princess. The university president and

the professors are afraid of them. Everyone is afraid of them so don't ever go near them or else your life will be ruined." he warned which makes me frown more.

Who do they think they are? Just because they are sons of the richest or most powerful leaders in the country doesn't give them the right to step on other people like that!

I'm fuming with anger as I look at the other student who is walking the long distance from the gate to the main building.

If i became the queen, I will make sure to it that I will treat my people equally. No special favors!

Bam and I stopped on our tracks when we noticed girls screaming infront of the luxurious car which just parked infront of the main building.

The girls were screaming while hoding banners. I observed them and I got confused because they wear different unifrom from us.

"Who are those? I thought this is an all-boy school?" I asked Kunpimook.

"Those girls are from Ladium Elite University. It is the sister school of Yonsei" he explained.

"Then what are they doing her when this is not their school?" I asked again.

"They always come around here in hopes to see the B3. They are the hearthrobs of this school that's why almost all of the girls who goes their are attracted to the boys." he explained.

"That is so unlady-like. Ladies are supposed to act formal especially when you're infront of men." I said while rolling my eyes.

"I understand you princess. You were taught to act like that but these girls are different from you. They will grab any chance they got just to have the boys notice them." Kunpimook said and I nodded.

Well, their culture is really different and who am I to judge?

Suddenly, the door of the car opened and 3 guys stepped out of it. The girls started screaming and some even fainted.

I wasn't able to see their faces because their back is turned on me. But my heart started beating so fast.

What is this? Even though they're far and I can't see their faces, I can still feel the intimidating aura around them.

It seems like they're untouchable. They didn't even payed attention to the girls around them.

Gosh! I hope I will not be classmates with them. I think it will be hard for me to breath if they're around.

Kunpimook is right. They really are intimidating. I held my chest as I started walking.

You can do this. You're a princess. You need to be brave.

Jungkook's POV

Taehyung and I waited for Jimin as he was looking at our sectioning. I hope I'm still classmates with him and Taehyung. I'm so comfortable around them and so I don't want to be away from them.

"Jungkook, Taehyung, we're still on class A." he shouted while running to us.

I smiled.

"Nice. I'm glad I'm still classmates with you." I said.

"And you're gonna like it if I say who's our other classmate." he said while smirking.

"Who?" I asked curiously.

"Limario Manoban" he answered and a smile crept on my lips.

Finally, I can show that guy where he belongs!

The First Meeting

Yonsei University

Pranpriya's POV

I'm doomed.

Kunpimook was separated from me because he was assigned in Section B while I'm in section A.

And worse is that all of the members of B3 are on the same section as me.

Now how will I face them? Kunpimook told me that they are curious about me and he heard they wanted to see me.

To say that I am nervous and scared is an understatement.

First, I'm not confident with my acting skills. I'm scared that their curiosity will lead them to finding the truth about me.

Second, I don't know how they will treat me especially now that I beat one of them on the exam results.

So, I promise from this day forward that I will purposefully answer exams incorrectly. So that they will leave me alone.

I walked slowly to the door where there's a sign

2-A.

This is my room.

Should I knock?

Is there a doorbell here?

Should I wait for the teacher?

What will I do?

I wasn't able to ask Bam on how to enter the door.

I haven't been to any school before because I was just home-schooled at the palace that's why I don't have any clue.

I pressed my ear to the door to listen if some students are already inside.

I can hear voices talking. Maybe I should knock first right?

I heaved a sigh and I knocked on the door.

"Hello! Excuse me, I will enter the classroom now." I said and slowly slid the door open.

When I opened the door. I saw boys sitting already on the semi circled table. There are two semi circled tables. The first one is in front facing the board while the table which is bigger is at the back.

I looked at them. Their eyes are on me and their mouth are widely opened as if their shocked to see me.

I looked at the three guys who's sitting at the back. And my heart started beating fast at the feeling of nervousness.

B3.

I can tell they are those I've seen earlier. The two of them were observing me from head to toe and I can feel my body shrink at their heated gaze.

One of them is sleeping on the table as his head rests on it and I can't see his face.

I just stood there awkwardly.

I tried looking down my shoe as I wait for someone to invite me to sit.

A princess must wait for the host to invite her before she sits down. That's what my teacher told me.

All of them are looking at me with weirded expression.

What's their problem? Why are they not talking? Why won't they invite me to sit?

My feet started aching and finally the door opened to reveal an old man who I think is the teacher.

He looked at me and I can feel he was weirded out too.

"Excuse me? You can take your seat now!" he said.

I nervously looked around and the only chair which is vacant is the one on the front facing the teacher.

"Can I sit there Mister?" I asked politely pointing to the available chair.

"Yes of course. Please sit there" he said.

"That's very kind of you. Thank you so much mister." I said as I bow like a princess.

What the? Why did I bowed like that. I guess old habits die hard.

I quickly took my seat avoiding my classmates' gazes.

"Mr.Kim! Stop sleeping in my class and listen" I hear the teacher say but I did not look around. I'm scared to see the B3's stares at me. As if they will murder me. If looks could only kill, I'm probably dead by now.

I sighed. This is just my first subject and it's stressful already.

I interlaced my fingers above the table as I sit erect to listen to the teacher. The subject is International Language and I'm confident about this subject. I think I can perform well simply because I know how to speak Thai, Korean, Japanese, Chinese and English and now I'm studying Spanish.

Jungkook's POV

The three of us wait for the last student to enter the classroom. One chair is vacant and that only means the one that we've been waiting for is the only one left to get in.

Limario Manoban. I'm anxious to see him. His name sounds

foreign that's why I know he's a foreigner. I wonder why he decided to study here in Korea?

"I'm so sleepy. I will take a nap first." Taehyung yawned then started sleeping.

"Where is he?" I muttered while looking at the door.

"Who? Limario?" Jimin asked and I nodded.

"Why are you so interested in him?" he asked curiously.

"Because I want him to pay for embarrassing me." I said.

"Give the guy a break will you?" he said but I just rolled my eye.

Suddenly we hear a knock on the door.

"Hello! Excuse me, I will enter the classroom now." someone said on the other side of the door.

When he opened the door. It revealed a cute or should I say pretty boy. His eyes are big and round, he has a cute nose and a plumped lips, his skin looks smooth and pale but a good kind of pale, his body is slim like that of a girl. His whole appearance looks feminine to me. That it confused me if he's really a boy or not?

But that's impossible. He's a boy I think. Otherwise, he will not be enrolling here right?

Our eyes are on him. Observing him intently.

He looked at us and I can see he got really nervous seeing us.

He must have known already that I'm *pissed* because of him.

He just stood there awkwardly.

Why is he not sitting yet?

Is he on drugs?

He looked down his shoe while standing there.

We all looked at him in disbelief.

What's his problem? Why is he just standing there?

Finally the professor entered and he looked at him.

"Excuse me? You can take your seat now!" he said.

He nervously looked around for chair and the only chair which is vacant is the one on the front facing the teacher.

"Can I sit there Mister?" he asked politely.

"Yes of course. Please sit there" he said.

"That's very kind of you. Thank you so much mister." he said then he bow down like that of a princess.

What the fuck? He's really weird.

Finally he took the sit in front.

"Mr.Kim! Stop sleeping in my class and listen" The professor said. But Taehyung just continued sleeping.

Jimin and I chuckled because of it.

This is just my first subject and I can tell I'm gonna have so much fun. I look at Limario's direction and I notice how he interlaced his fingers above the table as he sit erect to listen to the teacher.

I smiled. He's really weird but cute.

"Stop staring at the boy." Jimin whispered.

"I'm not staring" I whispered back.

"Yes you are and you look gay so stop that!" he said.

I look gay? What the?

I'm not gay.

I shook my head and focused on what the professor is saying.

He is now discussing the syllabus about our subject which is International Language.

I'm not confident at this subject really. The only language I'm fluent at is Korean but I'm studying english now because dad told me it's the most important language I should learn.

After discussing the syllabus, the professor wrote something on the white board. But I couldn't understand it because the words were unfamiliar.

We waited for him to explain what he wrote but Manoban stood and took his backpack. He bowed then started walking out of the room.

That was very disrespectful.

We look looked at the professor who was smiling ear to ear at the door where Manoban just left. Then he looked at us.

"Can you understand what I wrote?" he asked. And we shook our heads.

"I wrote...'*Class dismissed*' in spanish. Sadly, only one of you is advanced in this subject." he said and I frowned.

So Manoban is really something. Now, I really have my eyes on him.



Author's Note

Happy New Year everyone!!!

The Princess' roommate

At Yonsei Elite University

Limario's POV

I head out of the class.

I wonder why my classmates are not following yet but I just shrugged it off.

I'm walking to the faculty where our adviser is. He will meet us there to discuss our stay on the university dorm.

I'm kinda excited actually to finally stay on the dorm.

Staying in the hotel was boring and now I look forward to this day where I can finally settle to my dorm room. I just hope I will be paired with a decent roommate.

"Are you Mr. Manoban?" the adviser asked me.

"Yes sir!" I answered after giving him a bow.

"Where are your classmates?" he asked.

"They're on their way" I said and suddenly I saw my classmates coming.

"You're finally here." he said when the class started gathering around him.

"I'm Professor Bang Si Hyuk. I will be your class adviser and I am assigned to give you your dorm assignments." he said and we nodded.

"I know everyone knows about the rules right? Except from Mr. Manoban here who is a transferee." he said and I nodded.

"So, I'll just explain so that you will know. The university has dorms for every student. Each dorm has 2 rooms and each room must be shared by two students. So there are 4 students who will stay on every dorm." he said and I raised my hand to ask a question.

"What is it Mr. Manoban?" he asked.

"Can I get to choose who I will share my room with?" I asked nervously and I saw on my peripheral vision the two members of B3 staring at me.

"I'm sorry Mr. Manoban but your pairings will be decided by drawlots. I have here a box where you will pick a paper with Dorm number and room number. Who ever gets the same with you will be your roommate for the whole school year." he said and I nodded in agreement.

Well, I have a lot of classmates and I'm confident I will not be with any of the B3 members.

The adviser made us pick a paper on the box and he told us to read it all at once.

I opened the small piece of folded paper and read

Dorm No.1

Room No.1

I looked around my classmates and I noticed they are showing what's written on their paper.

"Man! I'm glad we're roommates!" I hear one of them say.

They all started talking to their pairs and I got confused who is mine.

I looked at everyone and noticed that the only ones who doesn't have a pair yet is the Prime Minister's son and the President's son.

Don't tell me I'm partners with one of them?

I began sweating and they both look at me at the same time.

"What's your room number?" The president's son asked and I gulped at his manly voice.

"Dorm No.1, Room No.1" I answered nervously.

He smirked.

"Then you're my roommate!" he said with an evil grin.

My eyes widen.

No!

Before I could protest, we hear someone running towards us.

"Yah! Why did you leave me there? You should have waken me." I heard a voice. A very familiar deep voice.

My heart started beating fast as I turn to look at the owner of the voice.

And there he was.

My dearest friend.

The one I've been searching for my whole life..

Jack...

This can't be?

Why is he here? I remember he was so poor then.

He would even catch crickets and he will tell me it's for their dinner.

He looked at me and I felt my heart stopped beating.

But he looked away as if he doesn't know me.

Why can't he recognize me?

Is it because I look like a boy?

I held my chest that feels so hurt.

I have a lot of questions for him and I really want to talk to him right now but I can't.

I can't let everyone know about us. About our past.

Maybe it's better if he doesn't recognize me. That way, my secret is safe.

I looked at him once again and the three of them were laughing at each other.

They're really close. I started to envy the two because they seem to be closer to Jack.

I want to be friends with him again.

Right! I will befriend him even if I have to befriend the two also.

When I looked at them again.

The president's son is looking now straight at me.

Why is he looking at me like that? It makes me really nervous when I'm around him. But he's friends with Jack so I need to be friends with him too.

I sighed.

Out of all the people in this class, why him?

Why do I have to share a room with him?

The Growing Feeling

Limario's POV

The first day of class ended quickly. The whole time, I just paid attention to the professors and tried to ignore the three guys who's been staring at me the whole day.

I get really conscious around them and I hate it. The worse news is that the four of us will be sharing the whole dorm. I found out that Jack and the prime minister's son got Dorm. No. 1, room no. 2.

Though I want to be near Jack, I'm still worried to be around them.

Most of my stuffs are girly such as a women's perfume, a pink toothbrush, flowered designed notebooks, nailpolishes, make ups, princess hair brush, red bathrobe and many more.

What if they see my underwear?

I shook my head.

No, I won't let that happen. I was cut off of my thoughts when I saw Kumpulook coming towards me.

"Hi Princess! How are you?" he asked.

"What am I gonna do? I'm dormmates with the three!" I said with a worried voice.

"You mean the three? B3?" he asked.

"Yes. Can you help me switch rooms?" I asked.

"I'm sorry princess. That's not possible. We have no choice but to go with it. Just try to be casual. Don't be nervous princess." he said with a comforting voice.

"Well, what can I do? I guess I have no choice." I said sadly.

"Who is your room mate then princess?" he asked and my brow furrowed remembering that annoying guy who's been smirking at me the whole time.

"The President's Son" I said.

"What!!!? You're roommate with Jeon Jungkook?" he said with a loud voice.

"Shhhh... Lower your voice or someone might hear us. Yes he is my room mate and I don't like him!" I said while pouting.

"You're in trouble princess. Jungkook is the most cold member of the group. But please try to act nice to him. He is the president's son and he's very spoiled he can do anything to make your life a living hell. Be careful princess." he said.

"Maybe I'll just have to take more subjects to make myself busy so that I won't have to hang out with them that often." I said.

"That's a good idea princess. Wait, why don't you try to take subjects on Ladium Elite University for a change so that you won't have to pretend to be a boy all the time?" he suggested and my eyes widen in an instant.

"You mean I can go to that all-girl school?" I asked excitedly.

"Yes you can but you need to change your name. You can't use Pranpriya Manobal or Limario Manoban there." he said.

"How about Lalisa Manoban?" I asked and he nodded in agreement.

"Sure, I will help you take a subject there. I can make another fake ids and papers for you." he offered and I smiled.

"Thank you so much Bam! Can you please send me the subjects offered there so that I can choose? I think I'll just take one subject." I said.

"Sure, I'll send you the subject lists later on your email but for now, let's go back to the hotel to get your things so that you can go to the dorm right away." he said and we started walking to his car.

Tonight I'm gonna have to stay on the dorm with that guy Jungkook.

I rolled my eyes just thinking about him.

I really don't like that guy and there's no chance that I will like him.

Ever.

Jungkook's POV

"Dude, I told you he's so cool. We really need to be friends with him." Jimin said for the hundredth time.

"We can hear you Jimin. Stop saying that over and over. I'm still cooler than him you know!" I said and Taehyung chuckled.

"Why are you laughing?" I asked him.

"Because you've been talking about that guy since day 1. Why are you so whipped about him? It makes you look gay." he said.

"I'm not gay!" both Jimin and I said at the same time.

"I just think he's awesome because he's smart" Jimin said.

"As for me, I think he's weird and I don't like him" I said and Taehyung rolled his eyes. I can see him through the rear view mirror.

"Yeah keep telling that to yourself. I know you so much and I know when you likes someone Jeon." he said while looking out of the car window.

I stayed quiet thinking about what he said.

Do I really like the guy?

But why? He's a guy.

I can't be attracted to a boy! That's fucking weird!

"Hey! You're driving too fast!" Jimin who is in the passenger seat smacked my arm.

I am currently driving to our mansions to get our stuffs. The two has their own cars but they're too lazy to drive that's why I'm driving for them.

Tonight, we will have to stay in the dorm and I'm driving fast because I'm excited.

Wait.

Why am I excited?

Is it because I will see him?

What's happening to me? Why am I excited to see him?

'He's a *BOY* Jungkook! He has a *penis* just like you!' I kept telling my self while shaking my head.

"What the hell is wrong with you?" Jimin asked.

"Why?"

"You've been shaking your head for a while now. What are you thinking?" Jimin asked but I have no plan on telling him that I'm thinking about a boy.

"Don't mind him. He's just whipped" Taehyung said.

I rolled my eyes at him.

"What do you know about being whipped Tae?" I asked raising a brow. As far as I know he hasn't had a girlfriend yet.

"I'm whipped to a princess for years now but sadly she's gone." he said in a sad tone.

I looked at Jimin who was worriedly looking at him on the back seat.

"Cheer up Tae. Maybe you're not really meant for each other." he said comforting him.

Silence followed after.

He really loves that *princess* so much. How I wish she was still alive so that they can be together in the end.

The First Handshake

Jungkook's POV

Finally, we arrived at the dorm. We noticed that the lights are on already meaning he's here.

I smiled.

He's inside and I'm excited to see him.

We started walking inside while carrying our things.

When we got in, Limario was sitting on the couch while reading a book. He looked at us and his eyes travelled to Taehyung.

"You're here!" Jimin walked to him.

"By the way, I want to introduce my self. My name is Jimin. Park Jimin but you can call me Chim for short." he said excitedly then he offered his hand for him to shake.

"My name is Pra...I mean Limario Manoban" he said while shaking his hand.

"I'm Taehyung. Kim Taehyung. You can call me tae for short." he said and he shook his hands too.

It didn't escaped my eyes how Limario's hand gripped Taehyung so much like he doesn't want to let go of him. Taehyung got uncomfortable and so he pulled his hand quickly.

I saw how he blushed which was weird.

Does he like Taehyung?

But why am I disappointed?

My chest is hurting and I don't know why.

What's happening to me? Am I getting jealous just because they're shaking hands?

'Jungkook this is so not you!' I scolded my self.

Then his round eyes travelled to mine as if he's waiting for me to talk.

Oh right! I need to introduce my self too.

"Hi.. I.. I'm.." the fuck am I stuttering!

He raised his brow so I cleared my throat and inhaled gently.

"Hi I'm Jungkook, Jeon Junkook. You can call me anything you like." I said and Jimin chuckled like he's amused to hear me say that.

I offered my hand for him to shake and he hesitantly took it.

When our hands finally touched. My heart started beating erratically.

His hand is so slim and small and it is the softest hand I've ever touched. His hand is even softer than my sister Jennie's hand.

If you close your eyes. You will say that you're shaking hands with a girl.

I hear him clear his throat and I realized I've been holding his hand for minutes now.

"I'm going to sleep." he pulled his hand and he quickly walked inside our room.

When he was gone, Jimin smacked my arm.

"Ow that hurts!!! Why do you keep on smacking me?" I asked in annoyance.

"Because you're really turning into a gay!" he said and they both laughed.

"I told you I'm not gay!" I whisper shouted. Afraid that Limario might hear us.

"Are you sure? Because you were holding his hand for like forever. You were even looking at his face without blinking!" He said.

"That's because I was shocked that his hands were soft. Isn't that weird?" I asked.

"Yeah, you're right." Taehyung nodded.

"Come to think of it? How come his hands were soft like that? It was even softer than my sister Chaeyoung's." Jimin said and I nodded.

"Maybe he came from a very rich family?" Taehyung said.

"Do you know which country is he from?" I asked. I'm really curious about him.

"I don't know. Let's just ask him tomorrow." Jimin said and we nodded.

"Come on let's sleep. I'm tired of riding your car." Jimin said and I rolled my eyes.

"You got tired just by riding? How about me who drove?" I said.

"It was your car so you're supposed to drive for us!" he said.

"I will never let you inside my car again!" I said and I walked inside our room. I hear them both laughing behind me.

Jimin and Taehyung are to share room while Limario and I will be sharing.

I smiled when I saw him lying on the bed.

(A/N: imagine this is their bed except the stuffed toys and girly decors.)

Our bed is just next to each other and so I sat on mine to observe him more.

His body has curves like that of a girl. I can clearly see his curves even if he was wrapped with a comforter.

He was silently sleeping.

Good that he's not snoring.

I will be able to sleep soundly. I lay down my bed as I look at him.

Who are you?

I want to know you more.

Maybe I'm really turning into gay.

I'm excited to spend time with him on this dorm for the coming months.

How I wish he's just a *girl*.

If he was just a girl, I would probably court him now.

Court?

I almost forgot. I have a girlfriend.

I haven't think about her for a while.

Well, I don't like her in the first place. I just said yes when she expressed her feelings for me because she begged me to say yes.

I've been on a lot of relationships and all of which is that the girls are the one who made a move on me. And me being the gentleman that I am didn't want to break their hearts that's why I always say yes.

But don't get me wrong. I don't two-time them. I make sure I will break with a girl first before saying yes to the next.

I've never really fallen in love yet.

I suddenly regret saying yes to my girlfriend now. She's annoying.

An annoying princess of Taiwan.

That's why I don't like princesses. They are very annoying and spoiled.

My phone beeped.

Speaking of the *devil*.

A message from Tzuyu.

I tapped the message and read

Hi babe! How was your first day at the university? I have a good news. I am classmates with your sister Jennie and with Jimin's sister Chaeyoung. I'm also classmates with Taehyung's sister Jisoo.

Small world right? I'm so happy. I want to be friends with them because they are close to you.

Please call me soon. I miss you babe.

ILY 🍷

I rolled my eyes.

This is the exact representation of the word *annoying*.

She wants to be friends with our sisters just because they are close to me?

I looked at Limario's back once again.

I smiled and I didn't bother taking off my shoes and jacket.

I just closed my eyes and drifted off to sleep.



Author's Note

I'm sorry Tzuyu fans. I don't hate Tzuyu. She's just perfect for the role because she looks like a princess.

The Perverted Jerk

Jungkook's POV

When I woke up. I frowned upon seeing that Limario is not on his bed. His sheets were already neatly folded.

I panickly looked around. It is just 6 in the morning and our class will start at 9.

Did he left already? I walked out of the room and saw Jimin at the kitchen making pancakes and Taehyung was reading a newspaper while sitting on the dinning area.

"Where is he?" I asked both of them.

Jimin grinned and I sighed.

Here comes the endless teasing.

"Limario went to school." Jimin said and I frowned.

"It's just 6 in the morning!" I said.

"Don't believe Jimin. Limario's at the garden, watering plants." Taehyung answered and I smiled.

I excitedly walk to open the door and saw Limario watering the plants.

My heart warmed at the sight. He looks like an angel and the flowers are being blessed by him.

"Jungkook is really gay!" I heard Jimin's voice inside and so I walked to him.

"If you say that again, I'm gonna kill you!" I said while glaring at him.

"Enough of that! Let's eat." Taehyung pulled me and Jimin to sit. We all started eating.

Then Limario walked inside.

"Good morning everyone!" he said as he bow.

"Good morning! Come and let's eat!" Jimin patted the chair next to him.

"Thanks!" he said.

Limario hesitated at first but he walk to us and decided to sit beside Taehyung.

My brows furrowed more.

He seem to really like Taehyung. But Taehyung is not paying attention to him.

"By the way Limario, which country are you from?" I asked and he turned pale.

"I.. I'm from the country Lukawar" he said and the three of us looked at him.

Lukawar? Is that even a place? I haven't heard of that.

"Is that a country?" Jimin asked.

"Yes, It's a very small country. My father is the mayor there" he said and he wiped his sweat on his forehead.

I can tell he's uncomfortable with the topic by how he looks down on his lap.

Maybe he's shy because he just came from an unknown and small country.

"Uhm..do you know any food which tastes the best here in Korea?" Limario asked and I smiled.

Limario's POV

I'm so nervous right now. I hope they believed at what I told them.

I seriously just made up a country name and It's really not on the map. I should change the topic now or else they'll find out that I'm lying.

"Uhm..do you know any food which tastes the best here in Korea?" I asked them and Jungkook smiled.

An evil smile I can say.

"Yes I know a lot. Do you know what's the tastiest in Busan?" he asked while smirking.

"No? What is it?" I asked curiously and Taehyung just shook his head.

Jungkook lean to Jimin's ear and he whipered something to him.

Jimin started laughing and I got more curious.

Why is he laughing?

What did Jungkook told him?

"What is it?" I asked them.

"It was supposed to be a secret Limario. But.. Since you want to find out, I will just tell you my secret." he said with a very low voice.

I looked at him as I wait for his answer.

"The tastiest in Busan is my *dick*" he said and they all started laughing.

I felt my cheeks heating up and I covered my mouth which was now open.

I blushed so hard just hearing the word from him.

I can't believe he is a jerk when he's the president's son!

How can he say his manly part like that to my face? That was very disrespectful to say in front of a princess!!!

If he was just on Thailand and he would say that to me, the queen will strangle him to death!

I'm so mad right now!

I stood up and left them at the table. I can still hear their laughs from the room.

I need to be far from Jungkook from now on. He's a perverted jerk and I don't like him!

The Jealous Bunny

Limario's POV

The whole day, I tried my best to ignore the three. But they've been pestering around me the whole time especially Jimin.

He keeps telling me that I should join their group because I'm smart. And Jungkook is Agreeing while Taehyung was just quiet.

We are now back at the dorm but it's still early since our class ended at 4 in the afternoon.

"Please..." Jimin said while fluttering his eyelashes on me.

"Why me? Why should I join you?" I asked.

"I already told you because you are smart like us and we need you to teach us International language." he said.

"So that's why? You just want to be friends with me because I can help you with the subject?" I asked.

"Yes. We can tell that you're good at it and I'm too lazy to read books so it's better if we will learn the subject from you." he said and I rolled my eyes.

As much as I want to be closed to Jack, I'm still hesitant to be near them because of Jungkook.

I looked at Jungkook who is quietly watching me. With just his stares, he can give me chills all around my body.

"Then what do I get in return?" I asked them while folding my arms on my chest.

"Duhh.. Of course friendship! People will look up at you because you were able to get in our group" Jimin said.

"Just that?" I asked in disbelief.

Who do they think they are? I want to have friends but I want them to be genuine. Not just because they want something from me.

"What do you mean just that? Don't you have any idea how many students are kneeling in front of us just so we can be friends with them? Think about it Limario..we can even change the group name from B3 to B4." he said.

"No thanks! I don't need to be on your group but I will still help you with the subject." I said and Jimin smiled ear to ear at me.

"Really? You will help me?" he asked and I nodded.

"How many languages do you know?" Jungkook suddenly asked.

"Uhm.. I know Korean, Japanese, Chinese, Thai and a little Spanish" I said.

"Thai? you know Thai? Taehyung knows the language too." Jungkook said and I looked at Taehyung who just nodded.

Of course I know. Taehyung and I were talking in Thai when we were still young. He lived there that's why he knows the language but I must act as if I don't know he's fluent in it.

"Really? Who taught you?" I asked him.

"He used to live there until his rich father took him from his mother to live here in Korea." Jimin answered for him.

Taehyung was just quiet.

Now I can finally put the pieces of information why he left me.

His father whom he doesn't know found him and took him from me.

But I should be happy for him. His life was very miserable then. And now as I look at him, I can tell that his life is way better and comfortable.

I smiled at Jack or should I say Taehyung. The feelings I have for this guy is still here in my heart.

I was cut off of my thoughts when I heard Jungkook clear his throat.

I looked at him and noticed his expression is somewhat pissed.

Then he stormed to our room.

What's his problem?

"Uh oh! Someone's jealous!" I heard Jimin say.

"Who's jealous?" I asked curiously.

"Nothing.. Just a little bunny." he said and he walked away laughing while heading to his room.

I look at Taehyung who just shrugged his shoulders then he walked to his room too.

I stayed there wondering what's happening. Then I heard a knock on the door.

When I opened the door, I saw Kunpimook outside.

"Princess!" he said.

"Shhhh.. Be quiet. They're here." I said and he nodded.

"Here's your schedule for the subject you took. It will be 5-6 pm during TTh and 8-9 am on MWF. You can start right away tomorrow since the University is just beside ours. You're classes are at 9 so it won't conflict." he said while giving me my schedule and class card.

Kunpimook helped me take one subject at Ladium Elite University. And I'm so excited. I can finally wear girl clothes when I start schooling there. I'm so sick of wearing these men's baggy clothings and my breast hurts from too much pressing just to make it look flat.

"Thank you so much!" I said.

"You're welcome! I gotta go." He bow down and left.

When I was about to head to my room, Jungkook was already behind me.

I quickly hide my class card on my back.

Oh my God! Did he heard our conversation?

"Who was that?" he asked and he still looks pissed.

"Uhm.. Just a friend." I told him and I started heading to my room. To our room rather.

I can feel Jungkook's eyes behind me and it make me really conscious.

I wonder if he heard Kunpimook call me *Princess*.

I heaved a sigh.

Kunpimook should really stop calling me that or I will be in trouble. Jungkook has been observing me and I know he's really curious about me.

Jungkook's POV

I ruffled my hair when I got inside my room.

I'm so pissed and I don't even know why!

All I know is I hate how Limario looks at Taehyung.

Does he like him?

Well he shouldn't like Taehyung because he's a boy.

It is very wrong to like a boy if you're a boy right?

Uhhh! I hate this feeling!

What's happening to me!

Then I heard a knock on the door.

Who's that?

I walk out of my room and saw Limario talking to a guy but I can't hear them.

I walk to him but the guy left already.

"Who was that?" I asked. I don't like him talking to other guys.

Why?

Because.. We are his friend and I want us to be his only friend.

"Uhm.. Just a friend." he answered while hiding something on his back.

I was about to ask him more but he started heading to our room.

I know he's hiding something and I will surely find out.

I plan to stalk him starting tomorrow.

He's up to something and I'm really curious.



Author's Note

How is the story so far? Do you find it boring?

The Shocking Coincidence

Lalisa's POV

I'm a girl today!!!

I jump up and down while walking to the University just next to Yonsei.

I'm so happy that I can finally get rid of that itchy wig and hideous clothes.

I let my long and curly hair down and wore a comfortable clothes.

But I had to carry with me another bag for my men's uniform, wig and shoes because I have a class at nine and I need to change right after for my class at Yonsei.

It was really hard getting up earlier than the three of them.

I had to sneak out of the dorm at 5 in the morning just so they won't see me looking like a girl.

Taehyung is the early bird among the three, he usually wakes at 6 to read the newspaper and Jimin wakes after him at around 6 to prepare breakfast. Jungkook on the other hand wakes up late at 7 or 8 which is better because he's the one I'm more concerned of.

After minutes of walking, I finally saw the big gate of Ladium Elite University.

I smiled while looking at the school's name.

This is the only place I think I can show the real me.

I don't have to pretend that I'm a boy and it makes me feel happy.

I'm a girl and I want to show my girly side.

I just hope I can make new friends here even if I will just take one subject.

I looked at the students around and they look kind and cheerful.

Maybe I can really be friends with some of them.

My thoughts were cut off when I heard a loud honking of a car. I looked around and saw a car behind me trying to pass through the gate.

I quickly stepped aside and bowed down because of the inconvenience I brought.

The car which looks very expensive stopped next to me. Then the window of the driver's seat suddenly opened. Revealing a very beautiful girl with an angelic face.

I smiled at her because I was awed by her beauty. But She frowned while she looked at me from head to toe.

"Bitch, you better walk on the sidewalks if you don't have a car!" she snapped and rolled her eyes.

Just like that and she started driving leaving me shocked.

I thought I will make friends here but I guess I'm wrong.

I just started walking inside the main building and tried looking for my room.

I saw the girl from earlier and I noticed how other students bow at her.

She must be really rich to receive such attention.

"The princess is really pretty!" I heard someone said.

I nervously looked at the voice owner scared at the thought that she's talking about me.

But I heaved a sigh of relief when I noticed they're not talking about me. I look at where they're staring and they're actually referring to the snobbish girl from earlier.

So she's a princess too?

I wonder which country is she from but I was answered when another lady talk from behind me.

"She's a beautiful princess I agree but her attitude is rotten. I feel pity for Taiwan if she becomes the queen." I hear her say.

Taiwan? Taiwan is a beautiful country.

I shrugged their gossips off and started looking for my room instead.

When I was finally outside the room, I slid the door open and I found the girls already seated. Only one chair is left which is at the back.

I studied the girls and I can say all of them exudes elegance, beauty and confidence but four of them caught my attention the most.

One is the the princess who is seated at the front. Next is the girl with a cat shaped eyes, Third is the girl with heart shaped lips and 4th is the girl with a chipmunk cheeks.

I slowly walked to the vacant chair at the back which is next to the chipmunk girl.

She smiled at me when I finally sit.

"Hi! My name is Chaeyoung! Park Chaeyoung. You're new here?" she asked and I smiled warmly at her.

She's so pretty while smiling at me. A genuine smile from a pretty girl!

"Yes I am!" I answered.

"What's your name?" the other girl asked.

"I'm Pra.. Lim.. I mean Lalisa." I said and they smiled.

"I'm Jisoo, Kim Jisoo. Nice to meet you!" she answered.

"I'm Jennie, Jeon Jennie" the other girl butt in and smiled too.

"Nice to meet all of you!" I happily bowed to them.

They look really nice and I'm excited to get to know them more.

I looked at the direction where the princess is seated and I realized the rest of our classmates are surrounding her and praising her endlessly.

They look like those girls who are clinging too much to someone just because of her wealth.

"Is she the only princess here?" I asked them.

"Who? Chou Tzuyu?" Jennie asked and I nodded. That's probably her name.

"Yes. She's the only princess here but other students are daughters of this country's leaders so everyone is just as especial as her." Jennie explained.

"I see. She must be really rich because those girls are praising her too much." I muttered but they heard it anyway.

"Well, she's not the only especial in this class because as you can see, you are talking to the President's daughter." Jisoo smirked and pointed to Jennie.

President's what?

I looked at Jennie and saw she was smiling.

"Says the daughter of the Chief Justice" Jennie answered while looking at Jisoo.

This can't be..

"Shhh... You're confusing Lalisa here. Obviously she doesn't know us."

Chaeyoung said and I looked at her.

Don't tell me she's also the daughter of someone...

"Lalisa, I just want you to know that Jennie right here is the only daughter of the President while Chaeyoung is the Prime ministers daughter." Jisoo explained and I wasn't able to cover my mouth which is now widely opened.

Jeon, Park, Kim

Now it dawned on me.

They are the sisters of my roommates!

What the?

Speaking of *coincidence*.

Jisoo smiled and she continued talking.

"And that Princess right there.." she paused as she point to the beautiful girl named Tzuyu.

"She is the girlfriend of Jennie's younger brother... Jungkook"

Now everything is messed up!

What have I gotten myself into?

The Monster

Limario's POV

Finally the day ended without anyone knowing that I took classes on two different universities.

The good news of the day is that I was able to make friends with three beautiful girls. I smiled thinking of Jennie, Jisoo and Chaeyoung.

They are really kind to me and they asked for my number so that they can invite me to hangout with them the next day.

I'm so happy that I finally have girlfriends. But the bad news is they are sisters with the three persons I'm hiding my identity from.

Good thing, Kunnimook was able to change the name of my ID from Lalisa Manoban to Lalisa Bruschweiler.

I'm also not over the fact that Jungkook is dating that princess.

Well they would look good together but I don't like Tzuyu's attitude. I think she will just hurt him.

Even if Jungkook is a jerk, I can still see the kindness in him and Tzuyu doesn't deserve him.

I held my chest.

Is it bad if I wish for them to break up?

Why am I suddenly concerned for him?

Maybe because I am now his friend.

Yes. I'm a concerned friend that's why.

My phone beeped indicating I received a text message.

Hi Lalisa!

Be ready tomorrow! We are going on my friend's newly opened club.

See you!

-Chae

This is exciting! It will be my first time on a club. I smiled as I wish for tomorrow to come. I decided to sleep early anticipating the next day.

The next day...

I woke up to see a shirtless Jungkook staring at me from his bed.

"Good Morning Limario!" he greeted while smiling showing his bunny teeth.

He was lying on the bed while facing me but it didn't escaped my

eyes the way his muscles flex evrytime he moves. He's got a really nice body.

"Good morning!" I greeted back while rubbing my eyes open.

Jungkook finally stood and my eyes widened in an instant.

I jumped out of my bed screaming.

"Aaaaaaahhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!" I screamed as I cover my eyes.

"Why are you shouting?" he panicked and started moving near me but I just shouted more.

"Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!" What's that!!!" I continued screaming at the top of my lungs.

"What? Where?" he started looking around him worriedly.

"That!!! What's that?" I pointed at a very huge bulge on his boxers.

"This?" he pointed down to his manly part.

"Yes that! Why are you swelling!!!" I asked still covering my eyes partly.

"Seriously? You were shouting just because of my morning wood?" he asked in disbelief and I nodded.

"Limario, all boys got morning wood in the morning. It's the time where you penis would unconsciously grow. You have it too right?" he said and he stepped closer to me.

The next thing I knew,

Jungkook cupped my crotch and my eyes widened in an instant.

"Seriously Limario? How small is your penis?" he asked in amazement.

I tried not to slap him in the face for touching my womanly part like that.

The way I see it, pretending to be a boy will be really hard!

I pushed him and ran away from him as fast as I can.

I saw Jimin in the kitchen and I hide behind his back.

"What's the matter? Why are you shouting so early in the morning?" Jimin asked worriedly.

"There's a monster!" I said.

"There's no monster here Limario. And you're a guy. You shouldn't be scared of those." he said with a comforting voice.

But he doesn't understand. Jungkook is swelling and he needs to have it checked by the doctor. I feel sorry for him because he has to carry that huge problem on his own.

I wonder if his girlfriend knows that Jungkook is like that.

Suddenly the door opened and the person I'm thinking right now came inside with her heels clacking.

Chou Tzuyu.

Jungkook came out of his room wearing a more decent clothes and it didn't escaped my eyes seeing his schocked expression at

Tzuyu inside our dorm.

"Baby, I missed you, you haven't called me for days" she said and she grabbed Jungkook's neck to pull him for a kiss.

I looked away as they both kissed in front of me.

I held my chest.

I don't know why I don't like what I'm seeing.

Maybe it's because I find it awkward to see couples kiss in real life or maybe I don't like them to be together?

I decided to walk away and just water the plants outside.

'Enjoy your princess Jeon Jungkook!' I muttered while rolling my eyes.



Author's Note

Thank you to those who read, comment and vote. I appreciate it so much especially the comments 🥰🥰🥰

I love reading your thoughts of the story so please keep it up



The Confusing Feelings

Limario's POV

"Say ahhhhh" Tzuyu said while feeding a hotdog on Jungkook's mouth.

Jungkook opened his mouth to chew what she feed him.

I rolled my eyes at the sight.

This jerk is really enjoying himself!

The five of us are silently eating breakfast together. But the four of us never actually invited her to stay for breakfast but she said she has to stay to do girlfriend duties.

I want to leave this place as early as I finish my food.

I don't want to be around this annoying couple so much!

"Guys, will you stop your PDA in front of us." Jimin who is beside me said.

Thank God! Someone is on the same boat as me.

"Yes please. Can you eat by yourself Jungkook? You have your own hands right?" Taehyung said and I mentally clapped my hands.

Preach it Tae!

"You're just jealous because you don't have girlfriends!" Tzuyu teased Jimin and Taehyung.

I opened my mouth to answer her but I was cut off by Jimin.

"Excuse me? Who says I don't have a girlfriend? You have no idea how many girls are waiting in line just to have my attention." Jimin said.

Oh my gosh! Jimin is also narcissistic!

I looked at Taehyung and I worried if he would tell us that he has a girlfriend too.

He ket on eating but then he noticed we are all looking at him.

"What?" Taehyung asked then he rolled his eyes.

"I don't have to tell you how many girls are hitting on me right? But No. I don't have a girlfriend. I will never have. Ever!" Taehyung said and he continued eating.

I smiled.

So he's single?

I'm so happy. Maybe I have a chance? Right?

I looked at Jungkook who is now scowling at me.

What's his problem?

"What?" I asked him. But he didn't say a word.

"How about you? Do you have a girlfriend?" Tzuyu asked me.

"Me? I..I.. Don't have." I said nervously.

She laughed so hard because of it.

"Don't tell me you're still a virgin?" she asked and the three boys looked at me expectantly waiting for my answer.

I just looked down my lap for being on a hot seat.

I want to shout to her face that I am a virgin because I respect my body as a woman but she doesn't know. They don't know that I'm a girl.

"Oh my gosh you really are a virgin? You know what? You should get yourself laid. It is very unmanly for a guy like you to stay virgin at your age." she said as she chuckle.

Wait..

Does that mean..

The three of them are not virgin anymore?

I looked at Jimin, Taehyung and Jungkook.

"Did you already...." I tried to ask her if she already did it with Jungkook.

"Already what? Have sex?" she asked on my face and I blushed at the word.

How can a princess like her say the word so casually?

I slowly nodded. I want to know if Jungkook already did it with her.

"Of course! Jungkook should teach you how to fuck a woman so good. You can even make a woman scream your name at the top of her lungs. Right Jungkook?" she said as she rub Jungkook's thigh under the table.

I'm so disappointed.

I looked at Jungkook disappointedly and I noticed he was looking at me with a guilty face.

"I need to go. I'll be late for class. If you'll excuse me my princess!" I said through gritted teeth.

When I got inside my room, I plopped down at the bed.

Why am I feeling this?

Why does it hurt?

I hate him!

I hate Jungkook!

I promise I will not talk to him again!

Jungkook's POV

Limario has been ignoring me the whole day.

I don't know what's his problem but it bothers me so much.

I don't like it when he's ignoring me like this!

We are now back at the dorm after our class. It's just 4 o'clock and I wanted to talk to him but he's still ignoring me. Now, I'm just sitting on my bed while he is walking back and forth gathering things.

I don't understand him.

Earlier this morning he panicked when he saw my morning wood. Why would he be scared of it? He has a dick too right?

But it's surprising that he is flat. I wasn't able to feel his penis. Maybe he is really small that's why he got scared of mine.

And when he saw Tzuyu, he started ignoring me. It frustrates me so much. He acts like a jealous girlfriend.

I studied his movements as he prepare his bag.

"Where are you going?" I finally asked.

"I'm hanging out with my friends" he answered.

Friends? Who are these friends? Is it the guy who came here the other day?

"Where are you hanging out and who are these friends?" I asked him.

I want to know where he is going. I want to come with him.

"None of your business" he said and he walked out of the room leaving me confused.

What the fuck is his problem?

Why am I even bothered so much?

I lay down the bed and decided to just sleep it off.

You're making me go crazy Limario!!!

I'm going crazy over a guy and I don't like it.

I finally closed my eyes and sleep.

Hours later, I woke up feeling Jimin shaking my arm.

"What?" I asked. He is wearing a formal clothes as if he's about to go on a party.

"I'm going on a newly opened bar with my sis. Wanna come?" he asked.

"Is Taehyung coming?" I asked back.

"No, he said he will study." Jimin answered.

"Then I'm not coming too. That would be boring of it's just the two of us." I said.

"Your sister Jennie will be coming too and Jisoo" he said and I rolled my eyes.

"The more reason why I don't want to go. I don't wanna be my sister's chaperone the whole night" I said.

"You sure? Chae said they invited their pretty classmate to come. Don't you want to see her?" He asked and I shook my head no.

"Fine. I'll go alone. I'm so excited to meet this girl." he said and he left the room.

Pretty classmate huh?

I don't have the energy to meet with girls right now.

My mind is full of Limario's image and I can't get him out of my head.

I need to go back to sleep before I totally go crazy!

The Dancing King

Lalisa's POV

"What do people do inside a club?" I asked the girls as we ride Jisoo's car.

"Well.. you drink and chat" Jennie answered.

"That's all?" I asked. That would be very boring because I don't drink.

"You can dance too of course." Chae said and my eyes widen.

"Dance? I can dance?" I asked her.

"Yes you can! Why? do you love dancing?" she asked.

"I love it so much! I want to dance!" I said excitedly.

"Chill girl! We're finally near the club." Jisoo said.

I looked out of the car window and saw we're parking infront of a big building with colorful lights.

"By the way Lalisa, I would like you to meet someone. I think you two will look good together." Chayeong said and my brows furrowed.

Before I could even ask her who is this I'm meeting, she was already pulling me out of the car.

Loud music started echoing though the whole building. I saw huge crowd dancing to the music and some are drinking. I smiled just by looking at the dance stage.

The girls pulled me on a corner. We sat on a round couch with a table in the middle.

"I'll just go grab us a drink" Jennie excused herself.

I looked at Chaeyoung who is now texting someone on her phone.

"Where is he?" I heard Chaeyong mutter.

Who is she texting?

I was tapping my foot on the floor but then the music stopped playing.

A man with a georgeous smile stood in the middle holding a microphone.

"Welcome to Hope Club everyone! This is the first day of my club and I want you to enjoy your stay here." he said and the crowd started cheering.

"But before you continue your dancing, I want you all to enjoy first a dance performance by my very dear friend.

Ladies and gentleman, let's give it upt for the Dancing King Park

Jimin!" I felt myself getting anxious at the announcement.

Park Jimin is here?

How will I face him? Will he recognize me that I'm Limario?

I looked at Chaeyong worriedly but when I looked at her, she was smiling proudly.

"Lalisa, that's my brother. That's who I want you to meet!" she said excitedly and my palm started sweating from the nervousness.

Suddenly, the music started playing and the crowd stepped aside.

Jimin slowly walked to the center and stated moving.

My jaw is widely open at the move he makes.

I can't stop my self from standing and staring at him.

His movements are on point, he was very flexible, confident and sexy. He danced like a water. Like he has no bones at all.

I finally realized one thing.

I want to dance with him.

He is the best in dancing and I admire him so much right now.

When he finished dancing, the crowd started clapping including me whose eyes are still glued on him.

"Hey! What do you thing about my bother?" Chae teasingly asked.

"He's.. So good!" I simply answered while sitting down again.

"He's now coming!" she excitedly announced.

"Hi girls!" finally, I heard Jimin talk behind me as I feel him sat next to me.

I nervously turn around to face him praying that he won't recognize me.

When I was finally facing him. He looked at me intently.

I felt my body shaking because of the small distance we have.

Then he gave me his very charming smile.

"What's your name?" he asked. And I blinked.

He didn't recognize me?

"I'm..I'm... Lalisa" I stuttered.

"I didn't know that when my sister said she will introduce me to her beautiful classmate, it will be as beautiful as this." he said.

Then I felt my hand being lifted,

and the next thing I knew, he was already kissing the back of my hand.

Jimin's POV

I can't believe I'm sitting next to this pretty girl named Lalisa.

She looks familliar but I'm sure I haven't seen her before.

"Lalisa, here's your drink" Jennie offered but Lalisa shook her head.

"I'm sorry I don't drink." she apologized.

I smiled at her. She looks so innocent and cute. Like she just got out from a castle after years of being imprisoned.

"You don't drink?" I asked her.

"I don't. I'm sorry." she fidgeted her fingers.

"Then what do you want to have? I can get you a soda or an iced tea if you like?" I offered but she shyly shook her head.

"No, I don't want to bother you" she said and I stood up.

"I will get you something. Just wait here." I said.

When I got back, I placed *three* different drinks in front of her. She looked at me shocked.

"Why did you brought these?" she asked.

"Because I'm not sure what you like so I just took a soda, an iced tea and a water so that you have more options." I said and she smiled.

She fucking smiled which is heart warming.

She looked down at the drinks as if contemplating what she will drink.

I suddenly remembered my friends. Jungkook would always drink the strong soda, i would always drink the sweet iced tea and Taehyung would always drink the plain water.

I don't know why but I kinda hoped that Lalisa will pick the iced tea.

She moved her hand and stopped on one glass.

I frowned when she lifted the glass of *water*.

Yeah right. She's the type that would like Taehyung.

But I like her. And when I like someone, there's no stopping me.

"How did you do that?" she asked while looking through my eyes when she finished drinking her water.

"Excuse me?" I asked confusedly.

"Dance like that? You were really good!" she said happily.

I'm glad she liked it.

"You just have to feel the heart of the music. Embrace it like it's your soul and the next thing you know, you're already the music." I explained.

Her eyes widened in amazement.

"Do you want to dance?" I asked her and she nodded excitedly.

"Come and let's dance." I offered my hand to her.

"But I'm not as good as you?" she hesitated.

"I will teach you. Come with me." I said and I gently pulled her to the dance floor.

I held her waist and gently guide her body to the music.

She was shy at first but after a while she started moving to the beat.

I was amazed the whole time because she surprised me with her dancing skills.

She's a great dancer.

Shortly after, we started dancing together. Feeling the music and enjoying each other's company.

I really like this girl.

She's so amazing.

I want to thank my sister for setting me up with her. And I'm glad Jungkook and Taehyung didn't come with me.

After dancing, I pulled Lalisa out of the bar to catch some air.

"Thank you!" she said happily.

"Thank you for what?" I asked her.

"For dancing with me" she said and I smiled. She's so cute.

"Lalisa?" I called.

"Yes?" she answered

"Do you have a boyfriend?"



Author's Note

Thoughts so far?

I already told you before, Jimin is part of the game.



The Stolen Kiss

Lalisa's POV

Do I have a Boyfriend? I asked myself.

I don't know how to answer him. Simply because the question is complicated to answer.

It's complicated because I am unofficially engaged to Mario but my heart belongs to Taehyung. And what complicates it more is Jungkook.

I don't know how I feel about him. But lately, he's been running on my mind and I can't stop myself from thinking about him.

And now Jimin is asking me this question.

Why is he even asking me this?

I can't answer him. Because I too am confused myself.

Jimin must have noticed my sudden silence because he started walking near me.

"They say silence means yes. But.." he paused.

"Lalisa, I don't care if you have a boyfriend or what. All I know is I like you and I will do anything to make you mine." he said.

I felt my knees weaken at his confession.

He is the very first man to confess to me and I admire his bravery for this.

"Come, they must be looking out for you now" he held my hand and gently pulled me back inside.

Jungkook's POV

It's already 12 midnight and Limario is not home yet.

I've been patiently waiting for him for hours now and I'm so worried.

He's a foreigner and I'm sure he doesn't know the way around Seoul.

How I wish I have his number. Jimin is also not home yet while Taehyung is still sulking in his room for that dead princess.

Where are you Manoban!

I stood when I heard the door opened. But I was disappointed to see Jimin.

He's smiling like a teenage girl and it's fucking weird.

"Why are you still up?" he asked me.

"I'm waiting for Manoban. Do you have his number?" I asked.

"No. Why are you waiting for him?" he asked curiously.

"I'm worried because he is new to this country. I'm afraid he will get lost." I explained but the smidget just raised his one brow.

"Really?" he smirked.

"Why are you late? And why are you smiling like that?" I asked him to change topic.

"Bro, I just found the one" he smiled and he walked to his room leaving me with questions.

"He found who?"

30 minutes later, the door opened and Limario walked in. I ran to him and checked his body for any injury or what.

"What are you doing?" he asked.

"Are you hurt?" I asked him worriedly.

"I'm not hurt. Why?" he pulled away from me.

"I just thought... Why are you late? It's already 12 midnight!" I asked and my voice raised which startled him.

"I'm sorry. I was just worried. Go ahead and sleep. You must be tired." I said and he took light steps to our room.

I follow after him and when I got inside. He was already lying down.

I looked at him while I sat on my bed.

After 30 minutes of him sleeping, sleep is no where to be found yet for me.

I'm confused at my feelings right now.

I held my chest which is beating so fast.

Is this love?

But why would I fell in love with a boy?

I don't know how but I think I am really gay.

And I don't care.

I love Limario and I'm sure of it.

I don't have the will to fight my feelings for him.

I slowly walked to his bed and kneeled down.

I observed his feature up close.

He is really pretty.

I wonder how his lips would taste like.

Before I realized, I was already leaning down to his face.

I pressed my lips to his.

I kissed him.

Then I pulled back. I touched my lips.

I really kissed him!

His lips are so soft and I wish I could kiss him more. But I'm afraid he would wake.

I know it's wrong to do this but I can't stop my feelings anymore.

The Messed Up Feelings

Limario's POV

"Good morning Limario! I already cooked breakfast, call Tae and Jungkook so we can start eating." he said with a big smile on his face.

I nod and I went to their rooms.

After calling Jungkook and Taehyung, we are now silently eating together.

I woke up a little late today because I got home late last night and my head hurts from the lack of sleep.

I looked at the three of them and they are already wearing their uniforms while I'm still on my pajamas.

I checked the clock and it's already past 8 in the morning.

Shit! I'm too late for my class in Ladium!

I guess I just have to be absent today. I'm still sleepy from last night that's why I need to sleep more.

Right! I will just skip class today.

"How was last night at the club?" Jungkook asked Jimin and I just got quiet.

"It was the best night." Jimin smiled.

"Why?" Taehyung asked curiously.

"I just met this girl. She's so cute and pretty and I really like her." he said I blushed. Because I know he's talking about me.

"You always say that to all the girls you meet. What's new?" Jungkook said and I got disappointed.

Right. Jimin is a playboy. I know that.

"No, this one is different I swear. I really like her and I want to see her again. I'm so thankful to Chae that she bring her with her last night." he said.

"Was Jisoo with them too?" Taehyung asked.

"Yeah, your sister was there and Jennie. Lalisa was a new addition to their group." he said and Taehyung nodded.

"Lalisa? That's a foreign name" Jungkook said and I stopped breathing.

What if they found out?

"Yes. She's a foreigner. Just like Limario" he said and they all looked at me.

I'm sorry for cursing but Shit!!!

"By the way, why are still not on your uniform? Are you not going to school Limario?" Jimin asked and I was able to breath because of the sudden change of topic.

"I guess I'll just skip the first period. I'm too late to go to school." I said and they worriedly looked at me.

"What happened? Is there a problem? This is the first time you woke up late." Taehyung asked and I felt butterflies in my stomach for the concerned tone in his voice.

"It's because he got home past 12 last night." Jungkook butt in and I rolled my eyes.

"Why where were you?" Jimin asked and I got really nervous.

Jimin, if you only knew that we were together the whole time.

"I was out with a friend." I shortly answered.

"Who's that friend and where did you go?" Jungkook asked and the way he asked me is very demanding. Like he's my father.

I need to answer him or else he will not stop.

"My friend Bam and I went out clubing last night." I lied.

Taehyung ang Jimin nodded but Jungkook frowned.

What the is his problem?

"You shouldn't be going out that late alone!" Jungkook said with a loud voice.

"I was not alone! I was with my friend!" I answered with the same loud voice.

"Friend? You can't trust him just because he's your friend!" he yelled this time.

"I trust him because I was friends with him for a long time now!" I'm now yelling too.

"Still! You should not go out with him as late as that! Why won't you listen to me?" he said angrily.

"Why would I listen to you! Are you my boyfriend that I should listen to you?" I asked in annoyance.

Jungkook is really getting on my nerves.

"I'm not but you will do as I say because I want you to!!!" he is shouting now.

I clenched my fist so hard while looking at him.

"Geez.. You too look like a fighting couple." Jimin said and I realize they are both staring at us amusedly.

I looked at Taehyung and he was shaking his head disappointedly. So I sat back straight to my chair and continued eating. Jungkook continued eating too.

"Go get yourself ready, we're are going to school together." Jungkook said and I looked at him.

"Me?" I asked.

"You of course. I'll wait for you so make it quick" he said.

What is wrong with this guy? He keeps ordering me around like I'm his servant.

Even if he's the son of the president, I am a princess and so he can't boss me around just like that!

The door finally opened. And Tzuyu came in without knocking.

"Don't you know how to knock?" Jimin asked her. But she just rolled her eyes.

"What are you doing here Tzuyu?" Jungkook asked. I can tell he's not happy to see her.

"I came to pick you because you won't answer your phone! Come with me because I have a surprise for you and I know you will like it." she said and she started pulling Jungkook's arm.

I really don't like this girl especially for Jungkook.

"What surprise?" he asked in annoyance.

"It's a secret but I can give you a clue" she said and she suddenly lifted her skirt to show him.

My eyes widened when I saw her red panty underneath.

Jimin and Taehyung looked away because of it and Jungkook was shocked.

"What are you doing?" Jungkook asked and he pulled Tzuyu out of our dorm.

Shortly after, I heard Jungkook's car leaving the parking lot.

I really really really hate him so much!

Jungkook's POV

I quickly drove my car to get Tzuyu away from my friends as far as possible.

I don't like the look on Limario's face when he saw what Tzuyu did.

This princess is really getting into my nerves.

"Baby, where are we going? In a hotel?" she asked and I rolled my eyes.

"Why do you have to do that!" I asked.

"Why? Don't you like it?" she asked while rubbing my thigh.

I just stayed silent. I don't know where to go. I want to dispose her but it's not how I should treat girls right?

But still! She annoys me. I could've spent my morning with Limario if she didn't came barging on our door.

"What are you doing?" I asked when she suddenly pulled my zipped down and took my cock with her hand.

"I missed this" she said and she started taking my cock inside her mouth.

"Tzuyu stop!" I said but she didn't stopped.

Her mouth feels good and even if I don't want her to do this to me, I just imagined Limario's pretty face and I didn't stop her from

giving me a blow job.

Soon I came into her mouth and she swallowed it all.

I drove to her university and made her go out of my car without even saying thank you for the blow job.

All I think right now is *him*.

I'm so gay for Limario and I don't care!

The Bitch Princess

Lalisa's POV

Jennie, Chaeyoung, Jisoo and I are currently enjoying our coffee here at the cafe just near our school.

"Lalisa, My brother is asking for your number so it's okay if I give him yours?" Chaeyoung asked.

"Ummm. I'm sorry but.. I don't think--"

"Please please please! My brother really likes you and this is the first time I've seen him be interested with a girl so much so please Lalisa.." she begged and I feel guilty so I just nodded.

"Your brother is really head over heels for her!" Jennie said while sipping her coffee.

I suddenly got curious about Jungkook.

"Is Your brother head over heels for Tzuyu too?" I asked curiously.

"Nah! My brother is as cold as a stone. He has never entered a relationship seriously. He just toys with Tzuyu just like how he toys with other girls. And as much as I want you for my brother, I'm still scared that he will play with you too just like how he plays with other girls. That's why I will never introduce you to him." Jennie said and I finally understood.

So, he's really a jerk towards girls. No wonder he pisses me off.

"My step brother Taehyung is different." Jisoo said and just the name Taehyung caught my attention.

"You have a Stepbrother? Why is your step brother different?" I curiously asked.

"Yes I have a step brother who is friends with Jennie and Chae's brothers. He is my brother from the same father. He is different from Jungkook because he took a girl from the past so seriously and it made him lose his interests in other girls." Jisoo explained and I suddenly felt a pain on my chest.

Is she referring to me when she mentioned a girl from his past?

"You mean the princess?" Chae asked and Jisoo nodded.

Guilt suddenly washed over me. Guilt for lying to him. All this time he has been thinking about me and I couldn't even tell him that I'm his princess.

"The princess is dead and he's really mourning" Jisoo said sadly.

We all got quiet.

"Poor Taehyung. He's been a really good guy. He deserves to be happy." Chae said.

"Why don't you introduce Lalisa to him, maybe he'll change his mind" Jennie suggested and I shook my head in disapproval.

"No, I don't think he will like her. He only likes that princess." she said.

"And Lalisa is for my brother so just go find another one." Chae said as she hug me like I will leave her.

If I could only tell them the truth. If I could only tell Taehyung the truth about me.

But what's the use?

I will have to marry Mario and I will just leave him heartbroken when that time comes.

So it's better this way.

It's better if he doesn't know.

"Speaking of Princess" Jennie rolled her eyes when Tzuyu came in with her minions following.

Tzuyu saw us and she smiled like an angel as she walked to us.

"Hi sis!" she said to Jennie and she kissed her cheeks.

Jennie just gave her a tight lipped smile.

"Hi Chae, Hi Jisoo!" she said and she looked at me.

"Hi" I said.

"How come a girl from an unknown country like you get to hang out with rich girls like them?" She said to me and I was taken a back.

Excuse me?

Chae held my shoulder when I was about to stand.

"What do you want!" Jennie asked in annoyance.

"Nothing, I just want to tell you that I got an invitation from your mom for her birthday. I'm excited to see my future mom!" she said and I rolled my eyes.

"Why are you rolling your eyes dear? Is it because you're not invited? I'm sure you will never get an invitation from a family like them. Only royals like me can get close to them." she said and now I can feel my nose is fuming with anger.

"Shut up! I'm going to invite her!" Jennie said.

"Oh really? I bet she can't even afford a dress for the party?" she said while chuckling.

"What's your problem with Lalisa Tzuyu?" Jisoo asked.

"Nothing. I just don't want social climbers like her getting into your group. That's all. But I need to go. See you at the party Lalisa! I'm excited to see your dress!" she said and she winked at me.

When she was gone, I was finally able to calm down.

"Bitch!" Jennie muttered and we all looked at each other.

Then we laughed so hard.

"Why are we laughing?" Chae asked while wiping her tear on her eyes.

"I don't fucking know?" Jennie answered laughing.

"We are laughing because she's a bitch!" Jisoo said and we started laughing again.

I was also laughing so hard and I don't know why.

I'm just glad that these girls got my back.

I finally found new friends here and It makes me really happy.



Author's Note

Who do you think deserves Lisa more among the three?



The Truth Untold

Taehyung's POV

I was alone in my room when finally my mother called me.

I excitedly answered my phone because I miss her so much.

"Hello Jack! How are you!" I hear her sweet voice on the line.

"I'm fine and well mom, how about you? I miss you so much!" I said with a sad voice.

"I miss you too my son. But is there something wrong?" she asked and I got conscious.

My mother knows everything about me and she can definitely tell if I have a problem or what.

"I just.. I just miss her." I admitted. My mother knows how much I like Pranpriya. The princess who stole my heart.

Pranpriya and I have been friends for years and our friendship started when I fought her friends who was bullying her.

After that incident, we became really close. But she would just sneak out of the palace just to see me.

Her grandmother which was the queen doesn't like me to be friends with her that's why we kept our friendship a secret.

But even at a young age, I already fell in love with her.

I love her so much but we're exactly the opposite. She's a princess while I was just a poor boy. My mother just used to sell her farmed vegetables on the market.

Life was so hard for both my mom and I then. I don't know my father that time, all I know is that my mom got accidentally pregnant with me and she ran away because my father was already married and he wants me aborted.

So she had to leave Korea and we stayed in Thailand to hide from my father.

But during Pranpriya's birthday, my father found us and took me by force.

She left my mother with good fortune in exchange of me.

At first I didn't want to leave my mother but I don't want her to suffer from working too much so I just decided to come with my father.

I found out that I have a step sister but her mother is already dead.

Jisoo has been nice to me and she made me feel welcome in the

family.

My father on the other hand apologized for everything that he did to me and my mother and now he's trying his best to make up for me.

And now, my mother who is now in Thailand is living a comfortable life because my father bought her a house and gave her a money to start a business and It makes me really happy to see her that way.

The only regret I had is leaving Pranpriya without even saying goodbye.

Now she's dead and I regret everything so much.

If I could only bring back time.

I would tell her how much I love her and how much I've been thinking about her. That I'm so sorry for leaving her on her birthday.

"I'm sorry for your loss son" she said on the other line.

"Were you able to go to her funeral?" I asked.

"No, there was no funeral. We haven't seen her body. The queen kept her remains from us." she said and my brows furrowed.

"What? Are you sure she's dead?" I asked.

"Calm down Jack and listen to me carefully." she said and I paid attention to her.

"There's a rumor going around that the princess is not yet dead. And that the queen is just hiding her somewhere to keep her safe from those who wanted to kill her." She said.

My mind was blown as my heart thumped out of my chest.

"Pranpriya is alive?" I asked covering my mouth agape.

"We're not sure son. It's just a rumor and I don't want you to hope that she is." she said.

"No, I can feel there's something wrong about everything that happened. I need to find out mom." I said.

"What are you planning to do?" she asked.

"I'm going there in Thailand and I'll look for her myself."

Limario's POV

"Kunpimook, I need you to buy me a simple dress because I'm going to attend the first ladies birthday." I told him on the phone.

"Princess, don't you think it's dangerous to show yourself as a girl in front of those family? And there will be a lot of elite families who will surely attend. What if they found out about you." he worriedly asked.

"Don't worry, I can pull this off. I told my friends that we will just stay on Jennie's room. I don't have to show myself to the president or to the other visitors." I said.

"You sure about this princess?" He asked again.

"Yes, I am. Just find me a simple dress and book me a hotel room where I can change. The party is tomorrow and I need to be ready." I said.

"Okay princess. I will" he said and I ended the call.

As much as I don't want to attend the party because of the risks, I really want to piss that princess off. I want to show her that I can also be invited to that party.

I planned to avoid Jungkook when I got there. And I don't have to worry about Taehyung because he's out of town and we don't knkw where he went.

Jimin texted me and he said he's excited to see me. I just hope we don't bump with Jungkook.

He hasn't seen my girl version yet and I'm afraid he would notice me.

Taehyung saw me already as Pranpriya while Jimin saw me as Lalisa.

I found my life harder this time realizing that these boys has seen the different versions of me.

I need to think clearly first before acting around them.

Jungkook is very observant and he'll probably recognize me the moment he sees me.

I sighed.

I can do this! I can pull this off!



Author's Note

How are ya'll? 🍷🍷🍷

The First Lady's Birthday

At the Blue House

Lalisa's POV

I nervously looked at the Blue house where the president and his family is living.

This is where Jungkook and Jennie lives and it looks so awesome up close.

Jimin looked at me and smiled. He open the door of his car and offered his hand for me to take.

He is really a gentleman and sweet and that's his best quality.

"Shall we?" he asked and I nodded. He offered his arm for me to hold and we started walking.

Jimin offered to drive me to the palace with him. I agreed because Chae and Jisoo went together and I have no car to ride on since Kunpimook is busy.

Jennie texted me that she and Jungkook are already at the palace and Tzuyu arrived with Jungkook.

I kinda miss Taehyung. He's missing in action and I don't know where he went.

"Mr. Park!" the guards bowed at Jimin and let us enter the big house.

The huge door finally opened and I instantly stopped on my track when I saw how luxurious the inside is.

This is a really special birthday party.

I noticed how everyone looked at me and Jimin.

I got conscious all of a sudden.

Do I look bad? I'm wearing a simple blue gown and I hope it's okay.

"Don't be shy. You're the most beautiful lady in this house tonight." Jimin offered me his warm smile and I smiled back.

My eyes travelled to the crowd and it immediately stopped at the two couples who are now intently looking at us.

Jungkook and Tzuyu.

I can see the piercing look of Tzuyu on me and I can see the confused look on Jungkook on me.

I hope he didn't recognize me.

Jimin just waved at Jungkook and we continued walking to Chae and Jisoo who was drinking wine on one corner.

"Oh my gosh Lalisa!!! You look so fabulous!" Chae said as she hug me.

"You're the prettiest!" Jisoo said and she also gave me a hug.

"Hi sis! Where's father?" Jimin asked.

"Father is there." Chae pointed to their father whom is far from us talking tome people.

"I'm sorry girls but I need to take her away from you." Jimin said then he gently pulled me away.

"Where are you taking her?" Chae shouted.

"To mom and dad!" he said and my eyes widen.

"Jimin wait!" I tried to stop him from pulling me.

"Why?" he asked.

"Why are we going to your parents?" I asked nervously.

"I'll introduce you to them." he said and before I could protest, I was already infront of two old couples.

"Good evening mom and dad, I'd like you to meet Lalisa Bruschweiler." he said and I nervously bowed at the two who is staring at me.

"Jimin, is she the one you've been talking about?" His mom asked and I was shocked.

He's talking about me?

"Yes mom, she is." he said proudly.

"Such a beautiful lady you are. Jimin has told us a lot about you." his father said. And I blushed so hard.

Jimin is really serious about me.

I looked at him in admiration. He's really the sweetest.

"Lalisa my dear, would you mind if we invite you next time for a lunch?" his mother asked sweetly and I gulped.

"Su.. Sure.. Thank you for your invitation. That's very kind of you!" I bowed down.

The four of us continued talking until someone grabbed my attaeption

Was that?

I nervously followed him with my eyes.

"Excuse me, I will just go to the rest room" I said and I left them.

I quickly walked to where he is and I saw him standing near the window.

My fiancée.

Mario

The Mysterious Girl

Jungkook's POV

Mom's party is boring. It's all because Limario and Taehyung are not here.

Taehyung left without telling us where he is going while Limario refused to come because he said he will be studying something.

Jimin on the other hand is going crazy over his date. He told me that he will be with that Lalisa girl. Jimin is seriously whipped with the girl and I understand his feelings because I'm whipped too.

I wonder what that Lalisa looks like.

And now, I am stucked with this princess but I need to be a gentleman around her because my mother is here and she really likes Tzuyu.

"Hey, what are you thinking? You've been ignoring me the whole night." she said while wrapping her arms around my neck.

"I'm just bored." I said.

"Do you want to fuck?" she asked and I shook my head *No*.

Suddenly the door opened revealing Jimin who's wearing a suit.

I look at the girl he is with and my heart beated faster.

Who is she?

She's so beautiful.

She looks like a Princess.

Her presence caught everyone's attention and so everyone looked at them.

Men looked at her with admiration while the girls look at her with jealousy.

Is she Lalisa?

She's really really pretty.

But.. She looks so familiar

I want to know where have I seen her.

She's definitely not my ex.

Then who is she?

"Hey! Stop staring at that girl! I'm here in front of you." Tzuyu smacked my arm and I looked at her. She's so pretty too but that mysterious girl outshined her when she stepped on the room.

She looks mad because everyone's attention was on that Lalisa. Tzuyu is an attention seeker and she hates it when someone beats her to it.

I looked back at Jimin and the girl and they are now talking to Jisoo and Chae. She seemed to be close with the two. I wonder if Jennie is close with her too?

Then Jimin pulled her to his parents.

Geez... He really introduced her to his parents? This is the first time Jimin did this.

That girl is really special.

Jimin is lucky my heart is already owned by Limario. If not, I will get that girl right at this very moment.

But why am I thinking so much about that girl?

I already have Limario and I love him.

Why do I feel like I'm cheating on him just because I'm looking at Lalisa?

Uhhhh! I don't know anymore!

I looked away to stop myself from admiring her.

Limario will always be better than anyone. Right?

When I looked back to where Jimin was and his parents, the mysterious girl is not with them anymore.

Where could she be?

I started walking leaving Tzuyu behind.

I looked for her and found her talking to a handsome man who looks like a foreigner

Who's that?

My curiosity is killing me and I started walking to them.

I noticed how serious their faces are.

What are they talking?

When I was near them, the girl started running and she bumped on me. Luckily I was able to hold her waist to steady her.

"Are you okay?" I asked the familiar girl.

She just nodded while looking down.

"There you are, I was looking for you." I heard Jimin say behind me.

"Oh.. Jungkook you're here. I'll introduce you to my date." he said and he held the girls waist.

This motherfucker is so lucky to have this girl as a date. But I don't care. As long as I have Limario.

"Lalisa, this is my bestfriend Jungkook. Jungkook this is Lalisa, the girl I've been telling you about." Jimin said while smiling proudly.

"Nice to meet you." I offered my hand for her to shake. Then she hesitantly shook my hand.

When our palms touched, I realized how soft her hand is.

As soft as Limario's hand.

I looked at her intently studying her features more.

Who are you?

I was cut off my thoughts when I felt someone grab my arm.

"Babe, I've been looking for you. Your mom is calling us." Tzuyu said and she pulled me away from Lalisa and Jimin.

I sighed when both of them started walking away too.

I was so closed to remembering who she is but this girl just ruined my moment.

I need to know who she is.

I will find out soon. I promised myself.

The Bloody Evidence

Lalisa's POV

Phew that was close!

I was so nervous the whole night because of Jungkook.

I now he's curious about me and luckily I was able to get away before he recognizes me.

A lot has happened this night and my mind is blowing with too many thoughts.

First, Jimin.

Jimin introduced me to his parents and now the Prime minister and his wife wants to get to know me more.

Second. Mario.

I was really shocked to see him there but he said he was with his father who is the Prime Minister of Thailand and the president invited them to the party. He also knows about grandma's plan of hiding me and they know that I'm alive.

Speaking of being fucked up.

My life is totally fucked up.

I've been avoiding Taehyung because I'm Pranpriya, I've been avoiding Jungkook because I'm Lalisa and I've been avoiding Jimin because I'm Limario!

I can even win an Oscar for this.

I hate this so much and now Mario reminded me that our engagement is still on and the queen looks forward to it.

I'm now back at the hotel for me to change to my men's clothes before going back to the dorm.

When I stood, I realized my woman part is wet.

Shit! I'm on my period and I don't even have tamppons or pads with me!!!

What if the boys saw me bleeding like this?

I took my handkerchied and folded it over my panty to have it serve like a pad.

I'll just throw this when I get back home.

I wore my men's clothes and left my gown there.

Kunpimook will just pick it up tomorrow.

I hailed a cab and went to the dorm.

Luckily, Jimin and Jungkook are already sleeping when I got back.

I throw my the bloody handkerchief in the trashbin on our bathroom. Jungkook and I's bathroom.

I used a tampon and started removing my make up.

Periods are the reason why I really hate being a girl. It gives me cramps and my head hurts so much evry time.

Lucky are these boys who doesn't need to experience this.

After freshening up, I lay down the bed and began sleeping.

The next day..

I woke up hearing Jungkook screaming from our bathroom.

Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!

Why is he shouting so early in the morning?

I rub my eyes and Jimin came running to our room shirtless.

Yes. Bless my eyes.

"What happened?" he worriedly asked.

"I don't know?" I shrugged. Probably he is swelling again.

Jungkook came out of the bathroom still screaming and when I looked at him. He was carrying the bloody handkerchief I used last night.

My eyes widen and my cheeks heat up when I saw it.

This is the most embarrassing part of my life.

"What the hell is that?" Jimin asked with wide eyes.

"Someone just murdered someone and this is a fucking evidence!!!" Jungkook dramatically said.

"Oh my god! Who killed who? I was innocent because I was at the party last night!" Jimin defended and I rolled my eyes.

"I'm innocent too because I was there too! Now Who is the killer? What if the police come and saw this bloody evidence?" Jungkook's voice was really worried.

I don't know if I will laugh at them or I will feel sorry for their ignorance.

"We need to focus and clear our mind. Let's hide that evidence before the police came." Jimin paced back and forth contemplating on what to do with the hanky.

I bit my lip to stop my self from laughing. I decided to end their suffering.

"Guys! That's my blood." I told them and they looked at me worriedly.

"How? Were you stabbed?" Jungkook kneeled in front of my bed while checking my arms and legs.

"Yes I stabbed my self when I was cutting the onions." I lied.

Jimin ran out of our room and when he came back, he was already carrying plasters.

My heart warmed at his sweet action. Actually both of them looks genuinely worried about me.

"Where is it? I will put plasters to your wound" Jimin said as he try to unbutton my shirt.

What the!!!

I covered my chest in an instant and they both frowned.

"No!" I said.

"Limario, let Jimin patch up your wound or it won't stop bleeding?" Jungkook said with a worried voice.

As much as I appreciate their concern, I can't just let them strip me naked and worse, the thing which is bleeding is my vagina.

"Thank you for your concern. But can you please just leave the plasters there? I'll do it by myself I promise." I said and they nodded.

"Promise?" Jimin asked and I smiled.

"Promise! Now both of you prepare for school. I will not go to school today because I don't feel well" I said.

"Do you want me to take care of you?" Jungkook offered and I quickly shook my head.

"I'll be fine. Don't worry." I said.

And they both prepared for school.

After 30 minutes they left and I was able to finally breath.

I feel sticky and I need to shower.

The dorm is all mine so I didn't bother on locking the bathroom door.



Author's Note

What do you think will happen next? 🤔🤔🤔

The Singing Ghost

Taehyung's POV

I finally got home from Thailand after two days of investigating.

I found out from a friend who is closed to the Queen that Pranpriya is still alive and she's just being hidden somewhere.

I also heard the news that she is set to marry the Prime Minister's son Mario Chayut.

And now It gives me so much hope that there's still a chance that I can see her and I can correct the mistake that I did in the past

Wherever you are my princess, I hope and pray that you're safe and sound. I know you're life is now in danger and I hope you're not scared. If I could only see you. I promise I will protect you from those who tries to kill you.

I also hope it's not too late to reconsider the engagement. I don't know if you love the guy. If you do, I will respect it but if you don't, I will fight for you instead.

I don't care if I will have to face the queen, all I want is your happiness my princess.

I was talking to Pranpriya mentally that I didn't notice I'm already in front of our dorm.

I checked my watch and it's already 9:15. They're probably at school now. I guess it's too late to come to school so I'll just skip class today.

When I got inside the dorm, I head to my room to settle my things. Then I heard a girl's voice singing.

I got chills just thinking about a *ghost*.

Is the dorm haunted?

I nervously look around to see a ghosts or anything but I can't see any.

The singing continued and I nervously tried to focus on the voice.

It's coming from Jungkook and Limario's room.

Where is the holy water?

I can't find any holy water so I just gathered the courage in me and tried to fight my fear.

I slowly walk to their door and the singing is getting louder.

"I'm in front of you

I'm right here

Tell me with your lips

*say yes say yes
Without knowing
I'm going to you
I wanna tell you my heart with the blowing wind
love is true
I need you
Baby, words I wanna tell you
Words I couldn't say to you
Baby baby baby boy love is true"*

Why is the ghost singing a love song?
When I entered the room, the sound came from the bathroom.
I can hear someone is taking a shower.
That's not a ghost! It sounds like a real human!
But who could it be? Jungkook, Jimin and Limario are already in school because their cars are not in the parking lot anymore.
My feet stopped at the bathroom door.
I tried to twist the door knob and it is not locked.
Maybe it's really a ghost. Jungkook and Limario always locks the door when they're using it.
I slightly pushed the door open and peeked inside.
My eyes widened when I saw a girl naked.
Her back is facing me and I can't see her face. Her long hair is wet from the water, I can see her perfectly shaped ass, her tiny waist, her sexy back and her long legs.
My eyes travelled to the mirror in front of her. I blushed so hard when I saw her full naked body through the mirror. Her breasts and her thing down there is visible in my eyes.

Then it dawned on me.

I know that face. I know her too well. I know her because she's the one who owns my heart.

My heart started beating just looking at her face. Her eyes are closed as she was still singing.

I covered my mouth at the realization.

Limario is Pranpriya???



Author's Note

Liskook fans are you okay? I know you're excited for their moment but It's not yet time for JK to see her as a girl. But I promise it will be the best chapter if he finally knows the truth.

How are ya'll Taelice and Lismin fans? 🍷🍷🍷

The Girl With A Man's Wig

Taehyung's POV

Limario is Pranpriya.

Pranpriya is Limario.

Limario is Pranpriya.

Pranpriya is Limario.

How come I didn't realized that?

All these time I was looking and searching for her but I didn't know she was just actually near me the whole time.

It's so funny that I was mourning over her death when she's just a room away from me.

But why is she pretending like this?

Good thing I was able to run to my room before she came out of the bathroom.

I got away without her noticing.

I really wanted to ask her questions right now but I know she has her reasons why she's doing this.

I trust her so much and I will just wait until she tells me herself the reason behind everything.

Right now, I'm just gonna have to pretend that I don't know yet.

Yes. I'll just act casual around her even though I want to embrace her and to kiss her so bad right now.

Jungkook's POV

How will I confess to him?

Do gays confess to each other?

I mean I never really confessed to a girl before, what more to a guy?

If he says yes, what will happen?

How will I even marry him when the time comes?

But I heard some countries allows same sex marriage right?

My father is going to kill me I'm sure.

And my mother would be disappointed because she likes that annoying princess for me.

I feel sorry for them because now that I know that I'm gay, there's no chance that I can give them their grandchildren.

I just hope Jennie gives birth to tons of babies so that our parents will be happy.

I think Limario and I will just adopt babies. It doesn't matter if it's

not our own baby right?

Wait.. How do gays do sex?

Where do they put their penises?

Oh my God! It's gross!

But it's Limario so it's not

Maybe he will just suck my dick?

Yeah I'll settle for that!

How about I surprise him later with my *confession*?

But he seems to like Tae and Jimin more than me.

He's always happy around them and he's always grumpy around me.

But those guys doesn't like him just like how I like him.

Jimin is in love with Lalisa and Taehyung is in love with the dead Princess so they are not a competition. Right?

Right!

Limario is mine.

He is mine alone.

Jimin's POV

My parents are urging me to take Lalisa with me to our home.

I'm so happy that they like her too just like how Chae and I likes her.

She is so lovable that's why everybody she's easy to love.

I wonder if where should I take her next time?

I've been planning my next move on her as I wait for Chae in the parking lot of their University.

She told me she needs a ride because her car is out of gas.

How can a Prime Minister's daughter's car goes out of gas?

Is she fucking serious?

Though she's annoying, I still love her. She's my precious sister and I love her more because she introduced me to my Lalisa.

My eyes stopped blinm a few times when I saw a girl walking.

I knlw her too well even from a far.

A smile crept to my lips when I saw my very beautiful Lalisa.

Where is she going?

She's nervously looking around like she's afraid that someone might see her.

I slowly got out of my car and decided to follow her.

She went inside a men's room and I got confused.

Why would she use the Men's room?

She's being very suspicious so I hid behind a wall and waited for her to go out of the Men's Room.

Maybe she just mistakenly read it as Women's room?

After minutes of waiting, the door finally opened.

Revealing Limario Manoban.

What the hell is he doing here?

I got shocked more when he fixed a lock of long hair and push it to his shorter hair.

He's wearing a wig?

Why is he wearing a wig?

Where is Lalisa?

Why is Limario here in this all-girl school?

I looked closely at him and I finally realized.

Limario is Lalisa?

What the fuck is happening!!!



Author's Note

So, the two already knows the thruth.

Who is next?



The Gay's Confession

Jimin's POV

I kept walking back and forth on our dorm's living room waiting for Limario or should I say Lalisa.

I want to talk to him I mean her because I have a lot of questions on my mind for her right now.

Why is she pretending to be a boy?

Why did she lie to me when all this time she was just in the same dorm as me.

I want to be mad at her but I know that she has her own reasons.

I need to hear her side. I'm upset but I like her too much to stay mad at her.

I looked at Taehyung who is sitting on the couch looking at the door from time to time.

Poor Taehyung and Jungkook, they have no idea that Limario is a girl.

Well, I can have that to my advantage.

What if I pretend that I don't know her secret and I'll make Limario fall in love with me?

We are just on the same dorm and I can be the sweetest if I would want to right?

I'll just pretend that I didn't know and I will treat her like a princess.

In time she will fall in love with me.

That's actually a bright plan.

Wait does Jungkook knows that he's a girl?

Maybe he knows already because he really like Limario.

I know Jungkook too much and I'm sure he will never like a guy.

He is a straight man and being a *gay* is the least thing he could be.

He probably saw her naked already because they just share the same room and the same bathroom.

Lucky guy.

But still, among the three of us here, I'm the sweetest and most caring.

Taehyung is the passive one because he likes the Princess and Limario or should I say Lalisa is not the princess he loves.

While Jungkook likes her but he's a bit intimidating and

sometimes he's too controlling and I can say Limario doesn't like that attitude of him.

And Jungkook has his girlfriend so he should just focus on it.

Taehyung loves the princess.

Jungkook should just love Tzuyu.

And Lalisa is mine.

I'm in an advantage here.

Taehyung's POV

Where could she be?

I'm so worried.

I really want to see her now that I know that she is my Pranpriya.

Does Jungkook and Jimin know that Limario is actually a girl?

I hope they don't.

But wait, Jungkook likes Limario right?

Maybe he knows that he's a girl that's why he likes him.

Jungkook will be a hard competition.

Good thing Jimin doesn't seem to like Limario.

He is whipped with that girl named Lalisa and the person I should be worried the most is Jungkook and Mario.

Suddenly, Limario came in.

I stood up immediately seeing the love of my life.

"Hi guys! Why are you still up? It's already 11?" Limario I mean Pranpriya asked.

"Where were you?" Both Jimin and I said at the same time.

I was confused. Does Jimin know too? He's a bit weird today? He usually doesn't act like this around Limario. Among the three of us, it is always Jungkook who's so extra when it comes to caring for her.

"I just hang out with my friend Bam." She said and she walked to her room. Jungkook and her's room.

I immediately followed her and Jimin does too.

Okay Jimin is acting really weird.

When we got inside, Jungkook is nervously walking back and forth his room. He immediately smiled when he saw Pranpriya. But he frowned when he saw us behind her.

Wait. I just realized. They've been sharing the same room.

Has Jungkook seen Pranpriya naked already?

If he has, he probably knows already.

Jungkook's POV

I was nervously waiting for him to come but it's already 11 and he's not here yet.

He really likes hanging out as late as this! And I hate it!

Manoban Manoban Manoban!

I'm so damn worried a bout him.

He doesn't even have muscles of a guy to protect himself.

His body is like of a girl. Small and weak and I bet he will be hurt easily if someone punches him.

Uhhhhh! I'm so worried about him.

What if I ask our guards at home to guard her?

Nah! That would be weird. Jimin and Taehyung would be probably laughing if they know I'm that desperate to protect a boy.

But he is Limario.. He's weak, small, soft and gentle.

He doesn't deserve to be hurt.

The world is tok cruel for an innocent guy like him.

Suddenly I hear the front door open.

Is that Limario? I excitedly walk back and forth the room.

This is it.

I can finally confess!

I smiled when he finally came inside.

But I frowned after immediately because Jimin and Taehyung came inside too.

What are these two doing here?

"Hey! Why are you late?" I frustratedly ask they guy.

"I just went out with my friend Bam" he said and I rolled my eyes. Maybe that Bam is gay too and he likes Limario.

Limario started removing his shoes while sitting on his bed. I looked at Jimin and Taehyung who sat at his bed too.

Jimin sat on his right and Tae sat on his left. Limario looked confused and so was I.

"What the fuck are you doing here? Don't you have your own rooms?" I asked the two.

"Uhm.. I just want to hang out here.. Your room looks nice." Jimin said while smiling at Limario.

"Yeah.. Your room is nice" Taehyung said while looking around.

"What the hell! You're room is designed just like this. Now go back to your room because I want to sleep!" I said.

But I noticed they're not standing up. They're just looking at Limario and Limario is blushing like what the fuck!!!

You're a guy Limario! You shouldn't be blushing because there are boys around you. That is sooo gay!

I hate these two!

Maybe these guys needs a *little* pushing.

Yeah just a *Little* pushing.

I stood up and grabbed both guys and with just one hard I mean light push they're already out of the room. I immediately locked our room.

Well.. *That was easy.*

"Hey! Open this door! I want to hang out with Limario first" I heard Jimin knocking.

"Go hangout with Tae you dimwit!" I yelled.

Finally I heard their footsteps leaving.

Fucking peace at last!

"That was weird!?" Limario uttered.

Oh fuck! He's here and I remembered I need to confess.

I rubbed my palm like he's a project I need to finish.

Okay calm down Jk.

You can do this.

It's not hard to say I like you right?

Wait. Should I say I like you or I love you?

But I love you would sound gay like fuck.

But I am gay.

I am gay for him.

But I love him.

I smiled at him and he tilted his head while looking at me.

Damn! He's so cute!

"Why are you just standing there?" he asked and with just his voice, my heart is going crazy.

I love you.

Say I love you.

Jk! Say I love you.

I closed my eyes. And breathed deeply.

"I love you!"



Author's Note

Do you think Limario heard his confession?



Sorry late update.

I fell asleep earlier last night.

The Unheard Confession

Limario's POV

Jungkook loves me?

Jungkook loves me.

My insides are churning as I remember the words he said last night.

Oh my God! I can't! I'm blushing so much right now!

I smile ear to ear everytime I remember what happened.

Flashbacks of what he said last night keeps repeating inside my head and my heart is going really crazy that I wasn't able to sleep.

Flashback

"Why are you just standing there?" I asked when I noticed he's just awkwardly standing on the corner.

He closed his eyes. And breathed deeply.

It's been minutes that his doing that and I think he fell asleep while standing.

I got bored waiting so I lay down my bed and closed my eyes.

But what he said next was the most unexpected thing I would hear my whole life.

"I love you!"

I heard him say.

He loves what?

I didn't open my eyes.

I pretended as if I'm sleeping because it's too much.

I need to process what he said first because I couldn't believe it.

Jungkook loves me?

My heart is bursting with happiness and I don't even know why.

"Oh! He's already sleeping." I hear him say.

I also heard footsteps coming towards me.

I can imagine he sat on his bed because it squeaked. I just pretended to be sleeping while clutching my chest.

"I've been practicing that confession for the whole day but it's no use because you are now sleeping. But still I will say it even if you won't hear it." he said and I heard him clear his throat.

"I love you Limario. I know I know you will laugh at me because I'm gay but I can't stop this thing inside me. It's beating so much when you're around. I love everything about you and I don't care if you're a boy just like me. If you'll just love me back, we can make it happen right? I hope

you are gay too just like me. Because I love you so much. I love everything that you do, I love everything about you."

"I love how you neatly fold your blankets in the morning, I love how you arrange your books and notes on the study table as if you have OCD, I love how you always clean the bathroom even if it's already clean, I love how you wrap your blanket around your body when you're sleeping like a burrito, I love how you tap your feet everytime you're listening to those cringy love songs, I love how you wipe your tears when you're watching those stupid kdramas, i love your penmanship, it's more prettier than encoded texts, I love how you always water the plants in the morning, I love that you don't snore in the evening but I always watch you sleep because it calms me down, I love that you always answer the questions of the professors correctly, I love how you always perfect every exams and quizzes we have even if you always skip classes, I love how you always bow to every people like a princess, i love that you don't know how to curse, I love you when your fashion sense is weird, I love your smile, your pretty face, you slim and soft body, you smooth and milkish skin, I love your eyes, your lips and everything about you. I love you and.... Fuck!!! I'm so gay for you Limario and good thing that you're sleeping because I know you would be laughing if you heard everyrhing that I said. I'm a pathetic gay but still what I feel for you is genuine and this is the first time I fell in love."

I was not breathing the whole time he said that.

"Goodnight Limario. I love you!"

He said and I was left speechless.

End of flashback

I didn't know he feels that way. All I thought is that he was a jerk just like how Jennie described him.

But why do feel so happy with his confession?

Why is my heart beating so fast?

Why am I feeling this?

What do I feel about him?

Do love him too?

All I know is he makes me feel different.

What I feel for Taehyung is love I'm sure. He holds a special place in my heart.

He is my first love.

While Jimin, Jimin is someone I care for. He is the sweetest and he takes care of me the most.

While Jungkook...

He makes me feel happy and mad at the same time.

He makes me jealous everytime he would spend time with that princess.

But he makes my heart beat so much.

He is someone I always look forward to seeing. He annoys me almost everytime but I long for it always.

I just didn't know he feels this way too.

Wait.

That means all the boys in this dorm likes me?

I don't even deserve anyone of them. I'm just an average girl with average qualities.

But they like the different versions of me.

Taehyung likes me as a Piness.

Jimin likes me as Lalisa.

And Jungkook likes me as Limario.

Who among them loves me the most?



Author's Note

Hi guys! How's the story so far?

Who do you think loves her the most?

The Drunk Limario

Limario's POV

When I got out of my room, I saw the three guys at the table.

There is food but it's still untouched. Maybe they are waiting for me.

I looked at their faces and they are all looking at me with smiles on their faces.

Okay... Calm your heart down girl.

I tried not to blush just by looking at their goergeous faces.

One looks so cute, the other looks so handsome and the last looks so sexy.

My eyes are so blessed early in the morning and I'm the luckiest because all of them likes me.

Two of them has confessed to me and the other one hasn't yet but I know how much he loves me.

Sadly, I will never choose any of them.

I'm already engaged and I will *marry* Mario even if my heart is already beating for one of them.

I love my country and I love my grandmother.

My duty is more important than my feelings.

That's why I will choose the path my grandmother has planned for me.

I slowly walked to the table and sat down next to Tae.

I saw how Jimin and Jungkook frowned but I always sit beside Tae and I'm used to it. It would be weird if I suddenly change my seat right?

"I made cupcakes for you Limario. Try it" Jimin offered a cute little cupcake with a strawberry on the top.

"Thank you! This is so cute!" I said. And started munching the cupcake.

"Don't eat that! You'll get *diabetes* and you will die early!" Jungkook said.

My eyes widened and I dropped the cupcake on my plate.

"Shut up! You're just jealous because you can't cook!" Jimin said.

Taehyung cleared his throat.

"I will drive my car to school today Limario, you can ride with me on the way to school." Taehyung offered and I nodded.

"Finally! You will drive your own car. I guess I'll go with you too.

Right Limario?" Jungkook said and Taehyung glared at him.

"I'll ride with you too" Jimin said while laughing.

"Whatever!" Taehyung is clearly annoyed by the two.

"You guys are weird." I said and they all smiled at me.

"No, I'm not. These two are weird. I'm always like this." Jungkook said and I realized he's right.

But I just shrugged it off.

I looked at Jungkook and our eyes met.

I suddenly remembered his confession last night.

So I looked away immediately.

Stop blushing Pranpriya!

He is just Jungkook.

Act like you haven't heard anything!

Act as if you don't know he loves you!

I finished my food quickly to avoid the three.

I need to focus on my studies because I'm really slacking off lately.

But I'm always on top at school even if I always skip classes.

My subjects are easy because my home tutors has taught me all of it already.

I stood up and the three stood also.

"Where are you going?" I asked them.

"Coming with you!" They said at the same time.

"I'm taking a shower" I said.

"Okay!" and they all followed me inside my room.

"Dude, I'm taking a shower with him!" Jungkook said and my eyes widen.

"No, you won't!" Taehyung glared at him.

"I'm the one who's taking a shower with him!" Jimin said.

"Wait! This is OUR bathroom that's why I'm taking the shower with him." Jungkook insisted.

"What are you guys talking? I usually shower alone! You go leave me alone!" I said and entered the bathroom leaving them outside.

I quickly locked the door so no one could enter.

I looked at my reflection at the mirror.

I still look like a guy. But why is Taehyung and Jimin acting like how Jungkook acts towards me?

I sighed.

The rest of the day ended quickly.

The three of them was bickering on who will sit beside me, who will eat with me, who will drive me.

They were just so annoying and I badly need some time alone.

I need to clear my head.

What's happening to my life?

All I wanted was to have friends in here, but I got three lovers instead.

It was 5 in the afternoon when I was able to escape from the three.

I need to be away from them for hours because they're confusing me so much!

I took my phone and dialled Kunpimook's number.

"Bam, I need to drink!" I said.

I never really drank alcohol's before but I heard it can erase your worries for a moment and so I want it so bad.

"Princess, are you okay?" he worriedly asked.

"Yes I am very fine but I really want to drink. Please buy me a drink and book me a hotel room." I said.

"Okay princess, I'll go to you. Send me the address where you are right now so that I can drive you to the hotel." he said and I ended the call.

An hour later, we were already at the hotel room.

Kunpimook bought me lots of alcoholic drinks which I don't know the names.

It tastes really bad and it burns my throat. It also numbs my head but I wanted it.

I need to erase him temporarily on my mind right now because he's driving me crazy.

"Princess, I guess you had enough" Kunpimook said and he grabbed the bottle from me.

"No, It's not yet enough!" I said and I grabbed the bottle back but he didn't let go. I pulled it with full force so the bottle spilled on my chest.

"Oh My!!! I'm really sorry princess! I didn't mean to spill the drink on you. Please forgive me! I was just worried." he said.

"It's okay.. Don't worry." I said.

"But please just let me drink. I need this please." I plead.

"Okay but make this the last princess please and I'll drive you to your dorm." Kunpimook said and I agreed.

After drinking, Kunpimook drove me back to my dorm. But I felt really sleepy and my eyelids feels so heavy.

"Princess, can you manage to stand and walk?" he asked.

"Hmm.. I.. Can..I think." I said but my eyes are closed now.

I felt him guide me out of the car. Then moments later I hear him knocking on the door.

But I really feel so sleepy.

I heard someone talking but my mind cannot process who's talking and what they are saying.

I just felt strong arms around me and I drifted off to sleep.

Jungkook's POV

Jimin and Taehyung decided to sleep but I decided to remain waiting for him.

We've been waiting for Limario for hours now and It's already 1 in the morning yet he's not home.

He's been avoiding us the whole day because the two are clinging to him.

Maybe he finds their actions weird and so he decided to leave us before the last period ended.

I quickly ran to the door when I heard someone knocking.

When I opened the door, I was surprised to see a man carrying Limario.

He seemed to be drunk because he is sleeping and he smells like alcohol.

"He's drunk?" I asked the guy. I think he is Limario's friend and he's familiar. I think he was my classmate during 1st year.

"Yes, she I mean he drank a lot. I'm sorry for the inconvenience but can you carry him to his bed?" he said.

"Of course I will. You can go now." I told him. And he hesitatedly left.

I carried Limario to our room.

"You're a very stubborn guy! I told you to not go home this late at night. And you even drink!" I said while carrying him.

He was very light like a feather. Sometimes I really question myself if he's really a boy because of his soft and light body.

When we got inside, I lay him to his bed. And I went back to the door to lock it.

I don't want Taehyung and Jimin to bother his sleep.

When I got back I looked at his sleeping form. His shirt is drenched with alcohol and I think it's very uncomfortable to sleep with a wet shirt.

Maybe I need to remove his buttoned shirt to make him comfortable.

I walked to his side and leaned down to unbutton his shirt

But I noticed he was wearing something underneath.

What is this? It's like a tight tube and I wonder if he can breathe while wearing it.

"This is so tight Limario, I should remove this for you." I said and started removing the tight tube.

My eyes widened and my jaw dropped when I finally saw his naked form.

What the hell!!!



Author's Note

What do you think Jk saw? 🧐🧐🧐

The Naked Limario

Jungkook's POV

What the hell!!!

What kind of socery is this?

Limario has woman's boobs?

Wait. Are these real?

This looks perfectly shaped.

Maybe it is implanted?

Oh my god! Limario is gay and he has implanted boobs?

How about if I touch it?

I looked at Limario and he is still sleeping.

I hope he won't wake up if I do this.

I slowly moved my hands on top of his tits.

Then both my hands landed to his breasts.

His nipples are cute and pink.

I squeezed it and it is firm.

As I was squeezing his boobs, I realized one thing.

These are not implanted!

These are real boobs!

But why?

He is a boy but why does he have boobs?

I was looking at him and I realized I've been groping his boobs for a long time now.

Okay.. one last squeeze and I'll stop.

But it feels good.

5 last squeeze is okay, right?

Oh my God I can't stop touching his boobs!

Jungkook this is wrong! Stop it!

I stood up far away from him.

This is so damn confusing!

Then I looked at his crotch.

Wait.

I remembered his crotch is flat when I cupped it last time?

I wonder...

What is down there?

Am I thinking what I'm thinking?

Is there a *penis* down there or???

As much as I don't want to see his penis, I can't stop my curiosity.

Oh my God!!!

I'm so curious and I really want to see what's there.

Will he be mad if I remove his pants?

But he's asleep.

I think he won't know.

Right! I'll check what's inside and I'll sleep right away.

I slowly unbuttoned his pants.

My hands were shaking as I unzip his zipper.

His pants were wide and loose that's why it is easy to pull down.

Finally, I pulled his pants all the way down.

But what I noticed is that he is not wearing any boxers.

Why the fuck is he wearing a pink panty?

Is he gay?

My hands are itching to pull the panties off.

I really need to see what's inside.

So I decided to slide it down.

And there I saw it.

I gulped.

This is not a penis!

It's a fucking pussy!!!

Limario is a girl?



Author's Note

Sorry for the very late update because I'm on a travel and my head hurts when I use my phone while riding a car.

The Transformation of A Girl To a Boy

Jungkook's POV

Limario is a girl.

I'm not gay.

Limario is a girl.

I'm not gay.

Limario is a girl.

I'm not gay.

Limario is a girl.

I'm not gay.

I can't believe this!

He is I mean she is really a girl!

I saw it with my very two eyes.

I saw what's down there.

I saw her cute little thing down there.

And she's really a *girl*.

I looked at her from my bed.

That may be the reason why I fell for her.

Because she is a girl all this time and my heart knows.

Luckily, I was able to change her clothes without *raping* her.

I know I know.. What I'm thinking is against the law but her body is just too fucking perfect.

And me as a boy craved for a body like that in an instant.

I can't believe I mistook her for a boy.

And I can't believe I didn't find out right away.

All this time I thought I was gay. But I'm really not.

There's a chance that I can still give my parents their grandchildren.

If It's Limario as my wife, I can give my parents 12 beautiful children.

Or maybe 15?

Yeah, we'll be making lots of babies when the time comes.

Thank goodness I was able to stop myself from touching her while I was dressing her up.

What's funny is that when I open her drawers, there are tons of cute underwears there.

How come I didn't find out that she has girl stuffs there?

Well maybe It's because she always wakes earlier than me. And when she's taking a shower, she would make sure that It's really locked.

But now that I know everything, I wonder why is she pretending and acting as a boy?

Is she hiding from something? Someone?

Is she a criminal?

Where did she even came from?

Who are her parents?

Why is she here in Korea?

I'm so curious about her.

Is Limario her real name or It's just a fake name?

Wait.

Does Jimin and Taehyung knows already that she's a girl?

I bet no.

But they were acting a little weird last day.

They seem to be interested in her all of a sudden.

Maybe they know already.

What the actual fuck???

Limario is *mine* and I will never let them have her.

I know and I can feel it that they only just got interested in her now that they know the truth about her gender. But I, I like her from the start and I would still like her even if she was a boy.

I need to talk to those two. I need to tell them to back off because she was mine first.

I was thinking about her too much that I realized it was already dawn.

Fuck! I wasn't able to sleep.

How about I pretend like I'm sleeping while she prepares? I wonder how she would act if I'm not here.

How about I hide in my closet? It's wide and I can fit there. And peek while she's preparing?

I smiled.

I want to see her body again.

I know I'm a little pervert but I can't help it.

Limario has a body to drool for and I want to see it again.

Hours had passed and it's already 9 in the morning.

Limario started squirming under her blanket. A signal that she will be waking soon.

I quickly hid inside the closet and peeked at her through the closet' blinds

She's now getting up from bed.

Limario's POV

When I woke up, I was already in my bed.

How did I get home?

I look down and I realized I'm already wearing my pajamas.

How did I change my clothes?

I don't remember anything except that I was in the hotel drinking.

Maybe I was able to change before I slept.

My head hurts but I need to prepare for school.

I stood up and realized that Jungkook is not in his bed.

Maybe he left already.

I took a shower and I realized I forgot to take my underwear and uniform with me because I was in hurry so I decided to just dress up outside the bathroom.

Jungkook's POV

Limario decided to take a shower and I waited patiently for her to come out of the bathroom.

The closet was dark and hot and I find it hard to breathe so I open it to catch some air first.

But I heard the shower shut so I quickly went back inside the closet.

The bathroom door opened and I peeked.

I saw Limario just wrapped in a towel.

Her body is wet and I noticed her hair was really long.

So she was just using a wig all this time?

It looks real tho.

She let the towel down and I saw her naked body all over again.

My cock instantly twitched at the wonderful sight.

"Come down buddy, not yet the right time." I told my cock.

She's so damn sexy especially with that long blonde hair.

She started wearing her underwear, then a tube to press her breast to make it look flat which looks painful for her, then he wore his uniform and lastly he wore his wig and tucked her long hair inside the short fake hair.

That's how she transforms from a girl to boy and I was so amazed I haven't found out sooner even if we share the same room.

I was so stupid for thinking that I'm gay all this time when I really fell for a girl.

She went out of the room and I quickly went out of the closet too to catch some air.

I was sweating but I'm smiling ear to ear.

I'm so fucking happy.

Limario is a girl.

But when I remembered her face once again, I realized one thing.

I saw her before but where?

She looks familiar.

Oh my God!!!

I saw her at my mom's party.

She was with Jimin.

That's why she looks so familiar...

Because Limario is Lalisa.

Lalisa is Limario.

And Jimin likes Lalisa.

So that means Jimin likes Limario too.

This is so fucked up!!!



Author's Note

Hi! I would like to ask my dear readers if it's fine with you if Lisa's character had intimate activity with not just one of the boys but two of them?

I really need your opinion on this because I'm considering it.

Thank you!



The Man to Man Talk

Jungkook's POV

After class, we all stood up and Limario started walking out of the room.

Jimin and Taehyung quickly walked to follow her but I was able to pull them by their shoulders to stop them from further walking.

"What?" They both asked at the same time.

I know they're annoyed that I stopped them from following Limario or should I say Lalisa but I need to talk to them.

I need to tell them how I feel for her and I need them to understand that I'm serious.

"I need to talk to you two." I said in a serious tone.

"We can talk later at the dorm, I want to walk home with Limario." Jimin said.

"No, I will drive him home." Taehyung said.

"No one is walking and driving Limario home because we are going to talk and I'm serious." I said and they tilted their heads but they nodded anyway.

"Let's go to our office, I want to talk to you alone." I said and we started walking.

When we finally got inside the President Council's Office where we always hang out, we took a seat at the meeting table as if we are going to discuss a school-related matter.

"What is it Jk?" Taehyung asked and I can see the confused look in his eyes.

I sighed and open my mouth to talk.

"It's about Limario." I said and they both turned their heads at me in an instant.

"What about *her*?" Jimin asked.

"*Her*? So you already knew?" I asked him and he got quiet as if he's scared to let us know that he found out already.

I look over Taehyung and he was quiet too. He's not surprised at all.

So, they really knew all this time.

"Since when did you knew?" I asked Jimin.

"2 days ago." he simply answered.

"How about you?" I asked Taehyung.

"I found out when I came back home from my trip." he said while

looking straight at the table.

I can feel the heavy atmosphere around us and It gives me chills. These are my brothers and my dearest friends but I need them to understand that I love Limario so much and I'm willing to do anything for them to stop.

"How did you find out?" I asked the two of them.

"I saw her at Ladium University." Jimin said and Taehyung's eyes and I widened.

"She's what?" I asked.

"She's been secretly taking a class at Ladium and she even made friends with our sisters. 2 days ago, Chae asked me to take her since she was out of gas but I found Limario in the University instead. She changed clothes from being a girl to a boy in the men's C.R. and that's how I found out that she was just pretending." he explained and I nodded.

"Why is she taking a class there?" Taehyung asked Jimin but Jimin just shrugged.

"I don't know. I'm confused too." he said.

"How about you?" I asked Taehyung.

He hesitated to talk first but he answered anyway.

"I saw her naked at the shower." he briefly explain.

"You What???" Both Jimin and I almost stood from our seat.

"It was an accident that I found out. I came home and the dorm was empty but I heard a girl's voice singing. I really thought it was a ghost so I started looking for her and I found her in your bathroom taking a shower. That's when I realized Limario is a girl." he said and I tried to calm my self down.

The thought of having other man see her body pisses me off.

I know I'm luckier that I was able to touch her body with my very own hands but still. I don't like sharing my girl. She's mine and she's supposed to just show me her body not to Taehyung or Jimin.

"How about you?" Jimin asked me curiously.

Should I tell them the truth? I think I should lie.

"I saw her changing too." I simply said and they nodded believing me.

What? I can't tell them that I squeezed her perky breast endlessly and pulled her panties down to see her pussy right?

"So, why do you want to talk?" Taehyung asked and I sit erect.

"I just want to make things clear that Limario is mine." I said looking at them straight in their eyes.

"Limario is yours?" Jimin scoffed and I looked at him.

"I liked Limario from day 1 and she's mine first!" I told him. But Taehyung just snorted.

"Just because you like her from day 1 doesn't mean she's yours!"

Taehyung calmly said and it pisses me more.

"Just so you both know, Limario is Lalisa all these time and I love Lalisa that means Limario is mine." Jimin said and I rolled my eyes.

"Limario is Lalisa?" Taehyung was shocked at his words.

"Yes she is. So that makes her mine." he repeated.

"The fuck are you even listening to me? I met Limario and I liked Limario earlier than you met and liked Lalisa. That means shes mine first!!!" I said in annoyance.

Taehyung just got quiet. I don't know what he's thinking but he weirds me out.

"Do you like Limario too?" I asked Taehyung who was quiet and he looked at the wall.

"I don't *like* her. I *love* her" he said and I clenched my fist at his choice of words.

I thought he loves the princess? But why the sudden change of feelings?

"You guys should stop." I said.

"Why should I? Everything falls perfectly between us. I like her, my family likes her. My parents are even asking her to stay and hangout in our mansion" Jimin proudly said and our head snapped to him.

"Your parents what?" I asked in disbelief.

"My parents approve my relationship with her. And I will make sure she'll be happy with me" he said.

"How sure are you that she will be happy with you?" I rolled my eyes at his confidence.

"Because I'm clearly showing her that I want us to be official. I'm proud to show her to the world even to my parents. How about you? How sure are you your parents will not oppose to your feelings for her." he said and I got quiet because its true.

"We know the President and your mom. They won't even slightly consider your relationship with just a *poor* girl like her." Jimin said and I heard Taehyung chuckled at the word *poor*.

Yeah maybe Lalisa or Limario is poor or not from a higher status of family. And my parents won't like that but still.

"Don't you have your own girlfriend to attend to Jk?" Taehyung asked and I can feel my blood boiling now.

"We all know how I feel for Tzuyu. I'm not serious about her." I said.

"And how can you say your feelings for Lalisa, my Lalisa is different? You've been hurting girls in the past and I'm sure you will hurt her too. You will dump her once you see another girl to mess up with!" Jimin accused.

"I don't like that tone of yours Jimin!" I said with a warning voice.

"You don't because it's true. You're a playboy. You just want to fuck girls and you leave them broken hearted after taking advantage of them." he said almost yelling.

"They're different from Limario! She's different! I love her so much and this is the fucking first time I fell for a girl so hard that I even considered myself as a gay and I'm still fine with it. I'm fine even if he was a boy. I would still love her even if he would carry a penis with him. I would still love her even if she won't bear my children. I would still love her even if the world will be against it. Now tell me Jimin, whose love is greater? Yours when you only found out that she's a girl or mine when I love her despite her gender or status?" I ended my talk breathing so hard. I didn't even notice I was standing now.

Jimin looked down and Taehyung stared at me with an intense eyes.

I sat back down and we all got quiet.

"Just because you love him as a boy doesn't mean you love her more Jungkook." Jimin said but with a calmer voice.

Taehyung was quiet the whole time as if he's processing everything that just happened.

Then he cleared his throat.

"Why don't you just let her choose who she wants between us three." Taehyung calmly said and I felt my body hair stood.

"You're part of the options? But I thought you only like the princess?" Jimin curiously asked but Taehyung didn't answer.

I can feel my body sweat at how serious Taehyung's expression is. He is *confident*. I can feel it.

He knows he would win if he'll take it seriously.

I've witnessed how hard he falls in love and when he does, there's no stopping him.

And the fact that Limario likes him also makes me anxious.

Between the three of us. It is Taehyung I'm worried the most.

But why? Why Limario? Why did he suddenly fell for her when a week ago he was just mourning over the death of his princess.

"Let's go back to the dorm. I bet Limario is looking for us. Let's just pretend this talk didn't happen. You can do everything you like to make her fall for you guys but make sure she's the one who chooses at the end." Taehyung briefly said and he walked out leaving Jimin and I confused.

"What's up with him?" Jimin asked while watching Taehyung's retreating back.

"I don't know?" I simply answered.

Taehyung seemed to have his last card on his sleeve and I'm

damned nervous about it.



Author's Note

What can you say about their man to man talk?

Thoughts guys?



The First Move

Jungkook's POV

I found Limario lying on her bed while reading a book on our room when I got back.

"Hi!" I smiled.

A beautiful scenery in my room she is.

"Hi! She shyly greeted.

"What are you reading?" I asked her.

"I'm just studying the Korean Law." she said and I smiled.

"You don't have to read. I can teach you about it" I offered and I sat on my bed.

"You will?" She asked in disbelief.

"Of course I will. I know a lot about it. My father has taught me so much." I said and she sat back to listen to me.

"Your father, the president... Is he nice?" she shyly asked.

"He's strict but he's nice. He loves this country so much." I said.

"Just like grandma" I heard her mutter.

"Just like who?" I asked.

"Nothing. So, would you like to be a president just like your father? She asked.

"I will. I will be a president in the future." I answered confidently. I'm trained for this. My father trained me to be like him. To be a strong leader just like him.

She nodded.

"How about you? What are your plans for the future?" I asked hoping to hear her say she wants to be a housewife to take care of her husband and kids. I badly wish she could be my wife. A supportive housewife just like my mother.

"It's a secret." she said.

"Will you please share me your secret?" I said as I move to her bed to sit beside her.

"I'm sorry, I can't!" she said then she looked away from me.

I looked at her pretty face. Despite not having any make up, she's still the most beautiful. Then my eyes travelled to her lips.

I want to kiss her lips so bad and with our closed distance, I'm afraid I won't be able to hold my self back.

I held her chin to look at me. Her eyes widened when she realized how close our faces are.

"Uhm.. What are you doing?" She nervously asked.

But I didn't answer her. I just closed my eyes and closed the gap on our faces.

Then finally our lips met.

Her lips are soft and sweet just like her.

I slowly kissed her hoping she would kiss me back. But she remained stiff and rigid.

My hand which was on her chin travelled to the back of her neck to push her face more to me.

But she pushed me away.

"Jungkook, I'm a boy!" she lied and I smiled.

"You're not. You're a girl and even if you were a boy, I would still kiss you!" I said and I pulled her by her neck once again.

My lips touched hers and I didn't stop myself from moving my lips more. I kept doing it as I rub her back to make her feel at ease.

Then, I felt her lips move a bit.

She's shy and I know this is her first time kissing. Her hands were just stiff on the sides and I can feel her eyes are still open.

"Close your eyes and try to follow what I'm doing." I said in between our kiss.

I guided her lips with mine on a slow and gentle rhythm. And after a while she was moving her lips too just like how I do.

Fast learner.

My hands travelled from her back to her cheeks and tilted my head to access more of her. My tongue gently pushed inside her and I felt how her eyes widened.

But I continued anyway despite her shocked state. I kissed her lips, her sweet lips with my tongue. Suddenly I felt her tongue moving a bit too.

She's responding.

I smiled at her lips as she placed her hands on my chest comfortably.

When I was about to lay her to her bed, her phone started ringing.

She pulled from the kiss quickly.

Speaking of wrong timing!

Who the fuck is calling her?

She took her phone and I was able to see the caller I.D.

Chaeyong

"Hello!" Limario said in a low voice.

I think she's trying to hide from me who she's talking to but I saw it anyway. I know that she's Lalisa and I know that she's friends with them.

"Tomorrow?" she nervously asked while looking at me.

"Uhhh.. Okay I will go." she said.

"Okay... Bye" she ended the call and stood from her bed awkwardly.

"Who was that?" I asked her.

"Uhm.. My friend she was just asking me out. I.. I need to go out... See you later Jk." she nervously said and then left me inside.

Chae is really annoying. But Jimin is really lucky to have a sister like her. I wish Jennie plays cupid to us too. She's friends with Lalisa too right?

Maybe I can ask her help on Lalisa?

I dialled her number.

"What!" She said on the other line.

"Nothing. I just miss my one and only sister." I said to calm her down. My sister is a little bit different from Chae and she's hard to deal with.

"I have no time for this. Tell me what do you want or I'll end the call!" She threatened.

"Wait.. Wait.. Chill.. I was just going to ask for your help" I said and I can feel her eyes rolling on the other line.

"What is it this time Jk! You made a girl cry again and you want me to clean your mess?" she said.

"No! Not that. I'm just wondering if you're close to a girl named Lalisa? I just want to know what her likes and dislikes..you know? To get to know her more." I said nervously. I know Jennie and I think it will be hard to ask her help.

"What the fuck Jungkook! I will never let you play with Lalisa so keep your dick on yourself!" She raised her voice and good thing my eardrum is still okay.

"No, I will not play with her I promise.. Please help me sis." I said.

"You already have a girlfriend Jk and Lalisa and Jimin are already doing good. Besides, Chaeyoung would kill me if I take Lalisa away from his brother. Just go on and find another girl to play with." She said and she ended the call.

Is there a way to switch sisters? Because I would gladly take Chaeyoung as my sister instead of Jennie!

She's no use.

I'm really Jealous of Jimin. His family likes Lalisa for her while my family don't.

Jennie doesn't want us to be together. And I know my mom. She would only want a Princess or a politician's daughter for me.

And Sadly Limario is not that.

But still..

I will do everything to make my family like her too.

Wait.. Does Jisoo plays cupid too?

I hope not.

Taehyung would be on a greater advantage if she does.

She's the most caring Unnie and she loves Taehyung so much.

Uhhh! I hate my sister!

The Confused Princess

Limario's POV

Jungkook kissed me.

I touched my lips as I walk out of the dorm.

I need to think clearly because my mind has been occupied by him the past few day.

I don't know what's happening to me?

I don't know the reason why I didn't pushed him when he kissed me.

That was my first kiss but I didn't mind if he took it from me.

Back then, I thought I will only give my first kiss to Taehyung.

But Jungkook..

He changed my plans.

He changed how I feel.

I'm so confused right now.

Do I still love Taehyung?

Because my heart is beating more when Jungkook is around me.

I don't know how it happened but he makes me feel happy.

Maybe because he's been persistent on showing me how he feels even if I'm a boy.

Wait. He knows already that I'm a girl but how?

How did he know?

Does he know that I'm a princess too?

Does Jimin and Tae knows too?

I bet they don't.

If Tae knows he would probably be kissing and embracing me endlessly now.

I know how much he loves me.

I know how much he misses me.

But.. Why do I feel like I don't feel the same anymore?

To me, he is a special someone who holds a special place in my heart.

I care for him so much and I really want him to be happy.

But we cannot be together anymore.

I don't know why.

Maybe because I'm already engaged?

Maybe because I don't love him anymore the way I loved him before?

Maybe because I love Jungkook now?

Do I love Jungkook?

I don't know.

I'm so confused and they're all making me confused.

Chae even called me and invited me to their house tomorrow.

She said Jimin and their parents expects me to come.

Jimin is a nice guy too. And Chae is a good girl.

All of them are confusing me so much.

But I'm engaged right? I have a fiancée and It's Mario.

If I could only travel back time and just told my grandma that I will never accept Mario.

Maybe everything is different. Maybe I will not be hesitating in accepting his love.

I really don't want to hurt any of them.

I care for all of them.

But at the end of the day, I will still hurt them.

I sighed.

I don't know where to go.

Maybe I'll drink?

Yeah.. I'll drink again.

But I don't want to drink with Kunpimook. He's like a strict father to me.

How about with Chae?

No, she will call Jimin for sure.

How about Jisoo or Jennie?

I dialled Jisoo's number but I can't reach her so I dialled Jennie.

"Hello?" she answered.

"Jennie? Can we.. Can we hangout? If you're not busy?" I shyly asked.

"Of course! Where do you want to go?" I heard her say.

"Uhhh.. I want to have a drink if that's fine with you?" I said.

"Sure, I know this cool club, let's meet there. I'll send you the address." She said and moments later, I was already at the club with her.



Author's Note

Hi guys!

May I ask which country are you from?



The Best Sister

Taehyung's POV

I came to home to the mansion after my talk with Jimin and Jungkook.

I'm so sad and I need someone to talk to.

I can't talk to my sister Jisoo because she will be worried about me for sure and I don't want to mess her friendship with Pranpriya.

Pranpriya is Lalisa.

And Pranpriya is Limario.

My head is bursting with so many questions and I don't know what to think anymore.

Jimin admitted that he really loves Lalisa which is Pranpriya and Jungkook feel in love with Limario which is also Pranpriya.

I want to cry, shout and punch someone because of the frustration I feel.

9 years. 9 years of longing for the Princess and it was so hard. Luckily, I was able to keep my self sane from missing her so bad.

I want to tell Jungkook and Jimin that she was mine first.

She was my princess.

The one that I love.

She's the one that I only love but I can't.

I can't tell them her secret.

Her secret is not mine to tell and even though I want to be selfish, I care for her safety more.

I know someone out there is trying to kill her and if I tell the boys about her identity, it will risk her life.

I love her so much. And I envy the boys because they can freely express their feelings to her while I have to pretend that she is not the princess that I love.

They are my brothers. I love the both of them but I don't know which happiness I should consider first, mine? Or theirs?

I don't even know if Pranpriya still feels the same. I'm not blind and I can see that she's starting to like Jungkook.

But she's still hesitating because of some reason that I don't know.

Maybe because she's already engaged that's why she's trying to block Jungkook.

This is the first time Jungkook has fallen in love and I'm scared.

As much as I want my brother to be happy, I just can't.

I'm a bit selfish for wanting her too. She's the only girl that I loved and I'm afraid that someone would take her from me.

But still, I won't force her to accept me again if she loves another man.

I love her and I want her to be happy, even if that happiness does not include me.

I knocked on my dad's door. Hoping to see him. I haven't gone here for a long time and I kinda miss him too.

"Come in.. Oh! It's you my son. What brought you here?" he immediately put down the books he's reading to the side of his office table.

I sat on the chair in front of him and I smiled.

"I just want to talk. I need some advice." I said.

"What's the matter? Did someone hurt you?" he asked concernly.

"Nothing. I was just... There's just this girl.. I really like.. " I started while scratching my head.

"Oh my son is in love!" he said happily.

"Yes... I'm in love with her dad but.. My friends.. They love her too and I don't know what to do? Should I just give up? Or should I fight for my feelings and fight my friends in the process? " I asked.

My father's brows furrowed.

"This girl must be really special that she made your friends fall in love with her too?" he asked.

"Yes. She is. She is a very special girl." I smiled as I remember her.

"And who are these friends? Jungkook and Jimin?" he asked and I nodded.

"But Jungkook is with a princess right? Wait! Are you in love with that princess Tzuyu?" he asked and I quickly shook my head.

"No, she's not the one I am talking about." I answered. Our parents are closed to each other like brothers that's why we are closed to each others too.

"Then tell me, are you only hesitating just because of your friends?" he asked.

I don't know how to answer him. Clearly because that's not the only reason. It's a more complicated one.

She's engaged and her life is at risk, my friends loves her and she's friends with our sisters.

I don't know how to answer my dad so I just nodded.

"Son, in life you need to make choices. And this choices will always end up with hurting somebody. As much as I want to answer your question for you, I can't because it's your life to decide." he said.

"When I was young, I was arranged to marry your step

mother, the mother of Jisoo. Her mother was rich and came from a prominent family. But that time I was already in a relationship with your mother. Your mother came from a poor family and my parents didn't approve of our relationship. I was at the peak of my career as a lawyer then when I got both your mother and Jisoo's mother pregnant. I was really scared that time and I don't know what to do. My parents told me to leave your mother or I will be left with nothing. They will disown me and the career I built successfully will end. I listened to them so I asked your mom to abort you because I was scared that my reputation will be ruined by having people know that I have a pregnant mistress. That was the worst decision I made and I'm so sorry for that. I loved your mom but I made the wrong decision. So what I'm saying now is, if you love a person, you must make the right choice. I know it's not easy but just follow your heart. I hope you won't do the same mistake that I did." he said and I got quiet.

"I guess I need to think clearly then." I said.

I would also want to follow my heart but I doubt Prapriya still feels the same.

"Who is this girl we are talking to? Do you want me to talk to her?" I heard my father said and I smiled.

"I appreciate your help dad but this is my problem and I want to solve it on my own. I don't want to pressure her because I have a powerful dad like you." I said and he chuckled.

"You're a really a great kid. That girl is so lucky to have you." he said.

"No, I'm not great. I just love her. That's all" I smiled.

After our heart to heart talk, I went out of the room and saw my sister Jisoo sitting on the living room.

"Oh! You're here!" She was surprised to see me.

"Yes, I just talked with father. And I need to go back to the dorm now." I said.

"What's the problem?" She asked. Her eyes are piercing my soul as she observed me.

"Nothing." I lied.

"I know you. You will not talk to father if you don't have a problem. Now tell me. Who's bothering my brother or I'm gonna punish whoever it is?" She said. Her tone is serious and I know she's not joking.

When it comes to Jisoo, she would always be protective of me. She treats me like I'm her baby brother when in fact she's just older in months.

"Uhhh.. Nothing really. Don't worry about me." I said looking around but not her eyes because she's so scary.

"You will tell me! Or I will go to your friends and ask them myself!" She said and she stood from her seat.

"Wait.. Wait.. Okay okay.. I will tell just please stop!" I panicked.

"Spill!" she said as she cross her arms on her chest.

"I.. I love Lalisa!" I answered while looking down my foot.

"You what?" she raised her voice as if she's surprised about my answer.

"You mean Lalisa my classmate Lalisa?" she confirmed and I hummed in response.

"Well? What are you waiting for? Let's go and get your girl!" she said and she pulled me out of the mansion.

Uh oh!!!

This is not going well.



Author's Note

Now tell me, Who's the best sister?



The Worst Sister

Jungkook's POV

"Stop Jisoo please!" I can hear Taehyung's voice outside my room so I quickly stood to see what's the commotion.

"What's happening here?" I asked when I saw Jisoo and Taehyung on the living room.

Taehyung's hands are pulling Jisoo's arms and Jisoo is looking around our dorm.

"Where's Jimin?" she asked me.

"I told you Jimin is not here Jisoo so please stop and go home." Taehyung plead.

"No, I need to talk to him!" she said.

What the hell is Jisoo's problem?

Girls are really weird that's why I don't fall in love with them because they are hormonal and moody and annoying.

But of course Limario is different because she's the best. I smiled at the picture of her face in my mind with hearts flying all over.

"What's happening here?" Jimin came out of the room shirtless as if he just woke up from Jisoo's big mouth.

"Jimin, go back to the room!" Taehyung said with a death glare but Jimin just rubbed his eyes innocently.

Poor Jimin. Whatever he did, I'm sure he's gonna get a lot of scolding from Jisoo.

And Jisoo is as scary as fuck when she's serious.

"Oh! Good thing you're here Jimin!" she said and she grabbed her arm from Taehyung's grip.

"What is it Jisoo?" Jimin asked.

"I just came here to tell you to back off on Lalisa!" she said and my eyes widened.

Back off from who?

I looked at Jimin and he was shocked too.

"Excuse me? Back off from who?" Jimin snorted.

"My brother here is bothered because he loves Lalisa and I can tell he's just giving way for you. But as his sister, I will tell you right here and right now that Lalisa will be Taehyung's girl and you should stop." Jisoo said.

What the fuck is she talking about?

"Jisoo, I told you it's not your business to meddle with our

problem. I can handle it my own." Taehyung said as he seemed to be embarrassed with Jisoo's outburst.

"No, I know how kind you are and I know for sure you're just sacrificing for others. But I won't let you be hurt again!" Jisoo said.

"And who are you to dictate what I should do and not do?" Jimin asked and he's clearly annoyed right now.

"I'm his sister and I will help him on any way I can. This is the first time he fell in love after the princess and you should have known that he never falls in love that quickly. You can go find another woman to love." she said.

As of it's as easy as 1,2,3?

Jimin just rolled his eyes and I understand his frustration. Giving up Limario is not that easy just because of Taehyung.

"I know you've been seeking your sister's help Jimin. And you should fight fairly. I will help my brother just like how Chae helps you. He will have Lalisa so if I were you just back off." she said and she walked away leaving us three confused.

Teahyung faced Jimin and the next thing he did was he gave Jimin a 90 degrees bow.

What the heck is he doing?

"I'm so sorry for my sister's rude behavior. I promise it won't happen again!" Taehyung apologized while bowing.

Jimin quickly pulled him to stand straight.

"Hey! Don't apologize. I understand her. I have a sister too and she's also like that. Except my sister is a lot sweeter while yours is scarier." he said and he smiled.

"You're not mad? I promised I didn't told her to come to you and say all of those things. I want to solve my problems alone and I don't want their help" Taehyung explained.

"I know you won't.. But we're really lucky to have the sweetest sister right?" Jimin said while laughing.

"Right!" Taehyung laughed too and I'm sorry I can't relate because my sister is so *useless*.

Both of them started walking inside their room laughing and talking about how great their sisters are while I was left alone in the living room.

I need a supportive sister like Jisoo too and a cupid sister like Chae but I got a judgemental sister like Jennie instead.

Poor me.

I went inside my room sulking. But then my phone started ringing.

Jennie is calling...

My useless sister is calling?

What does she want now?

I have no time to listen to her preaching. So I won't answer her.
My phone kept ringing so I decided to just answer it to stop the noise.

"What!" I asked her.

"Jk? Is this you?" she asked and I rolled my eyes.

"Of course! Who else would it be?" I snapped at her.

"Stop being a pussy and get us here at Agust Club" she said and I can hear the loud music behind.

"Why should I help you when you won't even help me with Lalisa. I'm your brother and you should love me and support me too but you--"

"Stop talking and come here immediately. *Lalisa* is drunk and I can't carry her. Come quick or I'll just call Jimin instead."

Lalisa is what???

My heart started hammering just hearing her name.

"Don't you dare call Jimin, I'll be there.. just wait!" I said and I hurriedly ended my call.

Just when I thought she's the worst sister, she proved me wrong.

A smile crept on my lips.

Oh how I love a drunk Lalisa!



Author's Note.

What do you think will happen to Jungkook and drunk Lalisa?



The Worried Brother

Jennie's POV

"Why are you even drinking?" I asked Lalisa because she seemed to have trouble going on. She's even wearing a man's clothes.

"I will tell you a secret." she said as she hiccup.

Lalisa just took few shots but she's already drunk. I can tell she has a low tolerance in alcohol and I'm sure she will pass out quickly.

"What is it?" I worriedly asked.

"Your brother.." she said and she closed her eyes.

"Hey don't sleep yet. Tell me what did my brother do this time? Did he hurt you?" I asked worriedly.

My blood is clearly boiling now just imagining Jungkook did her wrong.

"No... No... He is good.. He is kind.." she said as her head rests on my shoulder from too much drinking.

Oh my God she's drunk and she needs to stop.

"Lalisa you're drunk. Let's stop now. Where do you live so that I can take you home?" I said while shaking her shoulder.

"I love him!" she said and she started crying.

"What the fuck? What are you talking about? Why are you crying?" I asked.

"I think... I love your brother.." she said while looking straight to my eyes.

Oh my God!

"How did you know my brother?" I asked. I'm so confused. How did he know my brother and how did my brother know her?

I remember Jk called me and told me he's interested with Lalisa but I didn't know it's this serious.

Did he make her fall in love and he messed with her too?

But Lalisa said he's good and kind?

I'm really worried about her right now.

"Hey, come on.. I'll take you home." I said and I tried to pull her to stand but we just stumbled back to the couch. I can't carry her.

What will I do now?

I need help.

She's now sleeping and she's heavy for me to carry on my car.

Right I'll just call Jimin to pick her up. Maybe he knows where

she lives. Lalisa is not on the state to talk or walk or answer.

When I was about to call Jimin, I heard Lalisa uttered a name.

Jungkook..

She mumbled while her eyes are closed. It was low but I clearly heard it.

She seemed to be dreaming about him.

Uhh! I don't trust my brother but Lalisa seemed to trust him.

Whatever!

I'll just call my bitch brother!

I dialled his number but he's not answering.

I'm gonna kill him if I saw his face!

"What!" I hear someone say

"Jk? Is this you?" I asked to confirm.

"Of course! Who else would it be?" he snapped.

"Stop being a pussy and get us here at Agust Club" I said.

"Why should I help you when you don't even help me. I'm your brother and you should love me and support me too but you--"

"Stop talking and come here immediately. Lalisa is drunk and I can't carry her. Come quick or I'll just call Jimin instead." I cut his drama off.

"Don't you dare call Jimin, I'll be there just wait!" I can hear the worry his voice.

I look over Lalisa's sleeping state and smiled.

What did you do to my brother?

Soon, Jungkook came running to us wearing his pajamas.

My eyes widened when I saw he was just wearing a slippers.

"The fuck are you wearing that in this club?" I said when he was beside me.

"What happened to her? Why did you let her drink too much!" he yelled at me.

"Don't be too dramatic. You're even lucky I called you instead of Jimin!" I said but he just rolled his eyes.

"Just don't let her drink again!" he said then he walked to her and started carressing her hair.

Okay. My little brother is acting weird.

I looked around and people are watching us. Who wouldn't be when the president's children is inside a club and one of them is wearing his pajamas?

"Hey, we need to leave. Do you have any idea where her house is?" I asked my brother.

"Yes I know. Let's go." he said and he gently carried Lalisa effortlessly.

When we got on his car, he gently lay her on the back seat and he faced me.

"I'll take her home." he said with a serious facial expression.

"And why should I trust you?" I challenged. Though I can feel the worry in him, I'm still scared that he'll do something to Lalisa.

"Jennie please trust me. I love her so much okay?"

My brother loves her too?

What's happening? I thought Lalisa and Jimin are doing great together?

Chae's going to kill me for sure.

"Do you even know how it feels to love?" I asked raising my brow at him

"Of course. She is the only one who made me feel like this. I love her so much so please trust me. I will never hurt her." He said. His eyes were pleading.

My brother is really serious this time

"But what about Tzuyu?" I asked him. I want to know his plans so I know where I stand.

"I will explain everything to her. I promise. Just please support me on this. I need your help too sis" he said.

"I swear Jungkook if you ever do something to her--"

"I won't do something bad to her. You think I'm that pervert?" he said and I nodded.

"Okay. Drive safely. I'll drive my car" I said.

"You too" he said then he ride his car.

I stayed on my track and just watched his leaving car.

My brother is really in love.

I know Chae will hate me but if Lalisa is the only way to make my playboy brother change, then I will do anything to make them together.



Author's Note

Sorry for the very late update. I fell asleep early last night that's why.

The Official Couple

Lalisa's POV

Where am I?

I woke up to see I'm inside an unfamiliar room. It does seem like I'm inside a hotel.

I look to my right and saw a naked man beside me. He was facing the other side and I can't see his face. All I see is his muscular back and the white sheet covering the lower part of his body.

Who is he?

Where am I?

I rubbed my eyes open and I realized that there is a man. A naked man beside me.

"Oh my God!!!"

"Hmmm...be quiet it's too early" I hear him mutter.

"I looked down and I quickly peek inside the blanket covering my body.

That's when I realized I was naked too.

Oh Lord!

What did we do?

What did he do to me?

His head faced me and I finally saw who he was.

"Good morning baby!" he smiled.

Jungkook?

"Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!!!"

I screamed at the top of my lungs but he was able to cover my mouth.

"Shhhhh... Stop screaming baby. Calm down!" he said and I panicked.

What happened. Why is he calling me baby?

I was with Jennie last night but why is he suddenly here?

"Why are we here?" I managed to say when he finally let go of covering my mouth.

"Why are you calling me baby?"

"What happened?"

"Why are you naked?"

"Why am I naked?"

"Did we?"

I started asking him endless questions but he was just grinning

the whole time.

"Shhh.. Listen and I will explain everything. Nothing bad happened we just fucked that's all" he said and my eyes widened.

"We fu..." I started shaking.

"Why?" I asked him. Tears are threatening to fall from my eyes but he was just smiling like it's normal.

"Because that's what people who are in love do. And you're my girlfriend so it's normal to fuck right?" he said with a calm voice.

"I'm your girlfriend?" I asked.

"It's normal to fuck with a girlfriend?" I asked him again and he nodded.

"But it is for married couple only." I said and I started crying.

"Hey don't cry." he said wiping my tears.

"But that was my first and I didn't even remember" I said while sobbing.

All this time I thought I'm gonna give it to Taehyung. But Jungkook took it from me.

I love Jungkook but he should have asked me first before doing it. I was drunk and he clearly took advantage of me.

Then he started laughing so hard.

"Why are you laughing when I'm crying?" I asked him. He's really a jerk.

"Because you're so cute when you're fooled." he said and I looked at him.

"What do you mean?" I asked him.

"Nothing happened." he said while still laughing.

"Nothing happened???" I asked blinking my eyes repeatedly.

"Nothing." he said but I tilted my head.

"Then why are we naked?"

"Because we almost did it but you were too drunk so we didn't." he said while chuckling. He seemed to be amused but I'm so worried.

"Did you see my?" I asked when I realized.

"Yes I saw everything." he said with a low and hoarse voice.

I felt my cheeks heat up at the thought that a man saw me naked already.

He is the first to see me naked and it embarasses me so much.

"You really didn't do anything to me?" I asked again.

"I didn't. Wait.. I will prove it to you" he said then one of his hand travelled between my thigh and I gasped when he pushed one finger inside me.

"Ouch!" I smacked his arm and he quickly pulled his hand away from me under my blanket.

"Does it hurt?" he asked smiling.

"It hurt!" I said.

"That was just the tip of my finger and not to brag..." he paused as he looked into my eyes with his burning one.

"Not to brag but my cock is 10 times thicker than my finger and I'm sure you won't be able to walk if I did it to you" he said with a low and warning voice.

I gulped at what he said.

Oh my God! Just how big he is?

Is it the reason why he is always swelling in the morning?

"Do you want to see it yourself?" he said as he tried to remove his blanket from his body.

"No please no!!!" I said and I covered my eyes.

Then he started laughing again.

He really enjoys playing with me so much.

"So now, that we didn't do it. You were also lying when you said that we are.. You mean.. I'm your.." I stuttered. I don't know what I did for him to say that I'm his girlfriend already

"Girlfriend? Yes that's true. You are my girlfriend now and there's no turning back. You said you love me last night so that makes you my girlfriend." he said proudly.

"I said I love you?" I asked. I don't remember.

"Yes you did so that makes us official." he grinned showing his cute bunny-like smile.

"Does it make me your girlfriend immediately if I said I love you? I thought a guy will court a girl first before being official?" I asked. I'm new to this and I don't know the process.

"Fuck courting! Those are for lame people. You are mine and there's no turning back." he said and I just got quiet.

As much as I love this guy. He's really a *jerk*.

"Can I take back what I said?" I asked.

"No, you can't. You are my girlfriend and you will kiss me right now" he said.

"Why would I kiss you?" I asked.

"Because that's what girlfriends do everyday. We should kiss and fuck everyday because that's what normal couples do." he said.

"That's not normal! That's gross!" I said.

"Believe me It's normal. From where ancient Kingdom are you that you don't believe me?" he said and I rolled my eyes.

"Then do you always do it with Tzuyu?" I asked and I cannot hide the jealousy in my voice.

"Yes.. I mean no.. Let's not talk about her." he said.

"But she's your girlfriend too. That means you're two-timing and that is very bad Jk!" I scold him.

"No, I will break up with her promise." he said but I frowned.

"I don't want you to break up with her just because of me!" I said.

"I don't love her. I love you." he said but I don't know.

This is very wrong. I am engaged and she has a girlfriend.

"Hey, we can make this work trust me." he said as he held my chin to face him.

He slowly leaned his face closing the gap between us.

I can feel my heart thumping so fast as I feel his warm breath on my face.

But before his lips land on mine, my phone started ringing.

"Who the fuck is calling again!" he said in annoyance.

I quickly took my phone from the bedside table and saw Chae is calling.

I wrapped the blanket around my naked body as I answer her call.

"Chae!" I answered nervously. She invited me today in their home and I nearly forgot.

"Good morning Lalisa! You're coming right? Jimin is here waiting for you." She said and I look over Jungkook who is shooting me a death glare.

"Uhm.. Yeah I will.. I'll be there in an hour." I said. And I ended the call.

"Was that Chae?" he asked and I simply nodded.

"I need to go. She invited me." I said and stood to pick my clothes on the floor.

"Is Jimin there too?" he asked and I simply hummed in response.

He was just watching me while I tightly held the blanket on my chest to cover my body.

Gladly another sheet is covering his waist down so I don't have to see his full naked body.

His chest and abs alone is distracting.

"Are you not turning around? I need to change?" I said.

"No need to be shy. I've seen everything already" he said while smirking.

"Just please look the other way." I said and he pouted.

"Fine. But I swear don't you ever flirt with Jimin or I'm gonna kill that smidget!" he said as he look around.

I just sighed.

How did I became the girlfriend of this possessive guy?



Author's Note

You were anticipating a smut I know but you need to read Jungkook's POV on the next chapter first to know what really happened between them.



The First Contact

Jungkook's POV

I look over the car's rearview mirror as I watch Lalisa's sleeping form. She's wearing his men's clothes but she's not wearing her wig.

I sighed.

I'm so worried about her.

Good thing Jennie called me instead of calling Jimin. I want to take care of her myself.

Jennie is doubtful but I'm still glad she trusted me enough to take Lisa.

I drive for a while deciding where to take her.

I don't want to take her to the dorm because Taehyung and Jimin are there.

Should I just take her to a hotel to have her sleep there?

Yes. I will.

After an hour, I was already carrying her inside a hotel room.

I lay her body on the bed and I sat beside her.

"Hey, wake up." I tried to shake her shoulder but she was just sleeping.

I studied her beautiful face and admired her features.

She's a goddess.

And I really want her to be mine.

"I love you" I whispered.

I heard her mumble but I wasn't able to hear understand.

"What did you say?" I asked as I shake her shoulder again.

"Hmmm.. I... You" she said but it's still not clear.

"What? I can't hear you?" I asked her again.

"I love you!" she said and I covered my mouth because I was so surprised.

Did she just say she loves me?

Or she's just dreaming?

"Lalisa, Do you love me?" I asked her despite her sleeping state.

"I love you... Jungkook" she said and my lips tugged upward.

She loves me?

She really loves me!!!

I jumped up and down as if I won the lottery.

She just said she loves me!!!

I quickly sat next to her.

I need to talk to her more.

"You love me and I love you so that makes us a couple. You're my girlfriend now okay?" I said and she just hummed in response.

"Hey, you are mine now. Say yes please" I said while shaking her.

"hmmmm" she just hummed again.

"Please say yes please...." I kept on repeating.

"Yes..." she finally said and I smiled ear to ear.

I know she's drunk but I don't care. She told me she loves me so everything is good.

"I love you so much" I said. I really wanted to kiss her so I didn't wait too long.

I kissed her lips and I can taste the alcohol in her. Despite her sleeping, she surprisingly kissed me back.

I hovered on top of her and began kissing her hungrily. I want her now. I need to do it with her.

I kissed her endlessly as my tongue and hers touched. She was kissing me back and that's a sign that she wants me too.

My lips travelled to her neck. She smells so good and I can feel my body is now heating up.

My thighs are cornering her slim body as my hands rest on her sides to support my weight.

She was moaning everytime I would suck a part of her neck and chest.

"I need to fuck you." I said and her mouth just gave me a sexy moan.

My pants is tightening because of my growing cock and I can't take it any longer.

I'm horny and her drunk state is not helping.

My hands travelled to the buttons of her shirt. I quickly unbuttoned it and pushed her clothes away from her body revealing a sexy black laced bra. I pulled the straps down and unleashed her round breast with pink nipples.

The view itself is mouth watering and I can't take it anymore!

So I quickly leaned to one of the mountain to kiss it. My other hand travelled to her other breast and I started massaging it.

"Hmmmmmm" she keeps on moaning and it's driving me crazy.

My hands travelled to her pants and I quickly pulled it down.

I pulled back from kissing sucking her breast to look at her down there.

She was wearing a black laced underwear and I wanted to rip it open but I decided to just pull it down.

My trembling fingers rested on her hips and I pulled her panties all the way down.

Her pussy came into view and I licked my lips at the beautiful

sight.

I look back at Lalisa and her eyes were still closed. She's half sleeping and half awake and I don't know if I'm taking advantage of her.

I promised Jennie that I will never do something to her but my cock hurts so bad and it need to be inside a warm hole.

I moved my face in between her thighs and I parted her legs with my hands to look at her core.

"You're so beautiful!" I said as I look at her.

Her pussy is cute and the lips are tightly closed. It's as if no one has entered her yet.

Fuck it! She's a virgin and it makes me want her more.

She whimpered when I pushed one finger on her hole.

She's very tight my finger can't even push through.

I'm losing my self at the thought of being squeezed by this tight little pussy. I've never fucked a virgin before and it excites me.

I quickly pulled a condom on my back pocket.

I always carry one around for safety purposes.

But I think I don't need this!

I tossed it aside.

I'm just gonna withdraw. I need to feel her walls.

"Baby, I'm gonna eat you first" I said and I dived in to savor her sweet cunt.

I started sucking her clit and she moaned in response.

She started to wet and I think she's ready for it.

I need to enter her now!

I took off my clothes and pulled my pants and boxers down leaving me completely naked on top of her.

I held my hard cock which hurts so much. I badly need to make a move now.

"Lalisa. I will enter you. This won't hurt that much." I said as I guide the head of my cock in her opening.

But when I was about to push it, I heard her light snores.

She's sleeping?

I shook her shoulders but she didn't respond.

Fuck! She's really sleeping and I'm so hard.

I look down my poor cock and her small pussy.

Is it okay if I fuck her when she's sleeping?

Isn't that called *raping*?

I frustratedly sigh.

Why did you sleep on me? I looked at her innocent sleeping face and I got guilty.

It would be wrong to take advantage of her. So I won't.

Fine! I'll just jerk this off!

I sat in between her parted legs and stated jerking off.

What if I rub it on her pussy?

Yes. I'll just settle for that.

I moved my cock to her wet pussy and I tried my damned best not to push through.

I began rubbing her pussy with my cock and it feels so good.

I closed my eyes and imagined myself being burried inside her.

I can just imagine she will bled for me. Her cute little pussy looks so small compared to my cock and I know it would tear her.

Shit! It feels so good just rubbing and imagining what more if I'm really inside her?

"Ughhhhhh! I groaned when I finally climaxed and cum.

My cum spilled on top of her pussy, her abdomen and belly button.

I looked at her georgoes body as I spill the last of my cum in her.

I just wish it was spilled inside her but this is not yet the right time.

One day, I will take her virginity and I want it raw. I don't want to use a condom on her. It would be a waste of opportunity to feel the insides of her when my cock is covered.

I took a tissue and started wiping the cum on her body.

She looks so innocent and I love it. She's my precious girlfriend now and I will have her forever. I can't wait to share the coming days with her.

After wiping her, I lay down beside her and covered her body with a blanket.

"I love you. You're mine now and no one is gonna take you away from me. Not even Taehyung or Jimin." I said as I kissed her forehead.

I embraced her naked body and I doze off beside her.



Author's Note.

Do you think he took advantage of her?

I need comments please 🐼🐼🐼

The Heart Breaker

Lalisa's POV

I nervously entered the Prime Minister's Mansion and their servants welcomed me.

"This way Ms. Brucshweiler." One of the servants guided me to their dining area where I saw a very long table where the couples are sitting.

The whole place looks elegant and classy so I nervously walk in. Good thing that I was trained to act formally in such occasions.

"There you are!" Chae warmly welcomed me and pulled me to the table where her parents are already sitting.

"Good afternoon Mr.and Mrs.Park" I greeted with a bow.

"Lalisa my dear, We're so glad you paid us a visit! Come and sit" Mrs.Park kissed both of my cheeks and made me sit beside Chae.

"Thank you so much for inviting me." I said.

"Please enjoy the food, the chef especially prepared all of this for you. I hope you'll like this." Mr. Park he pointed to all the food at the table which looks appetizing.

"This is too much. Thank you so much!" Thanking them is all that I managed to do. They are very kind and I'm so honored to meet such a lovely family.

I looked around but I noticed that he is not here.

"May I ask where is Jimin?"

"He is up in his room. He got a slight fever so he said he won't be able to see you." Her mother answered and I got worried.

We started eating and talking about lots of things but I cannot hide the worry I feel for Jimin.

Jimin has a fever and he needs to be taken care of.

"Can I go see him later?" I asked them.

"Of course. He will be very happy if you visit him. He's been talking about you nonstop everytime he visits us.

I smiled.

I don't know how to feel. My life is getting more complicated because of pretending.

I don't know how the queen and Mario will react if they'd know what's happening to me right now. I'm sure my queen grandmother will take me away from Seoul if she discovers that I am in a relationship with the president's son.

And now I'm in a relationship with Jungkook which I didn't even planned. I don't want him to break up with his girlfriend just because of me.

Tzuyu will be hurt and even though I don't like her, still she did nothing wrong to have Jk leave her.

And Taehyung. My heart hurts for him so much. I loved him and I still love him now. But it's a different love this time. It's like a love that you give to someone you really care for. I will always care for him and I will always love him but not the way that I love Jungkook. His love saved my life. And I will forever be grateful for that. I owe him my life and I will do anything to make him happy except being his lover.

Jimin is also another person who's making my life complicated. He makes me feel really special with all these things and I'm guilty that I have to end this. I need to talk to him and tell him how I really feel.

I'm gonna ruin their friendship and I don't like it.

"Is something wrong?" the prime minister asked me when he noticed me spacing out.

"Nothing! I'm sorry!" I said.

"Maybe you want to see Jimin already? You can go to his room now if you want? It's the last room on the left when you take the stairs." Chae said and I looked at her parents for approval.

They nodded so I quickly excused my self.

I followed Chae's direction and I knocked on the big door which I think is Jimin's.

"Who is it?" I heard Jimin's voice and I frowned. His voice is hoarse and I can tell he's really sick.

"It's me, Lalisa" I answered.

"Oh my God!" I heard him say and with in just a second the door was already opened for me and Jimin's gorgeous face is now smiling at me.

Despite his messy hair, he still looks great.

"Come in" he said and I entered his room. It's very wide and spacious. It's even bigger than the whole dorm itself.

"Come take a seat!" he made me sit on a yellow sofa and I followed.

He sat beside me and I felt my body stiffened at the short distance of our bodies.

"I'm glad you came. I'm sorry I can't go down." he apologized and I quickly shook my head.

"No, It's okay. I heard you have a fever?" I asked worriedly.

"Just a slight fever. It's nothing really." he said while messing his hair.

He really looks hot when he does that. If I only didn't meet Jungkook, I would totally fall for this guy. He's just too perfect and a real gentleman.

I reached for his forehead and felt his temperature through the back of my palm.

"You're burning. It's not a slight fever! Have you taken a medicine already?" I asked.

But he just smiled.

"Why are you smiling?" I asked him.

"Because It makes me happy when you care for me like this." he said and I looked away.

Don't blush! You already have a boyfriend!

"I'm sorry Jimin but... I... I...already..." I stuttered. I don't know how to tell him to stop because of Jungkook.

"You already love someone else?" he finished my sentence and my eyes widened.

"How did you know?" I asked him. Did Jungkook told him about us?

"I can feel it." he said with a bitter smile.

"I'm so sorry. I didn't mean to hurt you." I said while looking down.

"Is it Jungkook?" he asked and I quickly looked at him.

"How did you know?" I asked.

"Well.. I was just guessing. It could either be Taehyung or Jungkook but Jungkook is closer to you because you share the same room." he explained and I got confused.

"How did you know that we share the same room? Wait... Do you know....?"

"Yes, I already know that You and Limario are the same person." he smiled and I felt awkward.

So he knows already. Jungkook knows too. Does Taehyung knows my secret too?

Oh my God! What if he knows already that I'm Pranpriya?

"Jimin, how about Chae? Have you told her about me?" I asked

"No, she doesn't know yet. It's not my secret to tell so you should tell her yourself if you want." he said.

"Oh" I simply answered.

"Can I ask you why are you pretending to be a boy?" he asked and I can clearly see the curiosity in his eyes.

"I'm sorry but I can't tell you. But I promise I will tell you the real reason when the right time comes." I said and he nodded.

"But seriously. Jk is really lucky." he said and he turned his body to face me completely.

"I don't think so." I shyly answered. If he only knew what problem

I'm gonna cause Jungkook soon if my grandmother takes me back.

"He is. And I'm telling you Lalisa, I'm gonna back off for now but.. If he ever hurts you, I'm gonna take you away." he said.

His expression was serious as he look through my eyes. I got awkward so I looked away but his hand held my chin to face him.

"Just please give me a goodbye kiss." he said and he leaned in to kiss me.

My eyes widened when he moved his lips on mine.

I was shocked and I wasn't able to move.

Good thing, he quickly pulled away before I even respond to push him.

He licked his lips which was just on mine a while ago.

I awkwardly looked down and he chuckled.

"Don't worry, I won't tell Jungkook about the kiss." he said and I nodded.

"I need to go. Uhm.. Please take care and rest well." I said and he took my hand and kissed it.

"I promise, I will take you away if Jungkook messes up." he said and he let go of my hand.

I bowed and took my leave.

When I was outside the mansion, I heaved a sigh.

Jungkook will kill me if he knows that Jimin kissed me.

Uhhh!!!

I hate my life! How did it became this complicated?



Author's Note

Hi guys! I think I will have to stop this story because I think the story is really bad.



Kidding! I'm never gonna stop writing because I hate unfinished stories. I will finish this I promise.



The Dictating Mother

Jungkook's POV

"What is it?" I answered Jennie when she called.

I was still at the hotel where Lalisa left me.

"Mom wants to see you." she said and I got confused.

Why does she suddenly ask for me?

I know it's weekend but still she doesn't ask me to come home unless if It's really important.

"Okay, I'll be there." I answered Jennie.

"Hey, how was Lalisa? Was she able to come home safely?" she asked and I gulped because instead of taking her home, I took her to a hotel instead and I know Jennie is going to kill me if I tell her the truth.

"Yes, I drove her home. She's fine." I lied for my dear life.

"You didn't touch her, did you?" she accused and I felt my palm sweating.

"No, of course I didn't!" I answered.

I just nearly *raped* her but thank goodness I was able to stop.

"You sure?" I can still hear the doubt in her voice.

"I swear!" I said as I remember Lisa's gorgeous naked body last night.

"Okay. Come home quick because mom needs to tell you something important." she said and she ended the call cutting me from asking her what it is.

Whatever it is. I don't think I will like it.

With a heavy feet I entered our mansion and immediately saw my mom sipping her tea with a class. I look beside her and saw Tzuyu enjoying her tea too.

They look like those Mother-in-law and daughter-in-law having a time of their lives from talking about husbands and kids.

Fuck.

"Oh hello dear! I'm glad your home. Tzuyu is here." my mom happily announced when she saw me coming.

I almost rolled my eyes because I can clearly see she's here.

"Why do want to see me mom?" I asked.

"Don't you want to sit down first and have a little chat with your girlfriend?" she asked and I paid her a small smile.

"Of course." I said. I sat down beside her and she reached to kiss

my lips.

"Hi baby. I missed you so much! Why are you not returning my calls?" She sadly asked and I looked at my mom who is now glaring at me.

"Tzuyu told me that you've been avoiding her recently? What's the matter? Don't you know how to treat a *princess* right?" my mom eyed me.

I know my mom and I'm really scared of her. As much as I want to break with Tzuyu already because of Lalisa, I can't.

Not yet.

I guess I need more time.

I hope Lalisa forgives me but my mother likes Tzuyu and when she likes someone it will be hard to convince her.

"I was just busy mom." I said.

"Even if you are busy. You must make time for your girlfriend. Understood Jk?" she said like she's talking to a five year old boy.

I just simply nodded.

"Why don't you take me on a date? It's weekend and we don't have classes so it's alright yeah?" Tzuyu suggested happily while clinging her arms on my neck.

Oh God no! I was planning to have my weekend cuddling with Lalisa.

"I'm sorry but I need to--" I didn't finish my sentence because my mom cleared her throat.

I look at my mom's killer glare and Tzuyu's expectant eyes.

I sighed.

I'm sorry Lalisa.

Maybe next time.

I will clean this mess.

Promise.

"Sure babe. Where do you want to go?" I asked hesitantly.

And my mom smiled.

Tzuyu was very happy and she kissed my cheeks endlessly.

"Hmmm... I would like to go and see a movie" she said and I nodded.

"You two look so perfect together." my mom clapped her hands happily.

She's been the best mom to me but she's also the most dictating mom in the world.

Tzuyu on the other hand is kind but the only problem in her is she was spoiled. And she likes having things her own way.

I hate to admit but it is my fault why I'm in this situation. I shouldn't have accepted girl's feeling if I don't love them.

Back then I thought playing was fun but now *Karma* hit me so much and I know leaving this relationship with Tzuyu will be hell

hard.

I should've ended it before even meeting Limario. Now, I'm stucked and I guess I'm gonna have to lie to the person I love.

Yes. I should probably just lie to her that Tzuyu and I broke up so that I won't hurt her.

Just a little more time won't hurt right?

After watching the movies with Tzuyu, we ended talking in my car.

"Tzuyu, I need to tell you something. I hope you don't get mad." I started and she immediately turn her gaze on me.

"If you have another girl and you will tell me to break up, No. I will never agree Jk" she said with a stern voice and I was taken aback.

"But, I love someone else. Is it fine with you that I love someone when we're together?" I asked and I saw the hurt in her eyes. But she was able to compose herself.

"Yes. I don't care. I know you're feelings for whoever you are talking to are just temporary. You will forget it soon if you get tired of her." she said and my brows furrowed.

"How can you say it's temporary?" I asked raising a brow. She speaks like she knows me too well.

"Because I know you. You clearly changes girlfriends faster than chaging your clothes. And I'm different because we will marry and I will be your wife. I don't care if you'll have mistresses as long as I am permanent." She said with finality and I was really shocked.

"You? My wife?" I snorted.

"Yes. I will be. Just watch and see." she said and I got nervous.

I stayed quiet because this is Tzuyu talking. She's a princess who came from a very powerful family and what she says are *laws*.

She can have anything she wants. That's just how she lives. She will point at things saying *I want that* and it will be laid to her very face in a split second.

How will I get away from this mess that I created?

My poor Lalisa. I'm gonna have to fool her at the moment, I guess?



Author's Note

How can Jk solve his problem?

The End of First Love

Lalisa's POV

After leaving the Park's Mansion, I hailed a cab and went home straight to the dorm.

I was at the dorm's parking lot when I realized I am on a girl's clothes and so O panicked that they might see me.

But Jimin and Jungkook knows that I'm a girl already so I don't need to worry about them.

But *Taehyung*.

What if he saw me?

I was about to turn away but something caught my attention.

There he was.

Standing in the garden looking straight through me with his boxy smile.

My first love.

He already saw me so what's the point of hiding right?

Besides I need to end this and to give ourselves the closure for me to move forward and for him to move on.

I need to give Jungkook the whole me that's why I need to end my feelings to this guy.

I slowly walk to him without leaving the eye contact.

He looks so handsome as always.

He got more good looking as the years gone by. I remember when I was still young, I was astonished by his face when he saved me from the bullies.

He was my savior and my safe escape.

He protected me and he gave me happiness.

He made me feel like I'm not just a princess but a normal girl who needs friends.

He made me feel loved and especial.

He was my first love and I'm glad he came into my life.

But I need to end his suffering.

He *loved* me for years and he even *mourned* for me.

I feel so guilty that I cannot return his feelings anymore.

Jungkook came and everything changed.

My love changed and I think I need to tell Mario that we should cancel the engagement too.

Yes. That is how I love Jungkook.

I'm ready to convince my grandmother just to be with him.

My footsteps stopped when he was already a meter away from me.

The light of the sun setting is hitting his perfect face makes him look ethereal.

Sadly, I'm gonna have to ruin his sweet smile.

"Hi." he said.

"Hi?" I greeted back.

"So?" he awkwardly smiled at me.

"So? How long did you know that I was still alive?" I asked him and he gave me the most beautiful smile.

"You are always alive in here." he said while pointing to his chest.

"I'm sorry." is all that I could say. This man loves me so much and I don't deserve him.

"Don't be. I never regretted loving you this much Pranpriya." he said with a gentle voice.

He walked near me and held my cheeks to wipe my tears which I didn't know were already flowing.

"I don't deserve you." I said looking away from his loving eyes.

"You deserve the world my princess. Now don't cry." he said and he made me look at him by holding my chin.

"You love him?" he asked and I felt my heart burst from the sadness and guilt that I'm feeling.

He doesn't deserve to hear the truth but I have no choice but to simply nod.

"I'm happy for you!" he said and his voice cracked like how I know his heart does.

"I didn't mean to hurt you. I didn't mean to fall for him. I'm so sorry!" I said and I didn't stop the sobs escaping from my mouth.

He held me close to him and made me cry on his chest. His hands caressed my back as if telling me that it's okay.

"Don't cry please. Your happiness will always be my happiness." he said and he pulled away to look at my face.

"Hey! Stop crying or your eyes will be puffy and Jungkook will scold me for making you cry." he said and he ruffled my hair.

I chuckled while wiping my tears.

"Jack, I need to give you something back." I said and I pulled my wallet to get the thing which is safely tucked inside to give him.

I pulled the necklace and his eyes widened.

"You still have it?" he smiled as he took the necklace to observe but he frowned when he saw the bullet hole perfectly aimed on the center.

"It saved my life. Your heart saved my life Jack and I'm so grateful for that." I said and he looked at me.

He quickly wrapped his arms around me and started crying on my neck. I felt his tears on my shoulder and It made me move my hands to draw circles on his back. He hugged me tight like he's afraid to lose me.

"I was so scared. I thought you really died!" he said sobbing though words.

"I'm here. I'm alive and it's all because of you. So thank you." I said.

He pulled back and held my shoulders.

"Who did this?" he asked while clenching his jaw.

"I don't know. We don't know yet that's why I need to hide. I need to pretend that I'm a boy so that they won't find me whoever it is that is planning to kill me." I said and he stood straight.

"So that was the reason why you were pretending." he said and I nodded.

"Jack, promise me one thing." I begged.

"Do not tell anyone even Jungkook that I'm a princess." I said with a low but sure voice.

"Why? He must know so that he can protect you?" He said his brows furrowed in confusion.

"No please. I'm engaged to the Prime minister's son and I must cancel the engagement first before he knew the real me. And also I don't want any of them to be dragged to my life's danger. Please Jack promise me." I plead and he slowly nodded.

"Okay. But let me protect you instead." he said.

"Thank you so much Jack!" I smiled.

Before I knew it, I was already tiptoeing to meet his face.

I don't know why it happened. I don't know why I did it but I *kissed* him.

I kissed his lips.

My first loves lips that I dreamt to kiss since I was young.

He was shocked because of it but he kneeled a little lower to meet my height.

And there it happened.

We kissed passionately. His lips made me feel secure and safe and I know this will be the first and the last that I will taste his lips.

With a heavy heart while catching our breath, we pulled away from the kiss.

"Thank you for everything and I'm sorry!" I told him.

"Don't be sorry. I want your happiness even if you're happiness does not include me anymore." he said and he embraced me.

We stayed like that for a moment. Just feeling each other's warmth.

He will always be my first love and he will always hold a special

place in my heart.

But now I love Jungkook and I will make everything to make us happen.



Author's Note

If you are worried that Jungkook saw them, no he didn't so don't worry.

By the way I cried so much when I wrote this chapter because Tae is my bias but I love liskook so much so sorry my Winter Bear



The Last Sin

Jungkook's POV

"Fuck!!!" I groaned when I came on her face.

"I didn't know you would cum this much" Tzuyu smirked as she wipes her face.

Yeah. We did a quickie because she asked me over and over and I swear to Lalisa's name this is the last time that I will touch her.

"Shut it!" I told her as I pulled my zipper back and I started driving. A while ago, I was just imagining I'm with Lisa and so I came that hard.

"Why so rude? I know you enjoyed it too?" she sweetly smiled and I saw her wiping her lips.

Fuck! What am I doing? I'm supposed to be with Lalisa. She's my girl now and here I am with this girl I don't even love just because I'm scared of my mother.

Shit! I need to see her now.

I missed her.

"I will drive you home because I need to get back to the dorm." I said as I drove my car fast.

"What? But you just fingered me? I want your real dick!" she whinned.

"I will take you home. And that is final." I said with a stern voice.

"Fine! Such a dickhead but it doesn't matter. I'm gonna end up being your wife so we still have the rest of our lives to do it." she palyfully said.

"Why do you keep on telling me that you will be my wife?" I asked in annoyance. She's really giving me creeps.

"Because I will be. Trust me." she winked and I gripped the steering wheel so hard.

I need to talk to dad.

Maybe he will listen to me unlike my mom.

Shortly, I dropped Tzuyu to their mansion and I quickly drove to our dorm.

I sniffed my self first if I smell like a girl.

I feel as if I'm a cheating husband.

Yeah. I cheated right?

I shaked my head off and entered the dorm with huge steps.

My face immediately frowned when I saw Taehyung sitting on

the living room's couch while looking intently at a necklace.

I don't know why I'm annoyed by his presence. Maybe because I know Lalisa likes him.

And I'm jealous. I want it to be the only one she likes. I want it to be the only one she desires, I want it to be the only one she loves.

"Where is she?" I asked looking around. Jimin seems to be not here and I don't like the idea that Lalisa and Taehyung were alone in this dorm while I was away.

'While you were cheating' my subconscious mocked me and I rolled my eyes on him because that will be the last. I promise.

"She's already sleeping." he said without looking at me.

"You didn't do anything stupid right? Just so you know, she's my girlfriend now!" I proudly announced.

He chuckled and stood to level my height.

Damn! I didn't know he was taller than me? Since when?

"I didn't do anything stupid Jk. I love her and she loves you. So make up for her and take a shower because you smell like a girl." he said and he took his leave to enter his room.

I smell like what?

Oh God!

I slowly walked to my room. To our room.

And I saw her there. Wrapped like a burrito she was sleeping peacefully.

A smile crept to my lips as my heart warmed at the sight.

The most beautiful girl that I love.

She's mine and I'm the luckiest man on earth.

I won her instead of Taehyung and Jimin.

I just hoped they are the only guys in her life because it was hard to get rid of them.

Taehyung was right.

I need to make things right.

I will talk to my parents and stand my ground.

I love her and I should fight for her.

I will break up with Tzuyu.

I promise.

The next day,

I woke up confused to not see Lalisa on her bed.

I quickly stood to look for her but I heard her laughter outside the room.

She's out there. So I followed her voice.

I was shocked to see her and Taehyung laughing together while

eating breakfast.

Her eyes water as she try to stop herself from laughing too hard.

It should've pissed me off that they act as if they are in another dimension without anyone around except the two of them.

But it's not the reason why I was shocked.

I was surprised because this is the first time I saw Lalisa in this dorm dressed as a girl with a light make up and she's definitely stunning.

How come she let's Taehyung see her as a woman?

Maybe he already told her that he knew she was just pretending.

"Good morning Jungkook! Come and let's eat!" Lalisa cut me off from spacing out when she saw me just standing at the door.

I quickly walked to the table and sat beside her then I move to her face to give her a kiss.

I didn't plan to make the kiss long but I want to show Taehyung that she's mine now.

She was hesitant but my lips lingered on her.

I can see Taehyung moved his face away from us and I smiled at the kiss.

"Good morning baby! Why are you dressed up?" I asked the still shocked Lalisa.

"I'm going back in my hometown. I'll be back in three days." She said and I choked.

"You what? Why so sudden? Why now? Why three days? Why would it take so long?" I panicked. I don't want her to leave me that long.

"It's just three days geez!" she chuckled. And I frowned.

It's fucking three days and I don't even know where her hometown is.

"Wait, can I come with you?" I asked.

"No, You won't." I can clearly see both her and Taehyung stiffened as if they're hiding something from me.

"Why not?" I asked.

"Because you have a class to attend to and it won't be that long. I promise I'll come back after I settle things back home." she said and I sighed.

"I don't even know where your hometown is?" I pouted and she just laughed.

She seemed to be in a good mood today. And I love seeing her this way so I just shrugged my worries away.

"Okay fine but please take care. I love you!" I said.

Lalisa nervously looked at Taehyung and he gave her an approving smile.

"I love you too." she said back.

And even though I'm confused with how they act, just her simple I love you erases my doubts and worries away.

I love her so much and while she's gone, I'm gonna have to convince dad that I love a simple girl from a simple background.

She's no princess but she is my princess.

That's why I need to fight for her.



Author's Note

I nearly forgot that I'm a teacher and classes are back. Vacations are over so yeah..m no more writing for me overnight.

Cries

But I'll be writing in the morning instead



What do you think of Jk so far?

I know you are annoyed right now but please give him a chance. 🤔

The Missing Girlfriend

Jungkook's POV

"Jennie, are mom and dad home yet?" I asked my sister on the phone.

"I'm sorry Jk. They're still in Taiwan." she said from the other line.

"Is that so. Well, may I ask if the number you gave me was right because the number is not working?" I asked her worriely.

"Yes. That was what she gave me and I'm confused too because I can't reach her. She probably changed her number." she said and I just sighed.

I ended the call and looked at myself in the mirror.

I look like shit and my eyes has dark circles.

4 days.

4 fucking days and I felt miserable.

Lalisa has not come home yet.

I patiently waited but it's driving me nuts not knowing where she is.

Did she left me already?

Did she realized that I don't deserve her?

I know I made a mistake and this may be my punishment but I swear I'm gonna die if I don't see her soon.

Fuck!!!

I don't even know her number!

Who else is a boyfriend like me who doesn't have his girl's number? Hah?

No one but me.

I don't know her number.

I don't know her address.

I don't know her parent's name if she ever has one.

I don't even know her real name because Jimin said she's Lalisa Brucshweiler and I know her as Limario Manoban but I murdered google yet I got no information from searching those names.

I'm so frustrated because even though I'm the son of the president, I felt like I don't have the power to even get the slightest information about my girl.

I tried looking for that Bam. The one she's always with but the her adviser told me that he was gone also and I know they're

together.

The school didn't gave me her information too telling me that it is confidential.

And fucking Taehyung was calm the whole time that I'm going insane while Jimin was just laughing at my poor state.

I can't sleep without looking at her beautiful face.

The professors were annoyed because Limario was not there to answer their questions correctly.

She's gone and she didn't left any shadow for me to see.

The only things she left was some of her clothes which were for men.

My plan on talking with dad was pushed a little bit because he was out of the country with my mom for a candidacy plan.

Jennie told me they will be gone for a week and so I need to wait for them to finally tell them my love for Lalisa.

But the problem is, how will I even explain her to them when her whole being is a mystery.

I'm scared to know the truth about her but I promise I will still love her even if she tells me she murdered someone that's why she's pretending to be a boy in an all-boy University.

2 days that I didn't go to school because I want it to be me who will welcome my baby first once she comes home.

Everyday, I would water the plants in the garden because I know she would cry if these plants die. She cares for these plants more than me and I feel sorry for myself.

I miss her so bad and when I see her I'm gonna kiss every part of her body even her toe.

Yes. I'm crazy in love and I don't care. All I care is her.

I want her home.

I want her in my arms.

I clench my chest. I didn't know loving could be this *painful*.

Just not seeing her in days makes me want to cry.

"Jungkook? Why are you here? Don't you have a class?" my eyes widened when I heard the voice I so longed to hear.

I look around and there I saw her at the door carrying her bags.

I didn't wait any longer and I ran to her engulfing with the tightest hug she would ever receive from me.

"Hey! Why are you crying?" She asked.

"I'm not!" I sobbed in her shoulders. She smells so good and her scent is my home.

"You are. What happened?" she worriedly asked and pulled away from me.

Damn! I didn't know I was crying until she was wiping my face with her soft soft hand like a hand of a princess.

"I missed you. You left me for so long." I sadly said.

"I'm sorry but I'm here now. I love you!" she smiled.

And just one smile my heart was a whole again.

"I love you so much! Promise me you will never leave me again please please please!" I said.

"I won't I promise!" she said and I quickly pressed my lips on hers and carried her to our room.

I'm gonna make up for the lost days that we were apart.

"Jungkook! What are you doing?" she giggled when I started kissing every part of her face.

"I love you so much woman!"



Author's Note

Okay..Time for work. I love ya'll

So it's baby time for Jk and Lalisa



The Conditions

Lalisa's POV

Too tight!

I can't breath.

I can't breath from Jungkook's embrace.

"Baby?"

"What?"

"Nothing." he grinned. And he wrapped his arms more tighter around my body.

"Jungkook you're making it hard for me to breath." I said.

He's been clingy the whole time and he won't let go of me. And that fact that his body is more than twice my body makes it hard for me to move from his grip.

Just a while ago, I came back home and he started crying, then he began kissing me and gladly I was able to stop him before we do something we shouldn't do.

Then he said he wants to cuddle so now he's been hugging me as we lay on my bed.

And even though his been like this, I can't help but smile at him.

I've never been this close to a guy and the feeling is very refreshing.

"But if I'll loosen my hug, you will leave me again!" he pouted like a little boy.

"I told you I won't leave so please let go because I really need to shower!" I said as I try to push his arms away from me.

"Fine but I will come with you to the bathroom!" he said.

"No you won't! I will take a shower. Why would you come with me?" I asked.

He's really weird.

Is this how all boyfriends act?

Will Taehyung be like this too if he was my boyfriend?

"I will come because I'm your boyfriend." he said and I just sighed.

"As far as I know, we should have a privacy between us and that includes taking a shower." I explained.

"But I won't mind if you join me." he said.

"Just what in the word Privacy can't you understand."

"There should be no privacy between us. We must be open to

each other." he said and I was like what the heck?

"I agree on that. We must be open to each other in terms of our feelings but not open like taking a shower together." I huffed in annoyance.

"It's just the same" he said and I groaned in frustration.

"Jk please let go of me. I'm really sticky and I need to shower. It embarasses me that you can smell me sweaty and that" I explained. I really need to take a shower. I think I smell really bad because I just came from hours of flight.

"Your sweat smells like perfume." he said and he sniffed my neck which tickles.

"Jungkook stop! You're tickling me." I said while giggling.

"Hmmm... I would really want to eat you right now!" he said and I frowned.

"You can't eat me. I'm a human." I explained to him.

"Oh my God! You're so innocent. Tell me, how intimate were you with your last boyfriend?" he asked and my cheeks heat up.

"What are you saying? You're my first boyfriend!" I said as I hit his arm.

"So I'm your first at everything? Like first kiss and boyfriend?" he asked while grinning.

"Yes. Why?" I asked. This guy is really weirding me out.

"Nothing. It would just be awesome because I will be the first to fuck you." he smiled.

"You wish." I said as I roll my eye.

I will *never* let him touch me that way.

"Why? I thought you love me?" he frowned.

"Of course I do. But that's not the only way to prove you love a person right?" I said and he frowned more.

"So you mean we're not going to do it? Ever?" he asked as if the idea of not having sex was absurd.

"No, we're not. We are not even married." I said and he got quiet.

"If I marry you will you do it with me then?" he asked and I was taken aback by his question.

"What do you mean! You will just marry me just because you want to have se...that!" I almost shouted.

"Why not? I'll marry you in the future anyway." he said and I can feel my blood boiling now.

He is just the most unromantic person I ever met. He should have sugar coated his words. It's as if he's telling me that he will just marry me for that thing which is wrong. I want him to marry me because he loves me and he wants to spend the rest of his life with me but not because he just wants my body.

I stayed quiet. He's a jerk and I don't want to talk to him right

now.

"Hey? Why are you quiet?" he asked as he kiss my shoulder.

I didn't answer him. I just looked at the ceiling.

"Babe, please did I say something wrong?" he asked his voice is laced with worry I can tell.

"Baby, answer me please. I'm sorry if I said something that upsets you. Please talk to me." he said.

"Everything you said was wrong!" I blurted out.

"Please tell me what it is. I can't read your mind and I don't know what I said that you didn't like?" he plead but I just rolled my eyes.

"Well, you just told me that you will just marry me because you want to have se.sex with me! And that's not how it should be Jk. You must marry person out of love not out of lust. What if you get tired of my body, then you will leave me for a new one!" I explained and I'm now running out of breath from my long explanation.

"Oh! I'm sorry. I didn't mean it like that. Of course I would like to marry you because of who your are not just because I want to fuck you. Well, I want to fuck you but... Fuck I don't know how to explain but what I'm saying is if you don't want to do it.... Then it's fine.. I will not force you to do it." he tried to explain but I can still hear the hesitance on the last part and I'm still not convinced. I know how playboy he is and he would probably get tired of me for being too conservative.

"You know what, It's fine. You don't have to do this. We don't have to do this. Just look for another girl who can satisfy your needs because I'm clearly not the one for you." I said and I was able to get away from his arms and I quickly walked away.

"Baby, wait... Please....wait" he said and he managed to hug one of my leg which surprised me.

He looked like a koala wrapped around my leg.

"What?"

"I will do anything just please don't leave. Okay fine we're not having sex. If that's what you want I will respect it just please don't leave me." he begged and I smiled.

He looks so worried and he's clearly scared to lose me.

"Okay stand up!" he stood immediately and he wrapped his arms around me again.

"You're not leaving me right?" he asked.

"I won't. But I'm warning you no more perverted acts around me or we will be over." I warned and he nodded quickly.

"I won't! I swear. But how about kiss and hugs?" he asked while pouting.

"You need to asked pernsission first and you can't kiss me freely

around Taehyung and Jimin or other people." I said and he frowned.

"Why not? They need to see that you're mine" he said.

"Because it's weird kissing in front of their faces. So please don't. We have our own room right. You can kiss me there but not outside.

"What the fuck? I want to kiss you everywhere." he said.

"Whatever. You will follow as I say or else." I said and he shook his head.

"I love you so much that I'm willing to do anything for you. Even if my cock dies unhappily." he said.

"There you go again with your words!" I said and gestured to zip his mouth.

"Okay, from now on I will be the most gentleman version of my self." he swore.

"Thank you so much!" I said.

Two hours later,

"Jungkook I told you to stop!" I can't stop myself from giggling because he managed to strip off my top from my body.

And now he's kissing my neck and chest hungrily.

Oh boy!

Once a Jungkook always a Jungkook.



Author's Note

So, which version of Jungkook do you like best?



The Princess and the Bed

Jungkook's POV

"Good morning babe!" I greeted my girl the moment she opened her eyes.

She gave me a warm smile and I replied her smile with a quick kiss on her lips.

"I love you!" I said as I draw circles on her arm.

Last night we fell asleep on her bed just talking about random things. Mostly about politics and I really enjoyed the conversation with her company. She's so smart and witty and she doesn't bore me.

I didn't know just having a girlfriend that with you could make a person happy. Now I understand why she said we don't need to have sex to prove that we love each other.

She makes me happy with just her simple ways and I think I'm gonna settle with her condition on not having sex.... Yet.

Yes, I was born with such need but if it will cause her to leave me, then *fuck* sex!

"I love you too!" she said and she smiled at me. She pressed my face with her soft hand and I love the feeling.

She's so beautiful and I want to savor the moment I have with her.

So, I hovered on top of her to kiss her neck but something else caught my attention.

"What are these?" I asked worriedly pointing to the bruises on her arms. Her skin is as white as milk that's why the purple bruises are clear.

Did someone hurt her?

"Where?" she looked at where I am staring and she shrugged. "It's nothing" she said like it's normal.

"What do you mean nothing? It's as if you wear beaten! Who did this to you?" I asked her.

"Nothing. Those are normal bruises. I usually get those when the bed I sleep is hard." she said.

Wait.. What?

Her bed isn't hard it is very soft! She's clearly making up stories to hide from me who hurt her.

"Lalisa, don't make up stories! Tell me who hurt you please?" I

plead. I'm so worried about her. I don't want to see her hurt physically.

"I'm not making up stories! This bed is hard and I find it hard to sleep here." she said.

"What are you saying Lalisa? this bed is soft. It's closely soft as my bed back at home!" I said and she rolled her eyes.

"You're not believing me. Then, watch this!" she said.

She removed her top but she covered her chest with her cloth top to avoid me from seeing her clothed breast.

"Look at my back" she said and she turn to show me her back which was smooth and then she lay on her back on the bed. She stayed like that for few minutes and then she sat back up.

"Now Look." She said and she turn her back for me to see.

What the Fuck!!!

She really got bruises on her back.

"Why?" I asked her confusedly.

"Because I told you the bed is hard." she shrugged and she wore her top again.

"Does this always happen? How come I don't see these bruises before?" I asked.

"Because I always wear long sleeve shirts right?" she said.

"Why are you so sensitive? You seemed to be like that princess on the story. I forgot the title." I laughed at the thought but she got quiet.

"Hey? Why are you quiet?" I asked.

"Nothing. I just thought I need to prepare for school now." she said and she strode to the bathroom.

She's really sensitive. But I feel bad for her because she can't sleep well.

I sighed.

I left the room and saw Jimin and Taehyung already eating.

"What's the problem?" Jimin asked.

"Uhm.. Do you know how to order the softest bed online?" I asked. And their eyes widened like they're thinking about something else.

"I don't like the look on your faces. And to answer your thoughts, No! I'm not buying the softest bed to have sex there with Lalisa!" I spat.

"Then why do you want to buy one? The dorm's bed are soft enough." Jimin said.

"Lalisa can't sleep at the bed right?" Taehyung said.

"How did you know?" My thoughts are already running elsewhere and it's not good. Imagining Lisa and Taehyung on the same bed and she told him the information she just told me a while ago. "Did

you sleep with her?" I accused clenching my fists so hard.

"What the! Of course not! I just know she's sensitive." he said and I calmed my self down.

"Okay just please help me order the softest bed for her!" I asked them both and they nodded.

Moments later, Taehyung, Jimin and I were able to pick the bed online. Taehyung chose the brand, Jimin choose the color and I choose the size.

The three of us may always be fighting for her love but the three of us will always agree on one thing. And that is to make her happy.

I want my girl to sleep comfortably and so I bought her her new bed.

I hope she won't get bruises this time.



Author's Note

I miss comments 🥺🥺🥺

The Innocent Princess

Lalisa's POV

During the four days that I was gone, I came home to Thailand with Kunpimook and met my grandmother secretly.

Good thing, nobody saw me, except her, Sir Rudolph and Mario. But the bad news is, I wasn't able to tell my grandma about my relationship with Jungkook yet.

I had to avoid telling her because my queen grandmother is really not feeling well and sir Rudolph asked me to never stress her out with any bad news or so.

He said, my grandmother's condition worsened from worrying too much about my death threat and so I chickened out on telling her another problem which is to cancel the engagement.

She's been hoping that Mario will be able to help me be safe because of their power.

The Prime Minister's Power is as stronger as the Queen's that's why if we got married, he will be able to protect me.

Sir Rudolph also said that once they caught the culprit, I may have to go back immediately to Thailand even if I don't finish the year in my class.

I will take over even if I don't reach 20 yet.

My coming home was never really successful as I planned but I was able to at least talk to Mario and tell him everything.

I asked him if we could cancel the engagement because I already love someone else.

I explained to him that I love someone and if we would marry, I cannot give him my heart.

Surprisingly, he paid attention with my explanation and he even told me that I was brave about my feelings. Such bravery is the quality the country needs as a princess. But he told me that he has no power in cancelling the engagement because my grandmother decided it herself and even though he wants to help me, he can't.

He just suggested to do what he can to convince his father to change the decision on the arranged marriage.

I asked him if he feels anything for me and he answered he admires me so much but his *love is for our country*. And that love for the country is his top priority.

He said he would rather marry me to make the country more

stable but now that he knows how I truly feel, he said he's guilty. That's what he said.

So now I came back home hoping that Mario can change everything. He promised he will help me anyway he can and I will hold onto that.

Now I came back for simply one thing. To spend more time with him. I love this unromantic guy so much and I'm willing to face my grandmother's wrath for him.

But my unromantic boyfriend managed to bought me the softest bed which I found really cute. He said he wants me to be comfortable and so I was really happy.

My bed is really better. And I can sleep well but I feel bad for him because he said he will have to sleep on his bed from now on.

Jungkook told me that he's scared to share the same bed with me because I might get bruises if he accidentally hit me when his sleeping.

I know he hates sleeping away from me but he managed to restrain himself just to make me comfortable.

I guess I need to reward him later with something?

I'm really considering lately on doing the *thing* with him. I've been too conservative and I think It won't hurt if I give it a try.

I love him right? And that's the only reason that should matter.

I'm just a little bit scared about it. I've seen him swell before and I wonder if it's his exact size?

Because if it is, I'm *not happy*.

I'm blushing too hard just thinking about it. How will I do it? I mean will I just lay on the bed and wait for him to do something or should I help him too?

I don't even know where he will put it? I know I have a hole down there but I'm not sure where it's actually located.

I've read novels before with such scenes but it's not clearly stated. There's just this word I don't know that I always read. Was it *cum*? Something like that.

When I read the word cum on the novel, the lovers would stop what they're doing and they will sleep.

I think it will make you go to sleep?

Or it's probably the ending. I don't know.

I'm not sure what it is. But the boy will cum and then something will come out. But I'm not sure how or why will it come out.

I've been studying a lot about different subjects but Sex education was never offered to me by the private teachers.

I looked at Jennie who was busily listening to our professor. And I looked at Chae and Jisoo who are also doing the same.

I move a little bit to Jennie because her seat is the closest to me.

And I leaned to her ear to ask her something.

"Jennie" I whispered.

"What is it Lalisa?" she whispered back.

"Can I ask you what does it mean to *cum*?" I asked still whispering.

She turn her attention on me with a furrowed brows. "What do you mean to come? Of course to come like you will move to one's place." she answered.

"No, what I mean is what does it mean when a boy *cum*?" I asked with a louder voice and the three of them who heard my question, turned their heads on me with a questioning look.

"What the fuck?" Jennie, Jisoo and Chae managed to say in chorus.

I worriedly looked around the class and everyone was staring. They probably heard that too?

And now I guess the word *cum* should never be uttered when you're inside a class.

"Ms.Brucshweiler, Ms.Jeon,Ms.Park, and Ms Kim, I belive you need to continue talking outside the class." the professor said and soon we were sent outside.

I'm so guilty. I shouldn't have asked that. Now the four of us will be spending the whole hour outside.

They turned their gaze on me when we were finally at the school garden.

"Now tell me Lalisa, who is this boy cumming?" Jennie raised her brow at me and I gulped.

Will it be bad if I tell them that Jungkook will *cum*?



Author's Note

Do you think she needs a proper lecture for the word from the master himself Jungkook?



The First Lesson

Jungkook's POV

I saw Lalisa coming home a little too early. Her class at Ladium should be from 4 to 5 but it's just 4:15 and she's already back. Not that I'm complaining though. I badly need her right now.

I want to kiss her, hug her and just feel her soft and warm body.

"Why are you early?" I asked her when she's inside the room. She has this guilty look on her face and I don't know why but I think there's something bad happened.

"Because I made a mistake of talking to your sister while we were inside the class that's why the professors had us talk outside." she said. Her eyes are glistening with water and I can tell she's about to cry.

"Awe baby... Don't be sad" I said and I walked to her to give her a hug. I wrapped my arms around her small body and engulfed her with a bear hug.

"But I got my friends into trouble just because of my curiosity." she said.

"Why? tell me what really happened?" I asked her as I guide us to sit on her bed. I'm suddenly curious how she got my sis and the others in trouble.

"I just asked Jennie what does cum mean, the whole class heard it. And the professor was not happy." she said.

"Sorry what? You asked my sister what cum means?" I asked.

I don't even know if the word she's referring to is *come* or *cum*. But I doubt she will mention the word *cum* to my sister.

"Yes, I asked her what does it mean when a boy cums." she said with a sad voice.

"You what? Why would you ask my sister that?" I asked her curiously.

"Is it that bad? You're shocked just like them." she looked down.

My poor baby. She looks really disappointed on her self.

"Hey don't feel bad. Boy's cum are just like girl's cum. It's just like yours everytime you cum when you touch yourself." I explained in the way that she can relate.

"Like I touch myself?" she asked with her confused expression.

"Yes. You know how it feels to orgasm right?" I smiled at her to make her feel comfortable with the topic.

"What is orgasm?" she asked and I want to laugh at her joke but I frowned the moment I realized she's serious.

"Wait. How do you pleasure yourself?" I asked her.

"By eating my favorite food and I going to the garden to look at the flowers and dancing to my favorite music." she explained happily and I scratched my head frustratedly.

"I mean how do you pleasure your self? You touch your pussy right?" I asked and she blushed so hard.

"Why would I do that!" she said while smacking my head continuously.

"Ow!!! Stop it! That hurts! Okay fine fine.. You don't do that!" I said while covering my head.

My head hurts but good thing she suddenly stopped.

"Okay I will explain what it is just please listen and be open minded okay?" I said in a gentle manner.

I don't want to do this but I guess explaining it to her will help her with our future sexual activities.

I smiled at the thought. It really excites me just thinking about doing it with Lalisa.

"Jk, why are you smiling like that?" she gave me a suspicious look. And I can tell she can read what I'm thinking.

"Nothing baby, I just thought about us going to church on sunday." I said and she smiled.

"Okay, so you will tell me now what cum is right?" she asked excitedly.

Poor girl.

"Do you have a slight idea about it?" I asked.

And she held her chin to ponder.

"Based on the romantic novels I read, it can make you sleepy." she said and I tried so hard not to laugh at her.

"Baby, *cum* is what comes out of a man's penis for a woman to swallow so that she will be healthy." I explained.

"Healthy?" she asked innocently and I smiled.

"Yes. It is. It's like a vitamins for girls like you." I said maintaining my serious expression.

"And it will make me feel sleepy?" she asked again. Her brows furrowed as if she really believes in what I'm saying.

"Uhhh.. Yes it will. If you drink cum once a day, you will be strong like wonderwoman." I said while biting my inner cheeks to stop myself from laughing.

"I will be that strong? But I don't want to drink something from your uhm.. Pe.. Penis. Thats gross." she said while scrunching her nose.

"It's okay, we can put it inside your womb and it has still the

same effect." I said.

Damn. She's really serious the way her brows furrows as if considering what I said.

"How can you put it in my womb?" she asked.

"Simple, a penis will enter a vagina and the penis will give the vagina the vitamins." I said.

"That's sex you're talking about! Are you making fun of me?" she accused me with her hands on her hips.

"No, I'm not! I'm serious." I said.

"Then can you show me what cum is?" she asked curiously.

And of course the gentleman Jungkook will always say...

"Yes babe, I'm gonna show you what *cum* is." I said as my lips tug upward.

I guess I'm gonna show her the thing I'm most good at.



Author's Note

Are you ready for the proper lesson?



The Actual Lesson

Jungkook's POV

I stood to lock the door.

This will be her first step to being a real woman.

"Sit on the bed, and watch me." I said.

She nervously looked at me and I begin to strip in front of her. I lifted my shirt up and her eyes immediately locked on my chest then down to my abs.

I unbuttoned and unzipped my pants but she shyly looked away from me.

"Baby, I told you to watch." I said making my voice low and threatening at the same time.

She slowly faced me and I can tell she's trying her best to just look me in the eye instead of watching my crotch.

I pulled down my pants and I was left with just my boxers.

"Jungkook.. " she said when I pulled down the boxers revealing my slight hard cock.

Her eyes focused on it and she gulped.

"You're b... Big!" she declare

Curiosity, wonder and fear are all mixed in her eyes and it amuses me so much.

Ya'll guys. This is my girl and she's so adorable.

"I'm not even hard yet and you're already telling me I'm big?" I smirked

"You mean it changes size?" she asked. Her eyes are round as she wonders.

"Yes. Look." I said and I held my cock. Just one stroke and just by looking at Lalisa's gorgeous face, it hardened immediately.

"How did you do that?!" she asked and I smiled.

"That's what you call arousal babe." I said.

"Make it go back to its original size." she commanded like it's possible. She's really amused with the size changing.

"This is my original size. The one you're talking to is his sleeping size." I grinned.

"Then can you make it go back? That one looks scary! I just want the other one." she said and I chuckled.

"Sorry babe, It needs to release the vitamins first. Do you want to drink your vitamins now?" I asked and she quickly shook her head.

"No. Uhm..maybe next time." she hesitantly said.

'Okay, *at least there's a next time?*' I told my cock.

I walked to her and pushed her gently to make her lay on the bed. I can see the fear and doubt in her eyes but I quickly hovered on top of her to kiss her lips.

My lips caressed her lips to make her frantic heart at ease.

"Hmnnnnnn" She moaned as I suck her tongue and twirl it against her tongue inside her mouth.

I bit her lower lip and licked it as it reddened from my biting.

She's so so hot and I wish I can just simply slid my cock inside her but that is not my plan.

I pulled away from the kiss and stood in front of her lying body.

"Now let me show you what cum is." I said and I held my member in my hand.

Her cheeks blushed when I started jerking off.

Moving my hand up and down my long and hard cock.

The way her eyes focused on my cock makes it go harder in my hand.

It is throbbing and pulsating and I can feel it's about to explode just by her watching.

"You can help me." I said. My voice is hoarse and I'm so horny.

My cock hurts so much.

"Ha..how?" she shyly asked and I gestured her to come closer.

She's too innocent for this and I don't want to take her innocence yet.

I want to savor her slowly. I want to open her mind slowly on my dirty lustful world.

She's like an angel and I'm like the devil who will cut her wings so we can meet on earth.

I want her so bad so I urge her to hold my cock for me.

"Please do it for me baby." I said and she sat back up from the bed. She slowly held my big cock on her small hands.

God! it feels so good!

"Ahhhhhhh fuck baby!!!"

Her soft hands just holding my length. Her hands barely grips it because of the size. Her eyes are still focused on it in awe and her lips are slightly parted at the sight.

"It's veiny and it's feels so hot." she said. I guided her hand to move. She started jerking me off and I groaned at the pleasure.

"Fuck!!!" I uttered when her finger touched the tip of my cock.

How I wish she would take it on her mouth but no. I don't want to ruin her first lesson yet. And today's lesson is just jerking.

Her hands first and next time I'm gonna make her cum with my mouth and my fingers. I'm gonna let her enjoy every process slowly.

"Move your hands faster!" I groaned and I bucked my hips more to meet her movements.

She started moving her hands faster jerking me up and down. My balls are urging for it to come out. So I grunted at the euphoric feeling.

"Jungkook what's happening with this?" she worriedly say when she felt my cock twitching on her hand.

I can't hold back anymore. She's making me crazy. I felt like I'm lost in her touch.

"Now look closely. This is what cum means." I breathed the words as I reached my high. My cock exploded juices of pleasure on her hand and small portions of cum was spilled on her chest which looks so hot I didn't stop myself from moaning her name.

"Lalisaaaaaa..."

My cock spilled the last bit of drop on her hand.

"You're so good baby!" I said while panting. I sat next to her and placed my arm on her shoulder.

Her expression was shocked and she drew her hand infront of her face to play with my white sticky cum.

"What's this for?" she asked intently observing my cum.

She's too innocent for this world. She doesn't even know what it needs to make babies.

I smiled at my beautiful precious girl.

"That's the main ingredient to make babies." I said and her eyes widened in fear.

"I don't want to make babies yet!" she stood. But I held her hand to make her sit on my lap and God! my cock started growing again just because the side of her thigh touched my member.

She's now sitting sideways on my lap and she looks awkward.

"We're not going to make baby yet. Let's enjoy ourselves first." I said and she looked at my eyes with her curious ones.

"But this cum is made to make babies. How can we enjoy ourselves if I will be pregnant?" she asked worryly.

"There are lots of ways to pleasure ourselves without having you pregnant. Like using a condom." I frowned at my first suggestion because this is *Lalisa* we are talking to and I'm never gonna use condom on her.

"What's that?" she asked and *fuck* I think this lesson will continue until forever because she doesn't know anything.

"It's like a rubber you put on your cock to prevent from spilling cum inside you. But don't worry, that's not an option." I said then she frowned.

"What are the other options?" she asked.

"Pills, Injectables, ligation etc. " I said and I know she will ask

again what are those because it seemed like she came from a dungeon and her previous school doesn't include sex education.

"What are those?" she asked and I sighed.

"Is sex education not part of your curriculum when you were in highschool?" I asked.

"No, I was home schooled since birth." she said and I frowned.

She was what? Why was she home schooled?

"Why? You didn't attend normal elementary and highschool?" I asked and she shook her head in reply.

"Okay. Let's forget about curriculums and let's just say where gonna use birth control pills. It's the best option for us." I said.

"You sure I won't be pregnant?" she asked. Worry is clear in her voice and she looks cute with those puppy eyes.

"You won't. I'll also try withdrawal." I said and my subconscious mocked me saying 'As if you can!'

"What's that?" she asked again and I sighed.

"Just... Just.. Trust me. You will understand everything soon. For now let's cuddle. I need your hugs." I said as I place tender kisses on her shoulder.

"Can I wash my hands first?" she said and she seemed to be grossed out at her dirty hand.

"Okay Miss OCD!" I said and she stood to go to the bathroom.

She's the cutest, most amusing and most innocent person I've met. And I'm so glad she's mine.



Author's Note

Did Jungkook made a good job in teaching her?



The Missing Clothes

Jungkook's POV

When I woke up, Lalisa was rummaging through her closet like she was having a hard time to pick what clothes to wear.

"What's the matter baby?" I asked her as I rub my eyes open.

She was wrapped in a towel and her hair is still wet from the shower.

She glanced at me quick with a worried face and she faced the closet again.

"Jk, I'm running out of clothes. I don't know what to wear anymore." she said.

I stood and walk behind her to look at her clothes and I was surprised she has few clothes to choose from.

"But, your closet was full the first time you came, how come there's almost nothing left?" I asked her.

"I have lots of men's clothes before but now that you, Jimin and Taehyung knew that I'm agirl. There's no point in dressing up as a boy in this dorm. The only place I need to dress as a boy is in our class. But today I have a class at Ladium and I need girl's clothes but I have nothing left." she explained and I finally understood her.

But wait.. I saw her closet full of girls clothes just days ago and now as if nothing's left. Is there a thief in this house?

"Where are your clothes you used the other week? Just use them again." I suggested and she scowled at me as if I suggested the weirdest advice.

"They are all gone." she simply said.

My brows furrowed.

"What do you mean they're all gone?" I asked her.

"I already throw them away." she said and my eyes widened.

What the fuck?

"You throw your clothes away? But why?" I asked.

"Uhm.. Because they're dirty?" she replied and I tilted my head.

"You are throwing away dirty clothes? Don't you wash your clothes?" I asked her.

"No. I don't know how to wash clothes." she looked down at her foot guiltily.

Okay. She's really really really weird.

"Just because you don't know how to wash clothes doesn't mean

you should throw them away. We have Laundry shops at school where you can have your clothes washed by machines." I explained.

Lalisa is something.. Somewhat weird in her own way. I don't why she's like this and I'm scared that if she'll be my wife, she'll throw my dirty clothes as well.

I really need to teach her the ways of life.

"There is a laundry shop?" She asked happily like it's an amusement park.

"Yes. There is. So please stop throwing your clothes because it would be a waste. Or you can just give me yours and I'll wash them myself." I said.

I'm so worried about her and I think she will ran out of pocket money if she continues doing this.

Especially that she just came from an average family. She must learn how to be frugal.

"No, I don't want you to wash my clothes. I will just try the laundry shop you're saying." she said and I nodded.

"Okay baby, for now, just settle on what's left and wear that for a moment. We'll just order online new clothes for you." I said and I grab my phone to open the shopping app Taehyung made me download.

"Wait Jk, do you know how to shop in that place called mall?" she asked excitedly.

"Yes.. I know. Why?" I asked her.

Everyone knows how to shop right.

"I want to shop there. I've never shopped for my self." she said and I got more curious.

"You don't know how to shop? Then who buys your clothes?" I asked her.

"The serv...I mean my friends buys me." she said.

"Why would your friend buy except from you?" I looked at her worried expression and she just looked down. She's probabaly embarrassed she doesn't know these things.

"Uhm because I'm always busy." she said as she try to look around.

"Okay, We wilk shop later. I'll come with you." I said.

She gave me her warmest smile and she started kissing me all around my face.

"Thank you so so much!" she said happily.

Oh how I love to make her happy like this.

I promise I'm gonna buy her everything she wants.

But now I really wonder. There's a great mystery about her that I think I need to find out.

The way she acts is very different from normal people. Not that

I'm saying that she's not normal.

Still her actions are weird.

She's throwing dirty clothes, she doesn't know how to wash clothes, she doesn't know how to shop, she said she was home schooled and she's very sensitive like how she easily got bruises on her skin even though her old bed was soft.

"Jk? What's wrong?" She cut me off my thoughts and I didn't know how long I've been spacing out.

"Nothing." I said and I kissed her lips.

I noticed how she holds the towel on her chest too tight. I wish it would fall from her grip.

I smiled.

She's really got an amazing body and soon I'm gonna savor every bit of her.

"We will shop after our class and of course you need to give me a reward for that." I whispered on her ear and when I looked at her face, she was already blushing.

"What reward do you want?" she asked nervously.

"This." I said as I slide my hand in between her thighs cupping her smooth pussy.

She gave a little squeak when I gently pinched it.

"Jungkook!" she took a step back and I smiled.

"You're tempting me so early in the morning with just that small piece of towel. Lucky for you, you have a class or else I would have eaten you by now." I said and she looked away shyly.

"I..I need to change." She said and she grabbed the clothes on a hanger and walked inside the bathroom to change.

I didn't stop myself from laughing at how cute she is.

Just wait later baby and you're gonna scream my name.



Author's Note

Hi Guys, please check out once again the cast of Characters.

I made a slight changes there 😊😊😊

The Condom

Jungkook's POV

"Jungkook! Is this the *Condom* you're talking about as an option right?" Lalisa proudly asked as she wave the box of condom in her hand.

I froze at my spot when she yelled from the counter looking straight at me.

I tried to ignore the stares of the people around the drug store located inside the mall.

"Gosh! Is that the son of the president? How come his girlfriend talk condoms like that?" I heard gossips behind me as I queue patiently to buy Lalisa her birth control pills.

But this girl is just too innocent and I shook my head looking at her.

She's currently playing with a baby on a stroller shaking the box of condom on the babies face. The baby was laughing as she plays with him. She's using the box of condom like it's a rattle and the innocent baby was enjoying her company.

Well they are both innocent but I'm afraid her innocence will lead her to no good.

The mother, saw what Lalisa was doing and she worriedly took the stroller away from her making Lalisa pout.

She looked at me frowning like she has no idea what she just did.

We need to leave this store as early as possible because she is really causing a scene.

"How to use the condom: 1. roll the--"

Fuck! She's reading the directions too loud for other people to hear. I panicked because she kept on reading and people inside the store are weirded out by her.

"Lalisa, just give me that." I whisper shouted at her. Avoiding anyone to hear that I'm buying that *damn condom*.

I really have no plans on buying a condom because I have tons of boxes at the dorm but she needs to stop shaking the box in front of the counter.

She walked to me and ask in a loud voice. "I thought you don't want a condom because your vitamins--" I covered her mouth immediately to stop her from talking.

"Please babe just wait for me outside" I plead then she happily

nodded.

"Catch!" she said as she playfully throw the box of condom at me.

Never in my life I felt so embarrassed just buying a condom.

Back then, I thought I look cool purchasing them but now she changed my perception at almost everything.

After I bought the condom and the pills, Lalisa and I started roaming around the mall. She was happily running around telling me how cool the place is.

She said this is her first time coming to a mall and it really surprises me. I wonder how small her country is for it to not have a mall.

I just followed her as she walk fast ahead of me. It makes me happy just to see her like this.

She's like a little kid who set foot at Disney Land for the first time.

Poor girl. I bet she came from a poor province.

I frowned when she suddenly stopped.

She was facing a glass wall of a store and I don't know what it is but it really took her attention.

She smiled widely then turn her head to me.

I walk near her and I realized what the shop is.

A pet shop.

Fuck!

Don't tell me she will ask me to buy one because never. Never in my life I will consider buying her one.

Over my dead body!

Pets are disgusting because they poop on your house and they can't clean their messes.

So even if I love this girl, I will never buy her one.

Even a goldfish.

No. Sorry but just no.

I can buy her anything but not this because Jeon Jungkook will clearly say No.

Capital N and O.

She looked at me with those puppy eyes pleading the shit out of me.

"I want one!" she announced grinning ear to ear.

"No!" I said sternly.

"Please!" she fluttered her eyelashes and she pouted.

Damn! She's too cute. And my heart is bursting at the sight of her beautiful face.

I suddenly decided I'm an animal lover.

Since when?

Just now.

"Okay baby! We will buy one." I answered.



Author's Note

What do you think of their first shopping experience?



The Pet

Jungkook's POV

"Jk, I want them all" she smiled the moment we entered the pet shop.

There are so many pets for sale including dogs, cats, fishes, rabbits, and birds.

"No, Lalisa, we are only buying one." I said giving her a glare to make it look like I'm the boss between us two.

"But they need help? They are being sold here. Their mothers are probably looking for them now!" she answered dramatically.

Wait. Does fishes have mothers? because it would be weird to look for a fish's mother.

"No, we can't just buy them all. Pets are not allowed at the dorm and we will not be able to take care of all of them." I said. I really need to stand my ground now. One pet is already a trouble, what more could it be if we buy all of these.

"But, we will just buy them all and we will look for their mothers to return them." she said.

"How can we return them to their mothers? That's very impossible Lalisa!" I said almost yelling. She's really giving me a hard time shopping.

"I can do it myself if you're too lazy!" she said rolling her eyes at me.

What the? I will be a president in the future soon and this woman right here just called me lazy?

"No, we will only buy one so you should pick just only one. Besides, even if we return them to their mothers, the store owner will catch them again and they will end up in this store again." I explained and she got quiet.

"They will?" She asked and I can tell she's at the verge of crying.

"Hey, don't cry. These pets just needs new home. Someone out there with a huge heart will buy them and they will forever have a home." I said as I hug her slim body.

"Okay... But let me buy at least three?" she said. Her tears are falling now and I hate seeing her cry like this.

As much as I hate to have three pets at the dorm, I don't want to see her sad. So I don't have a choice.

"Okay so you choose." I answered as I sigh.

She smiled and wiped her tears then she started walking around the store trying her best to choose a pet.

It's almost thirty minutes and she hasn't picked yet.

"Lalisa, please make it faster, we still need to buy your clothes." I said. And she nodded.

"Jk, I want them." she said pointing to a cage with kittens inside.

Oh shit! I hate cats. They are evil and they steal food.

"Why cats?" I asked her. Can't she at least pick dogs because I think they can be trained more than these lazy cats. Or fishes because they die easily.

"They're very lovely!" She said clapping her hands.

Lovely? Where?

She's excitedly looking at the three cats with different colors. One cat is white, then one is orange and the last is black which looks really ugly.

"I think I know what I'm gonna name them." she happily announced. Yes she's the only one happy right now.

"What is it babe" I smiled as if I'm excited to know these pests I mean pets name.

"That one would be Tata, that one is Chimmy and that one is Kookie." she said while pointing to each.

"How did you come up with those names?" I asked. She's really creative.

"I just thought about the three of you. You, Jimin and Taehyung" she said and I frowned.

Why the fuck is she thinking about Jimin and Taehyung this moment when she's with me?

"Why would you think of naming them after us?" I asked but I really wanted to say 'Why are you cheating with me with those two on your head?'. But I need to keep my cool. I don't want to ruin our first shopping experience together.

"I just thought about your personalities. The white looks kind, the orange looks sweet and the black looks naughty." she explained and I'm not feeling good about this.

"Who am I there?" I asked.

Tata is the white because he looks kind, Chimmy is the orange because he looks sweet and the black is you because he looks naughty!" she grinned.

"I'm naughty?" I asked lookin at the black cat.

"Yes you are." she said rolling her eyes then she started walking around.

I'm gonna show you what naughty means if I fuck you real hard later. You just watch!

I paid for the cats and told the pet owner will just pick them up

later because we still need to shop for clothes.

While paying, Lisa was bidding each pet goodbyes promising them that one day they will be saved from this cruel world.

I really want to laugh at her being too dramatic but I'm more annoyed that we have to bring home three fucking cats.

I promise myself we need to go back home after shopping for clothes because I'm so stressed out the whole day.



Author's Note

Nothing. I just want to thank those who frequently comments. It means a lot to me. As I said, comments inspires me to write more. 😊😊😊

The Shopping

Jungkook's POV

"Jk, where can we buy clothes?" She asked me as we walk around the mall.

"There are a lot of stores here with different brands. But if you want cheaper ones we can go to the department store." I suggested.

I want to be the one to buy her clothes but I think she will enjoy shopping more if she will pay for it by herself. I'm just worried if she brought enough money. So we need to pick a cheaper store for her.

"How about that?" she pointed to a store and I looked at it.

It is a brand of store where Jennie usually buys clothes. I got worried. Not because the clothes there are fucking expensive but because I don't think she can afford even one shirt there. But I think I'll just pay for everything she picks.

"Sure babe!" I said and I lead her to the store.

Her eyes sparkled when she saw different kinds of clothings. A smile was brought to her lips just by looking at them.

Yeah, I guess I'll just buy her some.

"What are those?" she asked pointing to the basket carried by some of the costumers.

"Those are shopping baskets. You can use them when you want to buy many clothes so you can have free hands..But we don't need those because we will only buy fe--" I was cut when she started walking fast to where the baskets were. She took one and she started hunting for clothes.

I shook my head and I just followed her.

"Jk, can you convert 5 million won to bhat?" she asked. And I calculated.

"I think it's 151,000 bhat why?" I asked her. The dress she's looking at is too expensive for her.

"I see. Cheap then." she said then she shove the dress to her basket.

My mouth gaped open. When she started shoving dresses and shirts to her basket.

"Lali--" I tried to stop her because her basket is full of clothes now and I don't think she can afford it.

But she was happily picking clothes as if she's just buying onions.

I sighed. I guess I'm gonna have to pay for all of this.

I was surprised when she suddenly stopped. She looked at me with a worried expression and I think she finally realized she has no money.

"What is it?" I asked her.

"Jk, my basket is full." she announced sadly.

"And?" I urge her to continue.

"Of course you go get me more baskets." she commanded.

"What?"

"Please get me more quick" she said and I turned to get her two.

Oh God! This is not good. I think she's an impulsive buyer.

She continued what she's doing and I just let her be. She must just be really happy shopping for the first time.

"I'm done." she said proudly and I looked at the three baskets which were already full.

"Let's pay for it then." I said and she nodded. But she suddenly stopped on her track.

"How can I pay when I have no money?" she admitted guiltily.

Uh oh! I'm right all this time. She really has no money.

"Don't worry. I'll pay for it." I said to solve her problem. Now I look like a hero in her eyes. I'm sure of it and I'm proud of myself.

Very good Jk. My subconscious is now giving me a round of applause.

"Can you afford this?" she asked doubtedly while raising one brow at me.

Me? You're questioning me if I can afford these? You sure? I'm not the son of the president for nothing.

"Of course I can. I hate to say this but I'm rich." I said but she just rolled her eyes.

Okay she's really ungrateful. After considering of buying her all of these expensive stuffs, she just rolled her eyes on me?

Now were at the counter to pay for her clothes. The lady at the cashier looked at Lalisa from head to toe as if she doubting her if she can pay for it. My poor precious girl is not even aware at the judgemental look the casheir lady is giving her.

I sighed. Who won't be?

She's currently wearing a wide men's pants paired with a white shirt she just borrowed from me which ends in her thigh. She ran out of clothes that's why she has no choice but to wear those.

Lalisa is the only customer who's wearing such clothes while other customers are wearing probably their best outfit but she still outshines them.

"You will pay for these?" the lady asked Lalisa with a mocking tone.

"I will pay for them." I said and the lady looked at me and smiled

her sweetest which I find hypocrite. She's clearly being biased on treating her costumers and I don't like it.

My baby girl doesn't deserve such treatment just because she has no money.

When I was about to pull my card out of my pocket, someone beat me to it.

"I'll pay for those." I heard a very familiar voice and saw Jimin taking his card as well as he wink at the cashier.

The cashier blushed at the smidget's flirty gesture but I just rolled my eyes.

"What are you doing here?" I asked him.

Just as I thought I will be having a peace and quiet time with Lalisa. He just came and ruin our moment.

"I was buying something and I saw you two. I can tell you're clearly hesitant on paying her clothes so I will pay for them instead." he said while smiling sweetly at Lalisa.

Lalisa on the other hand was just quiet. She was just looking at our hands which are holding both wallets.

"No, I'll pay." I said. Giving the lady my debit card.

"No, I will!" he insisted giving the cashier his visa card.

The cashier got confused which card she will choose as we started glaring at each other.

I will never let him pay for Lalisa's clothes! I'm the boyfriend here!

"What are those?" she asked pointing at the cards.

She doesn't even know what debit cards are?

What's wrong with this girl?

"This is used to pay something." I simply answered and she held her chin as if she remembers something.

"Why are you not paying in cash?" she asked.

"Because this is more convenient" Jimin answered and the cashier was having a good time listening to our conversation. Good thing we were the only people paying at the moment.

"Really? I think I have those." she said. And she pulled her pink wallet from her purse.

Jimin and I just stood there looking at her as she pulled cards from her wallet. She gave 6 different cards to the cashier and when I looked closely. They were credit cards and debit cards.

How did she have those?

"Just pick. I don't know how it works." she said to the cashier. And the lady hesitantly picked one.

She finally paid for everything which really surprised me.

"Where did you get those?" I asked her. The moment we left the shop.

Good thing Jimin left us alone.

"It was in my wallet the whole time but I don't know how to use it. All these time I was using bills. But I ran out of it and I need to ask Bam more paper bills. Good thing these are working like magic." she said.

"Who is Bam why is he giving you money?" I asked not hiding the jealousy in my voice.

"He is my trusted friend. Don't worry about him." She said.

"Why would you say I worry about him?" I asked. I'm not worried. I'm just jealous.

"Because you sound like you're worried. He is just a friend that I trust and you are my boyfriend and I love you." she said and it made me blush.

Yeah. A guy like me blushes too if it's Lalisa saying I Love you.

"I love you too." I said and I gave her a kiss on her forehead.

"Are we going home now?" she asked. I can tell she's really tired from all the shopping.

"Wait, let's go there first." I pointed excitedly at a lingerie store. She tried to disagree but I pulled her anyway.

It's my time to buy her lingerie which will bless my eyes.

And my *cock* to add.



Author's Note

May I ask which POV you'd like more if they had you know?



Lalisa's POV or Jungkook's POV?

And which Pov is your favorite so far?



The Lingerie

Lalisa's POV

I observed the lingerie with a hole on the crotch intently.

"You want me to buy those?" Jungkook asked me and I shook my head.

"No, this is a bit expensive for a damaged item" I told him.

"Damaged?" he asked with furrowed brows. He started studying the piece of clothing too.

"Yes. Look it's got a hole on the crotch. They can't sell this one" I explained.

"Babe, that hole is made for a purpose." he said.

"For what?" I asked.

"For an easier access." he said grinning.

"You're weird!" I said and I put the lingerie down.

"Let's go home. I'm tired and the cats are waiting for us at the store." I said.

I really feel so sleepy now.

"But you haven't chose any lingerie yet?" he said with a disappointed voice.

"But I don't want to wear any of these. They all look hideous." I said.

"No they're not. They are sexy and it will look good on you. C'mon just pick at least 5. Please baby." he begged.

I really don't want him to buy me any of these but Jungkook insisted and I don't want to argue with him simply because between the two of us, I'm the mature one.

He even made me feel guilty saying that I've stressed him out this day.

I don't know what I did to cause him stress tho. I have been a good girl the whole time we were shopping.

"Okay fine. But just choose anything for me. I don't like any of these so you pick yourself something for me." I said and he smiled widely.

He's really cute. I can't help but smile at him. I really love him so much even if most of the time he's being a pervert.

When he started looking for lingerie, someone called me.

"Lalisa" I heard a familiar voice and when I look behind me, I saw Jennie.

Shit!

I got nervous.

She doesn't know yet that Jungkook and I are together.

"What are you doing here?" she asked.

"Uhm.. I'm--" I looked around hoping that Jungkook will not show himself yet.

"Oh! Jennie! What are you doing here?" Jungkook asked who was already beside me.

Oh my!

"I should be the one asking you that! What are you doing here with her?" she asked as she squint her eyes on her brother.

"Chill sis. I just accompanied Lalisa here. Not a biggie." he said chuckling.

"Not a biggie your ass! You're inside a lingerie store with an innocent girl and I'm sure you're corrupting her mind by wearing these things!" she accused and I think she's right.

"No, I'm not. As a matter of fact I'm being a gentleman here for being her shopping bag carier." Jungkook defended.

Jennie rolled her eyes on her brother and she looked at me.

"Lalisa, don't you ever fall for this guy's tricks. He will just disappoint you." Jennie said and he glanced at Jungkook's crotch.

"What do you mean?" I asked. How will he disappoint me?

Jennie leaned to whisper on my ear.

"He's got a small dick. You would barely feel it." she said and my eyes widen at her words.

"Hey! I heard that! What do you mean it's small?" he yelled at his sister. He's clearly pissed.

"Because It is true. I've seen that when we were kids and it's small." she laughed.

"That was back when I was still a baby. You haven't seen his monster form now!" he said and I covered my ears in embarrassment.

They are talking about his *dick* in this store and the people are watching us.

"Whatever! I'll go ahead now." she said and she turned to leave.

But she stopped on her track and she walked back at me to whisper something again.

"By the way Lalisa, thank you so much for loving my brother. He's a jerk but he really loves you." she said and she winked at me.

I just got quiet as she started to walk away.

"Hey! What did she whispered? Don't believe anything that she said. Those were lies." he defended and I just smiled.

Yeah! Jennie is right. He maybe a jerk but he loves me.

"Nothing. Have you picked already?" I asked him.

"Yes. C'mon let's go to the fitting room." he pulled me excitedly but I pulled my arms back.

"No, I won't try it here!" I glared at him.

"You should or else we won't know if it will fit. Please please please. Just try one." He insisted.

"Okay just one." I sighed defeatably. I don't want to argue right now. I want to see the cats already.

I really want to go home. I'm so tired.

"Sir, I can help assist your girlfriend on fitting." one of the store assistant offered and I smiled.

"Thank you--" I said but was just cut by Jk.

"No thanks! I will assist her myself." Jk told the assistant with a stern tone.

The assistant bowed her head and left while Jk pushed me inside a fitting room.

"Here are the lingeries. Try one and call me if you're done so I can see." he told me but I frowned.

"Why would I let you see?" I asked him.

"Because I'm the one deciding here if we will buy it or not that's why I need to see it first." he explained but I can sense a sound of mischief in his voice.

Whatever. I badly want to leave this place so I have no more choice but to follow this naughty bunny.

When I entered the fitting room, I was surprised to see what he picked.

Oh my God!

These pieces of clothes should be illegal!

These are not even piece of clothes but strings.

I wonder what is it used for when clearly it has nothing to cover?

I don't even know how to wear these!

I sighed and just picked the most decent among his choices.

"Lalisa, are you not done yet?" Jk impatiently asked and I just rolled my eyes.

This is so embarrassing.

"I think.. I'm..i'm done." I said shyly.

"Let me see!" he excitedly pushed the door open and he was able to get inside within a second.

"Fuck Lalisa!" he said as he stare at my body. He has this weird look in his eyes as he bit his lower lip.

I can see he's breathing heavily so I tried to cover myself up with my hands but he pulled my hands away.

He's too strong for me.

"I can't wait to pop your cherry!" he said as he kiss my neck.

I try to push him away from me but he was just kissing my neck hungrily. I made a little squeak when he squeezed my ass.

"Jungkook, I have no cherry. What are you talking about!" I said as I try to push him again but really is strong. Now his running his tongue on my chest and I feel really weird between my thighs.

"Hmmmnn... So innocent baby." he said as he press his body on me.

He got me cornered on the fitting room's wall while pinning my hands on the sides.

"Jungkook stop! Someone might see us!" I said.

I'm so embarrassed right now. Because he's kissing me all over my face and my chest while I'm just wearing this piece of clothing.

He lowered his head on my breast and he was able to tug the bra to kiss one breast. His tongue playfully lick my nipple while he suck it alternately from time to time.

"Ahhh.." I can't help but close my eyes at what he's doing to me.

"Excuse me Ma'am, are you done fitting?" a saleslady asked and my eyes widen. I was able to push Jk away and he cursed.

"Fuck that lady!" he said and I just rolled my eyes.

"I'm almost done. Wait please." I shouted from inside.

I quickly push Jk out of the fitting room and I can sense he was really disappointed.

But he must understand that this is an establishment and we should never do something like that when we're in public area.

I changed to my original clothes and emerged from the fitting room.

Jk has this look on his face that scares me and I don't know why.

He walked to me and leaned for him to whisper something on my ear.

"You were lucky the saleslady came, if not, I would've bend you over." he said and I started walking faster away from him. .

I can feel his eyes on my back as I walk to the counter.

I really want to go home now. I'm scared of that guy. He sounds like he's going to eat me alive.



Author's Note

I kinda miss Lalisa's POV that's why I wrote her one but I enjoy writing Jungkook's POV more.

Don't forget to vote and comment guys! 🍷❤️

The Options

Jungkook's POV

Finally at home.

Lisa sat on her bed and she placed the kittens on her lap to pet them.

After buying 10 pieces of lingerie, Lalisa and I ate dinner at a restaurant inside the mall and we finally picked the kittens to bring home.

Now, I have no fucking clue where to put these evil cats.

"We should've bought a cage for them" I said while removing my shirt.

I sat on my bed facing her as she happily play with the kittens.

"Cats don't live inside cages!" she said.

"So where will they sleep if not inside the cage?" I asked her.

"In my bed of course!" she said and I stood immediately.

"What? No! you're not letting them on your bed!" I warned.

"But my bed is wide enough for us and you clearly have your own bed. So there's no problem here." she said.

"No! I will never let that white cat and orange cat sleep with you! I should be the only one near you! Not Jimin and Taehyung!" I said frustratedly. I hate to see the two of them sleep with her.

"What the? They are just cats? They were just named after Jimin and Taehyung? Why would you be jealous of animals?" She asked.

Yeah! Why am I getting jealous of those fucking cats?

Whatever! Even if they are cats, the fact that they were named after my two competitors is enough reason for me to not trust them.

Who knows if they started to lick my girl?

I frowned when I saw the orange cat licking her lap. And Lisa was giggling and enjoying it.

"Hey! Stop licking my girl!" I said and I took the cat away from her to put on my bed.

"What's your problem Jk? They are cats for fucks sake!" she frustratedly asked but no. I will never let them get close to Lalisa. She's mine alone and no one will touch her even mosquitos!

"Lalisa, let's just let them sleep on my bed while we share yours." I suggested.

As much as I don't want to create bruises for her, sleeping beside her is a better option than letting those cats sleep beside her.

"Okay fine. Lat's go to sleep now. I'm so tired." She said as she stood to grab her robe. She would probably take a shower first before sleeping.

"But I thought we will have sex tonight?" I asked her.

I was excited the whole day anticipating what will happen tonight but now she wants to sleep already.

"Jk, I haven't even taken the pills yet." she reminded me and I sighed.

Yeah! I forgot.

"How about you take one today and we do it tomorrow?" I suggested and she nodded.

"Okay." she simply said and she walked to the bathroom.

Lalisa seems to be not excited at our future sex plan and I wonder why. Maybe because she doesn't know how it feels yet.

Now I have the urge to make her go crazy about it. I want her to want me too. I want her to beg me to fuck her. I want her to ask me everyday for it.

I can just imagine her rubbing my cock early in the morning begging for a morning sex.

I smiled at the thought.

I can't wait already.

So I pulled the box of pills from the plastic bag and read the directions.

I read it and I was shocked to know what's written there.

What? We need to wait 7 days first before going to action?

I don't know this works like this? I haven't had an ex girlfriend use pills before. I always use a condom because I'm kinda grossed out touching them.

So I always end up getting blowjobs and I'll just finger them in return without giving them oral. I admit but I don't like giving orals. But if it's Lalisa, I would eat her anytime of the day.

I smiled just thinking about it. She taste too sweet.

Lalisa is really different. I love her and I want to pleasure her. She's naive and innocent and I love that side of her.

What am I gonna do now? I want her so bad and now that she finally agreed to do it with me, the fucking pills just ruined my hopes up.

How about *condoms*?

Nah! I can't let the opportunity of feeling being inside my virgin girlfriend go to waste by wearing those.

Injectables are not an option too because I don't want my baby hurt with a needle. She will cry and I don't want that.

'Yeah but she would probably cry more if you rip her apart' my subconscious mocked my concern.

Withdrawal? No! I'm bad at withdrawal. I will most likely explode inside her without even pulling first.

I will get her pregnant because of that and she will hate me forever. Though I want to make babies with her soon.

Ligation is the most impossible option because we will still make tons of babies in the future.

"Uhh! this is frustrating!" I guess I have no choice but to wait for seven days.

Poor Jungcock.

I stayed at her bed when suddenly her phone beeped. My curiosity is killing me especially I don't have her number yet.

Yeah! She's my girlfriend but I don't have her number. Insert sad voice.

I grabbed her phone and looked closely to see who messaged her.

The message came from *Mario*.

Who is Mario?

Is she cheating on me?

I swiped her phone open and I was surprised to know she has no password.

My eyes widened when I saw the image of the Mario guy.

Mario: We need to talk in private soon.

The message says and I can feel my blood boiling at what I read.

Who the hell is that guy? I'm gonna kill him if he ever tries to make a move on my girl!

Shortly, Lisa emerge from the bathroom wearing her robe.

"What's the matter Jk?" she worriedly asked.

"TELL ME! WHO THE FUCK IS MARIO???"



Author's Note

So, Mario Chayut in this story is basically Mario Maurer. He is a Thai-german actor who recently supported Lisa from those who bullied her with racist comments.

The first Argument

Lalisa's POV

I was shocked to see Jungkook holding my phone when I got out from the bathroom.

His brows were furrowed as he was reading something on the screen.

"What's the matter Jk?" I worriedly asked.

He turned his gaze on me with a fire on his eyes.

"TELL ME! WHO THE FUCK IS MARIO???" he asked and I gulped.

What am I gonna do?

What am I gonna say to him?

Should I tell him that he's my fiancée?

But he will kill me for sure.

Shit. Sorry for cursing grandmother but I need to lie.

I'm just scared of Jungkook right now.

"So? Who's that!" he said with a low and warning voice. He walked to me and I started walking backwards.

Suddenly I felt my back was already on the wall.

His eyes were scrutinizing my whole being and I just felt my knees weaken.

Oh God!

I'm sorry for lying.

"He is just a friend." I said while looking around except his eyes.

"You're lying!" he accused.

"I'm.. I'm not... He's just a friend just like Bam. I'm only friends with him. Jungkook!" I said. I can feel my eyes are about to water from *fear*.

He suddenly noticed my frightened expression and his face turned into a softer one.

"Fuck! I'm sorry for frightening you. I was just.. I was just worried and jealous that someone is texting you like that." he said with a guilty expression as he carressed my face with his hands.

Finally I was able to breath.

"I love you Jungkook. You should know that by now." I said and he sighed.

"I know. But I'm so jealous with all these men around you. First was Taehyung and Jimin and now this guy I don't even know is texting you while I don't even have your number!" he said

frustratedly.

"Why would you want my number?" I asked in confusion and he rolled his eyes.

"Of course I need your number because you are my girlfriend!" he said.

"But we are always together. Why would you need it?" I asked and he ruffled his hair. Which looks hot by the way.

"Because there will come a time where we will have to go home to our own houses. And it would definitely kill me if you go home again without giving me updates about how you are doing just like what you did before when you left and I don't know where to look for you." he explained slowly for me to understand.

"Okay, I get it now!" I said.

"So please give me your number and tell me every information about you. I'm clearly annoyed that the only thing I know about you is your name and your age. I don't even know your parents name, your hometown, if you have siblings. And many many more. And I don't even know why this ugly guy is asking for a private talk with you." He said with desperation.

"He's ugly?" I asked. I don't find Mario ugly at all.

"Yes he is." he said rolling his eyes again on me.

"Fine I will tell you about me tomorrow but for now I really need to sleep. I'm really tired Jk. I'm sorry." I said with a pleading voice.

"Okay but promise me you will tell me everything." he said and I nodded.

"Where is the pill so I can take it?" I asked and his lips tugged upwards

"Here." he excitedly took the box to give me.

"So, I will just take this and we can do it tomorrow?" I asked him.

I really don't feel excited about it but I will just give it a try for Jk.

I can sense he's so excited about it.

What's so good about sex anyway?

"Sad to say but we need to wait for seven fucking days first to have it's effects." he said with an annoyed face.

"You bought a condom right? How about using it?" I clearly don't understand the difference between those two.

"No fucking way I'm gonna use a condom on you!" he said and I was taken aback by his answer.

Is he disgusted on using it with me?

"Then why did you bought it if you're not gonna use it? Are you going to use it on other girls?" I asked. I'm so hurt just thinking about him doing it with another girl.

"What the fuck are you talking about? I'm not gonna use it on

other girls!" he defended.

"Yes you are!" I said and I walk away from him. I plopped down my bed and covered my self with my soft blanket. And turn my body away from him.

"Baby, talk to me please. I said I'm never gonna use them on other girls please believe me." I hear him say as he shake my shoulder.

"You bought it and you're not using it to me! Why would I believe you. You are clearly cheating!" I huffed.

"Oh God! You don't understand." he said.

But I just stayed on my bed. Not facing him.

"Then use the condom on me if you're not cheating!" I said.

"No! I won't!" he yelled and he's making my blood boil right now.

I sat back to face him. I look at his eyes and I can see he's worried but I need to stand my ground! If he's not cheating then he should use the condom with me.

"You will use that condom with me right here! Right now!" I threatened.

"God Lalisa! You don't have any idea how my much my cock fights with my mind right now! If you only knew how hard it is holding back!" he said through gritted teeth.

"Then make me understand!" I yelled back.

"If I could only! Fuck!" he said and he closed his eyes.

He breathed deeply as if trying to calm himself down.

"Listen to me. I only bought that fucking condom because you were playing with the baby a while ago using it as a rattle. And Lalisa, that is not how to play with a baby. Condoms are used by horny people not on innocent babies!" he said in a slow and clear manner for me to understand.

"So you're saying that you just bought it because you don't have a choice?" I asked.

"Exactly." he said pointing his finger at me as if I'm correct.

"Then why not use the condom then if the pills will take long to effect? What's not good about it?" I asked. I need him to enlighten me because I don't understand.

"Because I want it *raw*!" he said.

He's talking alien language again.

"What do you mean *raw*?" I asked.

"What I'm saying is I want my cock to feel your walls without something covering it." he said and I think for a moment.

"I don't have walls?"

"Ughhh! You're giving me a headache!" he tugged his hair in frustration with his fingers.

"That's because you are talking language I don't understand!" I

defended. He's making me look like I'm an idiot when I can easily beat him in every subject that we have.

"Listen. My dick wants to feel the insides of your pussy. And the condom will block the sensation if I use it." he clearly stated word for word and I finally realized what he meant.

I started smacking his arm out of embarrassment.

"You should have sugar coated it!!!" I yelled at him as my cheeks blush at his direct explanation.

"Because you don't get what I'm saying!" he said.

Then he started laughing so hard.

His laugh was contagious so I started laughing too.

What are we even fighting?

We are clearly in love and we have no problem right?

Right.



Author's Note

I'm sad. The drama is about to start.



The Planned Meeting

Jungkook's POV

The morning came and I woke up next to Lalisa. We shared the same bed but I haven't popped her cherry yet. My cock needs to chill until the seventh day.

"Good morning baby! I love you!" I whispered.

She looks so innocent while sleeping. I just love this girl so so much and I can't wait to be with her forever.

I stood from the bed and kissed her forehead. But she didn't wake up from the kiss. She must've been really tired from the shopping.

I don't know why but she gets tired easily. It's as if she's not used to working hard. She doesn't even know any chores.

Most of the time, Jimin is cooking and Taehyung is the one cleaning. I'm in charge of delivering our laundries to the shop and we alternate in washing dishes. The only thing Lalisa does is watering plants and she cleaning the bathroom but she will be comatosed after doing it.

I'm not complaining though. I don't want her getting tired from all the working inside the dorm. I want to treat her as a princess. I just want her to sit and just relax while I do the job. I just wish she will stay as a housewife for me.

But I doubt she will because she's so fucking smart. She's smarter than me and I think she will not agree to just stay at home.

I smiled just looking at her. She makes me really happy. She makes me feel complete. I can't wait to finish college with her.

And I will propose to her after college. That's my plan.

I silently walked outside our room hoping not to wake her because I want her to regain her energy back. I then saw Taehyung outside eating alone at the dining table.

"Good morning!" I greeted.

Being around Taehyung is not awkward anymore. He made me feel like his happy that Lisa and I are together. He said he wants Lalisa happy and it's the only thing that matters to him.

I like it that he's very supportive unlike Jimin. Jimin was really bitter. He will secretly laugh everytime I got problems with Lalisa. He also said he will take Lalisa in a heartbeat if I mess up.

As if!?

Lalisa is just mine and she loves me. Though I feel guilty for

Taehyung but I'm not for Jimin.

"Good morning! Where is she?" he asked smiling.

"She's still asleep. She gets really tired easily." I said.

"Jimin is still sleeping too. He was at the club last night." Taehyung said as he smile.

We were silently eating when suddenly we heard a car parking outside. The two of us looked at each other as if asking who is it.

I froze on my seat when I realize who could it be.

Tzuyu.

I stood and strode to the door to face the woman I never would want to see again.

When I opened the door, Tzuyu was already smiling ear to ear at me.

Fuck!

I nervously look back to see if Lalisa is awake.

I told her that I broke up with Tzuyu already and she musn't know this girl is still lingering around me.

"Miss me?" she said as she try to press her lips on mine but I was able to stop her right away.

"What are you doing here Tzuyu!" I asked coldly.

"You are rude for a boyfriend." she smirked.

"I told you we're over!" I whisper shouted.

I'm really afraid Lalisa will wake up.

"No, we are not. It was a one sided decision and I will never agree to break up with you. As a matter of fact I have a good news for you." she said and I started sweating.

Whatever it is. I think I'm not gonna like it.

"What good news?" I asked her.

"Not for me to tell though. You can ask your mother instead." she said and she tried to kiss me again but I gripped both her arms to stop her from closing our gap.

We are at the door and I'm sure Taehyung can hear everything. I just hope Lalisa is not here.

"Seems like you didn't miss me even if I was in Taiwan for more than a week." she said.

"You were what?" I asked.

So that is why she was missing in action.

Wait.

My parets were in Taiwan too. Does that mean?

"Were you with my parents?" I asked her and she just smiled.

"See you later Jungkook. Mom I mean your mom wants to see you for dinner." she said and she took her leave.

I just watched her car leaving the area as I clenched my fist.

Too much for being a playboy and this is my Karma.

What is she even planning to do?

Honestly, I'm scared. I don't want any problems to ruin my relationship with Lalisa. She's my life now. She's my future and I don't want to lose her.

I turn around and walked back inside. I saw Taehyung sitting at the couch looking straight at me.

Fuck. He heard that!

"You're gonna tell her?" I asked half laughing. I'm damn scared that he will tell Lalisa that Tzuyu just got here acting like she owns me.

"No Jk. I'm not that selfish even if I wanted to." he said then he stood.

"Just please..please fix this problem with Tzuyu. Lalisa deserves to be happy. And you're the only one who can make her happy. So please don't hurt her." he said with a sad expression.

"I will. I will fix this." I answered him.

I'm glad that it's Taehyung who heard everything. If it was Jimin, he would have probably ran to her to tell my secret.

I walk inside our room hoping that Lalisa is still asleep and I was able to breathe when I found her still sleeping like a burrito.

I need to go to my parents now. I need to tell them about her.

I quickly prepared to leave. Giving Lalisa a goodbye kiss, I walked out of our room and drive my car to the Blue Mansion.

Lalisa's POV

When I woke up, Jungkook is not beside me anymore. I wonder where he went? I sat back up and saw the kittens playing in his bed. He probably went home because it is weekend.

"Good morning babies!" I said.

"You must be hungry now? I will just brush my teeth and we'll ask uncle Jimin for a food okay?" I said as I pet them.

I went to the bathroom to take a shower, dress up and to brush my teeth.

I carried them to my chest as I got out.

"Wow! You got kittens?" Jimin excitedly ran to me and took the orange cat.

I saw Taehyung too and he walked excitedly to me to help me with the other. He took the black cat and we all sat at the couch to play with them.

"They are so cute right?" I said.

"Yes, they are! What are their names?" Taehyung asked.

"The one you're holding is Kookie, that one on Jimin is Chimmy and this one is Tata." I answered.

"How did you come up with those names? Jimin asked.

"Actually they were named after you. That orange one is Chimmy

from your name Jimin and that black one is Kookie from Jungkook and this one is Tata from your name Taehyung." I explained and they both smiled.

"That's cool. Wait. I have a milk and a food they can eat. I'll just prepare." Jimin said he stood to go to the kitchen.

"Thank you!" I yelled for him to hear.

When Jack and I were alone, I noticed the worry in his eyes. As if he's got something to tell me but he's just hesitant.

"What is it?" I asked him tilting my head.

"Nothing." he said and he focused on playing with Kookie and Chimmy.

"I know you Jack. I've known you for so long and I can tell if there's something bothering you." I said pushing him to tell me what's bothering him.

He nervously looked at the kitchen side probably checking if Jimin is near.

"Pranpriya, have you fixed your problem with your fiancée?" he whispered and I froze.

"I.. I haven't yet." I answered truthfully.

"Why? I thought you came home to Thailand to tell the queen about Jungkook?" he asked and I shook my head.

"She's not in a good condition now Jack. My only hope is Mario. I asked him if he cancel the engagement. And he told me will try his best to help." I said and Jack nodded.

"At least you have a chance to fix them up." he said and I smiled at him.

"Thank you so much for being there always Jack. You're the only person who knows everything about me, my secret and my relationship with Jungkook and I'm so grateful that you're not telling anyone my secret." I said.

"I will never tell anyone your secret. I don't want to risk your life Pranpriya." he said.

"Now that you mention Mario. He asked me to talk to him privately." I said.

"About what?" he asked furrowing his brow.

"I don't know. Maybe about the engagement. It's the only thing which concerns us both. I need to go and see him. He messaged me last night that he's here in Korea." I said.

"Does Jungkook know?" he asked worryly.

"No. He doesn't. I need to fix this on my own. Jungkook will freak out for sure and I'm afraid he would leave me if he knows the mess I'm bringing him." I answered.

"You're not a mess Pranpriya." he said.

"I am. He is the son of the president and just imagine the issue

their family will get if the people finally knew that the president's son is dating the missing princess." I explained and he just got quiet.

"But please be careful. I hope you can trust this Mario guy." he said and I nodded.

"I can take--"

"Here's your food little kittens!" Jimin announced cutting our talk.

We sat straight up and we started feeding the kittens.

I'm happy both of them are sweet with my pets. If it's Jungkook he would probably be jealous now.

After feeding them.

I quickly prepared myself.

I need to see him.

I need to talk to him.

He's my only hope now.

I took my phone and messaged him.

To: Mario

Please meet me.

-Pranpriya.



Author's Note

It's hard to think of titles which starts with the word THE.

By the way, how is the story going? Am I boring you?

The Meeting

Lalisa's POV

I arrived at the restaurant Mario and I were supposed to meet.

"Do you have any reservations Ma'am?" the receptionist asked.

"Yes, A Reservation for Mario Chayut please." I smiled and she looked the name up on the screen.

"This way ma'am." she lead me to a VIP room where guests and costumers can privately have a chat.

I opened the door and I saw Mario already sitting on the room's couch while drinking a glass of wine.

"Good afternoon Mario!" I bowed and he stood to kiss my hand.

"Good to see you princess. Come and sit." he gestured to the space near him and I sat quickly.

"Am I too late?" I asked and he smiled.

"No, I just got here as well." he answered.

Mario is the human definition of elegance and gentleman. His good looks adds more to his charisma that's why the people of Thailand feel in love with him the moment he was introduced as the son of the Prime Minister. If I just didn't meet Jungkook, I would say that I was glad that grandmother picked him to be my fiancée.

But my heart has a mind on it's own.

It will always beat for Jungkook.

"So, why do you want to meet me?" I asked.

"There's something I need to tell you." he said and his expression got serious.

"Is it a bad news or a good one?" I asked nervously. A lot of things are running on my mind now.

Will he cancel the engagement?

Or not?

"Both bad and good." he said then he sat straight and he looked at me..

"My father will retire as the Prime Minister" he said.

"Wait what?" I smiled immediately. That means my queen grandmother will not push the engagement anymore because there is no more use.

His father will not be the Prime Misister anymore.

"But I will take over." he continued and the smile on my lips was

replaced with a frown.

He will be the next prime minister? At a very young age?

"What? Are you serious? But why?" I asked.

What will happen now?

"I know you're confused too but my father has been planning his retirement for a long time now and now that I'm here, the house of representative has nominated me to replace him. The queen and the prime minister which is my father has recommended me that's why I won the majority" he explained.

"So what will happen now? Will our marriage pursue?" I asked in worry.

"It depends. In all honesty Princess, I really want to marry you. We can make Thailand a better country if we will. But I know you don't want that, because you have someone you love. So I'm offering you a plan." he paused then he continued.

"We will tell your grandmother about your relationship with that person and I will help you convince her to cancel the engagement. If she agrees, Then your problem will be over." he said and I got anxious. The plan seems to be too simple and easy and I know it won't be as easy as that.

"But what if she disagrees?" I asked. I really want to cry now. I want Jungkook. He's the only one that I want to be with my whole life.

"Then, you will have to marry me... Temporarily." he said and I looked at him.

"Temporarily?" I asked. What does he mean?

"It means we will have to pretend that we will marry each other but we will pretend to have a divorce when the time comes." he said.

"When the time comes?" I asked him. Is he referring to...

"Yes, I'm referring to your grandmothers death. The queen is not getting any younger and I'm afraid it's the last solution we have. To let her think that we will marry but everything will be fake. " he said so casually. And my feelings got hurt.

I know. I know she will not live any longer. But it's still hard to accept.

"How will I know that I can trust you?" I asked. I don't know Mario well. He seems to be kind but I'm not sure if this is the real him. What if he's just planning to marry me because I'm a princess and he wants to take all the wealth our family has.

"Then it's up to you princess. Follow your instincts if you think I deserve your trust." he said.

"Why are you helping me?" I asked. I wonder what he will get if he ever helped me.

"Because you asked for help and if the situation were change between us, I know you would help me in a heartbeat too." he said and I simply nodded.

"Well, I guess I'll just have to pray that grandmother will agree." I sighed.

"Your grandmother is kind. I think she will understand you princess." he gave me an assuring smile.

"Okay then, I guess I'm gonna have to go back to Thailand to talk to her."

"Just be careful. The person who wants to kill you is not known yet. We should meet her secretly." he adviced with a worried voice.

"I will. Thank you!" I said.



Author's Note

Sorry for the misspelled words. I usually write every night with a dark screen that's why.

And I don't edit.

The Meeting Part 2

Jungkook's POV

"I will never marry her!" I yelled the moment I arrived at home.

My father, mother and Jennie are silently eating at the Mansion's dining room when I arrived but I have no plans on being calm because Tzuyu is giving me a heart attack with her playful words.

I think she's planning something and If it is having an arranged marriage with her, I will definitely object.

"Who's marrying who?" My mother asked me with a confused look. "And why are you yelling like that inside our house. Don't you know how to act around the president?" she asked while giving my father a worried glance.

They are looking at me as if I have grown another head.

"But I thought you arranged me for a marriage with Tzyuyu?" I asked. I'm confused too.

"What are you talking about? You're too young to be married Jungkook!" my father talked and I got chills. Yes my father seldom talks but when he does, the earth is shaking.

"I just thought.. I.. Nevermind. Why did you called me anyway?" I ask as I walk to them. I sat beside Jennie who was staring at me.

"Because we just arrived from Taiwan and we need to have a family lunch together. We're a family remember?" Mother answered and I was able to breath.

Thank God! I really thought they will tell me that I need to marry that princess.

"You were with Tzuyu when you were in Taiwan?" I asked my parents nervously.

"Yes we were. We were able to talk with her father, the King. But we are not planning on arranging a marriage with you and Tzuyu." he said and I smiled.

"Really? Thank God!" I said.

"What do you think of your life? A korean Drama?" Jennie said smirking.

"But Tzuyu was hinting something and I really thought that was the plan." I said. I can't hide the relief in my voice.

"As much as I want you to marry her in the future Jk, you are still young for that and you still need to finish college. Why would you think like that?" my mother rolled her eyes.

"Sorry I was just worried." I said.

"Well. Don't you want to marry Tzuyu in the future son?" My father asked.

"Hell No!" I was surprised that both Jennie and I answered at the same time.

She looked at me as if telling me that she got my back and I smiled at her in response.

"But why? I thought you love her? She's your girlfriend right?" my mom looked at me with a disappointed look.

"Mom, Dad, I have to tell You something." I started and they all look at me expectantly. Jennie gave me a proud look, mom gave me a nervous one and dad gave me a curious look.

"I have this girl I really really love. She's not a princess and she's just from an average family. But she's the first girl that I loved like this. She's so special to me mom, dad. And I hope you can accept her." I admitted to them. Giving them a very sincere and honest explanation.

"She's the only one I would want to marry and be forever with. No one else but her." I said and Jennie gave me a comforting smile. We both look at our parents and they have this worried look.

"Well... We can't do anything but to support you with that son. But we have a problem here." my father said and I got anxious. If they will support me? What else is the problem.

"What is it?" I asked them.

"Jungkook, your father's term is coming to an end remember and he needs to run for his last term. This is a very crucial time for us because the recent President will be running too. He will be the hardest competitor for your father. Tzuyu's parents has promised to be a sponsor during your father's candidacy and that will help us really a lot. So that means you need to be good to her for the time being." she explained and I got quiet.

What's gonna happen now?

"Do you mean Jungkook will have to sacrifice to play as a good boyfriend to that princess while we're sucking to them?" Jennie raised her brow and my mother gave her a glare.

"We are not sucking to them Jennie. All this time we thought that Jungkook we're in a good relationship with Tzuyu that's why we didn't stop the help they offered!" Mom answered her.

"But how can you let Jungkook sacrifice his happiness like this? He loves someone else and he should not be forced to act like he's inlove with that Piness!" Jennie almost stood from her seat from arguing with mom.

"Jennie! You should know that their family and country is a very influential one and if they broke up this very moment, it will create

a big issue among our countries. Your father's credibility will be on question. And his chance of winning will be at risk! Don't you understand? Your father's candidacy is as important as Jungkook's feelings. So just please understand me and your father!" My mom almost shouted proving her point.

And I just stayed silent. I don't want this. Anything that is happening but what can I do? This is my father's presidency we are talking about.

Father cleared his throat.

"Jungkook, just do it for me. This will just be in a matter of 2 months. I need you and Jennie's support on this. And after this, I promise I will meet this girl you are talking to." he said looking straight through me with sincerity.

I don't know how to answer him. I want to help him but I don't want to hurt Lalisa.

"Besides, if this girl really loves you, she will understand the situation you are in. Just a little sacrifice is all we ask and after the election, you can do whatever you want." Mother said and I nodded.

"Just explain it to her. I think Lalisa will understand." Jennie reached for my hand to squeeze.

I guess I have no choice.

Lalisa is very kind and understanding and I think she will support me on this one.



Author's Note

Which situation you're worried more?

Jungkook's problem on his father's candidacy or

Lalisa's engagement to Mario?



The Oral

Lalisa's POV

I came home after my meeting with Mario. And I notice Jungkook was not home yet. He's still probably in their mansion.

I miss him.

I miss that little pervert bunny.

He's right, we really need to exchange contact numbers so that we can update each other at times like this.

I sat on my bed and contemplated for a while, should I tell him the truth about me already?

But I think I need to talk to grandmother first. If she agrees to cancel the engagement, then I will tell Jungkook about me. But if not and she still pushes me to marry Mario, I guess I'm gonna ask him to run away with me.

But what the heck am I thinking?

Running away with him should never be an option!

He's the son of the President and he needs to stay here in this country.

But still, I love him. Is it bad to be selfish once in a while?

If it's for Jungkook, I don't mind leaving my dream to be a queen.

I just want to be with him.

I love him so much.

I stood to take a shower. I entered our bathroom and had a relaxing hot shower, then I changed to my white silk dress. I lay down the bed to wait for him.

I'm really happy waiting for the man I love to come home like this. It's like I'm his wife and he's working and I'm patiently waiting.

I smiled imagining that what if someday he became the president, and I'm just his supportive housewife. Or what if someday I became the queen and he is my husband who supports and guides me in ruling my country.

Either way. It would be perfect. If it is Jungkook I am together with.

I didn't realized I'm already falling asleep just imagining the two of us being happy together in the future.

Jungkook's POV

I came back to the dorm to see the cats sleeping on the couch of the living room. Taehyung and Jimin are not around and I guess

they are back at their own mansions.

I wonder where my baby is.

I excitedly walk inside our room to see Lalisa lying on her bed sideways.

I bit my lower lip as I stare at her body. Her back is turned on me but I can definitely see her white underwear under her silk dress.

She was sleeping peacefully but her curves makes me want to wake her up.

I walked to her and sat beside her rubbing her hips in a circular motion.

The way her soft body feels under my palm makes my cock hard in an instant.

I removed my shoes and my shirt. I also removed my pants which is now tight because of my bulge. i just settled wearing just my boxers

I really want to fuck her right now but I can't. I need to wait 6 more days to be safe.

"Jungkook? You're here?" she said when she woke up then she sat on her bed to face me.

"Yes, I had a lunch with my family that's why I was gone." I explained after giving her a quick peck on the lips.

"I see.. Have you eaten dinner already?" she asked and it made me smile. She acts like she's my wife and I'm happy just imagining the future with her.

"Yes, how about you?" I asked her.

"I ate already." she answered shortly.

"With Taehyung and Jimin?" I wanted to clear out. I'm scared if Taehyung told her that Tzuyu was here early in the morning.

"No, I took my lunch and dinner out." she said and I frowned.

"Alone?" I asked raising my brow.

"No, I met my friend Mario." she hesitantly said and I scowled more.

"Why did you meet him? I told you to stay away from any guys yet you're meeting him behind my back!" I said. I'm so jealous even though I already know that they will meet. She told me about it last night but still.

"Jungkook, I asked your permission last night remember?" she said but I just huffed in annoyance.

"Lalisa, listen. I don't want you talking to other guys especially if they are good looking!" I said in frustration.

"I thought you said he is ugly?" I asked.

"Don't change the topic. Just answer me and tell me you will never meet any guys again. Got that?" I said and she nodded.

"Okay." she answered like a good little girl.

I love her so much.

"And because of that I will punish you!" I said smirking. If I can't fuck her yet, why not enjoy orals for the mean time?

"What punishment? You can copy my assignments if that's what you want!" she said and I smiled. As much as I want to copy from her because I'm sure she'll perfect the assignments again, it's not the punishment that I want to give her.

"No, I don't want that. I want another kind of punishment." I said and I started rubbing her inner thighs with my hand.

Her skin is so smooth and the fact that she's just wearing a white silk sleepwear doesn't help my horny mind.

"What is it?" she nervously looked at my hand which is now rubbing her clothed core.

"This." I said as I watched her shocked expression. When I pointed to her cunt.

"Jungkook, we still need to wait for 6 days right?" she said as she try to move away from me but I continue moving to her.

"Don't worry baby, I'm not gonna enter you yet. I just want to eat." I said and she heaved a sigh of relief.

"Thank God! You're just hungry. Come and let's reheat Jimin's cooked food." she said and she tried to stand up.

I was annoyed because her being idiot to sex makes me forget that I'm horny.

"That's not what I mean!" I said and I pushed her to lay on the bed. Now I am placed between her thighs and she looks confused.

"This. Is what I'm going to eat." I said and I pulled her white laced panties off of her. Revealing her pink cunt which is not even wet from my dirty talks.

"Jungkook, what are you gonna do?" she nervously asked as she close her legs to cover herself from me.

"Not so fast." I said and I parted her legs wide effortlessly.

"Jungkook, stop!" she said when I was lying on my stomach to face her pussy.

"What is it?" I asked her.

"Why are you there? It's embarrassing!" she said as she try to cover her face.

"Simple. I will kiss your pussy. What else?" I said and I can tell she was shocked.

"Why would you kiss it?" she asked again.

Yeah. She's just really good in academics but she knows nothing about these things.

"Because you are my girlfriend and boyfriends kisses their girlfriend's pussy just so you know." I said.

"But that is my private part and it will taste weird if you kiss it!"

she said worriedly. She's really in panic just thinking about being kissed like this.

I didn't answer her because I know she will just ask me endless questions and so I just decided to dive in.

I ran my tongue on her dry pink slit and she gasped for air.

"Ahhhhhhhhhhhh!" she breathed.

I smirked.

"Now I'm gonna make you realize what you have been missing for nineteen years." I said, then I continued my conquest.

I started licking her pussy like a melting Ice cream and her hands moved to my hair to tug them. I looked at her face and noticed she was looking at me intently.

Slowly, her pussy is getting wetter as I continue licking her. I moved my tongue inside her and she let out a moan.

"Ahhh... Jungkook...I feel weird." she announced as she grip my hair more while she closes her eyes as if she's in great pleasure.

Finally, she's enjoying this. I moved my lips to her clit and started to suck it. I sucked her clit real hard and she moaned over and over in pleasure.

"Jungkook. That... Feels...so.. Gooooood!!!" she said and I felt proud. My innocent baby is now turning into a real woman.

I pulled away and opened her pussy lips to look at her hole.

Fuck! Her hole is just like a dot. Too small my cock wouldn't fit in for sure.

I need to make room at least even for my finger.

She squeak when I inserted my index finger in her.

"That hurts!" she said and she tried to rich for my hand to take my finger away from her.

"This won't last long." I said as I squat her hand.

"It hurts Jungkook!" she whined when I started pushing my finger in and out of her tiny hole.

I blow her clit creating pressure as I continue pushing my finger in and out of her.

Slowly, her groans was replaced with moans. Her pussy started crying out juices as I continue eating her cunt hungrily.

She's too sweet and I want her to cum in my mouth.

"Hmmmmmmmm!" She moaned continuesly and I pushed two fingers in which made her grip my hair more.

"Jungkook, I feel really weird." she said and I know she's about to cum.

I concentrated on sucking her clit while I pushed my fingers all the way in her moving my fingers ina circular motion rubbing her walls. I pressed my other hand on top of her lower abdomen and with that her legs straightened while her toes curled.

"Jungkooookkkk!!!!!" she screamed my name as she reached her orgasm.

I can feel her pussy walls twitching around my fingers and fuck how I wished my cock was inside her instead.

She was panting when I pulled my wet fingers away. And I swear my mouth is wet from her juices.

Her body was glistening with sweat and her hair is damp.

I smiled. I made her look like this with just my mouth and my fingers, how much more if I use my dick.

I move my face to hers to kiss her lips. Giving her the most passionate kiss and she returned it willingly.

We began kissing as I'm on top of her. She can taste her own pussy with my tongue and I want her to taste how sweet she is.

When I pulled back, I lay beside her and faced her. I noticed how she was smiling sweetly at me.

"So, how was it?" I smirk in triumph.

"That was...that was great." she answered happily.

"You liked it?" I asked her.

"Yeah. I didn't know that was possible. Being kissed there..." she admitted shyly.

"Clearly you have been missing out." I chuckled.

"Is sex like that too?" she asked. Her eyes shows excitement and I nodded.

"Yes. It's a lot better." I told her.

"Can we have sex now?" She asked with a hopeful voice turning her body on me.

Fucking finally!!!

My cock is applauding my mouth and tongue.



Author's Note

Sorry for the bad chapter guys.

I'm so disappointed I'm bad at smuts.

The First BJ

Lalisa's POV

"Can we have sex now?" I asked, turning my body on him.

He gave me a smile before kissing my lips. I can still taste his tongue which just came from my womanhood.

I wonder if he likes kissing me there. I just hope so because if not, it would have been awkward.

"I'm sorry baby but we can't. I might get you pregnant for sure." he replied with a sad face.

I'm disappointed too because I would really like to try it. Especially now that he made me feel like that.

"You are cool." I uttered out of admiration for him.

"Pardon?" he said.

"I said you are cool. Thank you for making me feel that way." I said while blushing.

He hugged my body while his hand rested between my thighs.

"You think I'm cool because I kissed you and you came like that?" he asked smirking.

"Ye-yeah!" I admitted.

"You just wait for my cock. It will be a better experience for you." he said.

"I can't wait."

"Me too." he smiled and gave me a kiss on my sweaty forehead.

"Jungkook?"

"hmm?"

"Will you do it again when we have sex?" I asked curiously. I want to feel it again.

"Do what? Kiss your pussy?" he asked.

"Uh-huh"

"Of course. Foreplay is part of sex." he answered.

"What is foreplay?" I asked and he chuckled pulling my body more to his side.

"Foreplay is the act before sex. Like what I did to you. I kissed you down there and you will also give me a blow job. To stimulate ourselves before doing sex." he answered like our professor explaining students who didn't get the lesson.

"What is Blowjob?" I asked and he rolled his eyes.

Jungkook's POV

"What is blow Job?" she asked which made me roll my eyes. Of course she doesn't know that.

She's too innocent and I feel guilty for corrupting her mind.

But if I don't corrupt her mind now, some other guy will be doing it to her instead.

"Blowjob is when you kiss my dick." I plainly answered. I felt my cock getting hard again just by explaining it to her.

"I will kiss your di--?" she asked. Her eyes were round and wide, surprised to hear what I just said.

"You don't want to do it?" I asked her sadly.

"I don't know." she answered looking away.

Maybe she's grossed out by it.

"It's okay of you won't do it. No need to worry baby." I said and she looked at me with a guilty expression.

"No, I want to do it. I'm just... I just don't know how." I smiled at her response.

Now it's my time to be pleased.

"Then I will teach you." I said.

"Okay." she answered.

"Sit here." I pointed to the space between my thigh.

She followed quickly.

"Pull my boxers down baby." I commanded and her hands travelled to the garter of my boxers.

With shaking hands she pulled it down making her gulp at the sight of my hard cock.

Yes, it's very hard from anticipating Lisa mouth.

"Jungkook, I'm scared." she uttered when she saw my monster form.

"Don't be. Come and kiss it" I said as I reach for her neck to pull her face closer to my cock.

"What am I going to do?" she asked nervously.

"Kiss it, lick it and suck it." I said.

"Oh.. 'kay.." she held it with both of her hands as if she's praying.

Cute.

She closed her eyes and breathed in and out then when she opened her eyes, she leaned to reach for it.

"Shit!" I cursed when I felt her lips kissed the tip of my penis.

I smiled when she started giving it gentle kisses around. Which is not how it should be. But hey, this is here first time so give her a chance.

"Baby, you can use your tongue." I suggested.

She nodded and soon started licking my cock like a lollipop.

I watch her as she grips my cock while she licks it.

Oh my God!

Her tongue feels so fucking good. I wanted to close my eyes to concentrate on the sensation but I want to watch her more. The way her eyelashes flutters and her tongue runs from bottom to top of my cock makes me lose my shit.

"Fuck it!" I groaned and grab a fistful of her hair to guide her mouth.

"Put it inside your mouth baby" I plead. My voice is getting hoarser and my cock is getting harder in every move she makes.

She slowly took my cock in her mouth and I guided her to bob my cock inside.

"Shit! shit! shit!"

I began cursing when she started sucking my dick and her cute tongue doing magics inside. Twirling it around my cock as she bob her head up and down.

"Lalissaaaaa!"

I can't take it anymore! My cock is now ready to blow.

I thrust my hip to hit her throat and her eyes watered. Reaching my high I shoot my cum inside her mouth.

"Babyyyyyyyyyy!" I screamed when I squirted in her.

I came inside her mouth!!!

I was shocked and I pulled my cock quickly when I realized what I just did.

I sat back and looked at Lisa who has now closed mouth and I can tell my cum is still inside her mouth. As if she's deciding what to do with it.

"Baby, spit it out, quick!" I said in panic.

But she just shook her head as if telling me that she would swallow it.

"No! Spit it out Lalisa!" I said.

Then she tilted her head. She looks so innocent with her mouth closed as if she's gargling my cum.

"I said. Spit it out!" I urged and she managed to ran to the bathroom to spit it.

Thank God!

I don't want to corrupt her innocence by making her swallow my cum.

When she came back, she was giving me a deep scowl.

"What?" I asked her worriedly.

"I thought you said that was vitamins? Why did you made me spit it out!" she pouted as she sat beside me.

"I just don't want you to swallow it." I answered as I hug her.

"Why?" She asked curiously.

"Nothing. It's not vitamins Lalisa. I was just joking around." I answered honestly and her eyes widened.

"Hey! I thought it was really vitamins! How can you lie like that?" she smacked my arm repeatedly. She really loves smacking me when she's mad.

"Because you're so cute when you believe everything that I say." I chuckled. I can't believe she took it seriously.

She's really adorable.

"Then were you lying too when you said sex is good?" She asked. I can see the disappointment in her eyes.

"No, I'm not lying. Sex is awesome. I promise you will like it." I answered.

"Hmmm...kay. So we are still going to wait?" she asked.

"I'm sad to say this but yes. Unless you want to be pregnant?" I asked and she quickly shook her head.

"Why? Don't you want to carry my children?" I half-meant joked.

"No, not yet. I will still be the que.." she covered her mouth.

"What did you say?" I asked.

"I.. I said I would still want to finish college." she answered and I nodded.

"Okay. Come and let's cuddle to sleep." I said and pulled her to lay on the bed with me.

I didn't mind being naked and she didn't mind not wearing her panties.

I just hope Jimin and Taehyung won't enter our room or they're gonna have an actual porn poster.



Author's Note

Have you noticed I don't usually write scenes where they eat food? That's because I'm bad at food description lol

The Distraction

Jungkook's POV

The next day, I woke up seeing Lisa writing something on the study table.

She has this small pink glittery notebook and she was seriously writing something while her legs are crossed.

Damn Sexy!

She was still wearing her sexy silk dress and it's not helping my morning wood.

Uhhh! I really wanted to fuck her already.

"What are you writing?" I asked her as I hug her from the back while kissing her neck.

She giggled when she felt my lips on her neck.

"Nothing important. Good morning by the way!" she greeted.

I checked her note and read what she's writing but she quickly closed it to hide them from me.

"What's that?" I asked her curiously.

"Nothing." She stood and hid it behind her back.

"Let me see!" I reached for it and I was able to get it from her. I read what's written.

Note:

1. Learn how to give proper blowjob.

My eyes widen at what I read. I looked at her and she's now shyly covering her face with her hands.

"So? You want to learn how to give proper blowjobs huh?" I smirked.

"Stop teasing!" she said.

"You're already good baby, no need to study more." I responded. I'm still smiling like a lunatic with what I read.

"No I'm not! You didn't say I was good last night! She pouted.

"What are you talking about! you were good." I said.

"No, I'm not! Tzuyu is probably better!" she huffed and crossed her arms.

What is she saying?

"You just have no idea how many times I dreamt for your mouth around my cock!" I answered. But she just rolled her eyes.

"You're lying!" she said and she walked away leaving me there.

What's her problem? Why is she insecure like that?

I covered my mouth when I realized she walked out of the room wearing that sexy white silk sleepwear and Jimin and Taehyung's eyes are probably feasting by now.

I hurriedly wore a shirt and shorts and ran out of the room. I proved my self correct when I saw both of them checking out *my* girl's body without blinking.

It didn't escaped my eyes how Taehyung gulped and Jimin licked his lips.

I'm so so so mad right now to be honest that I want to scoop their eyes out!

"Good morning babies!" Lalisa bended to pet her cats on the floor.

My cock moved when I saw a better view of her round ass and her white underwear.

This girl is really giving me a hard time composing my self.

She's a total distraction.

My brow furrowed when I saw Taehyung and Jimin's mouth open as if they saw her ass too. But I frowned the moment I realized they must've seen her tits because she was not wearing any bra.

I cleared my throat and they quickly looked away.

"Uhm.. Let's.. Let's eat" Jimin stuttered.

Jimin and Taehyung sat on their chairs and I walked to them as well as Lalisa. Lalisa on the other hand sat beside Tae and Tae nervously stiffened on his seat.

"Hey! Will you sit beside me!" I asked Lalisa but she just rolled her eyes.

She's still upset that I didn't complemented the blowjob.

"Finally LQ!" Jimin clapped his small hands.

"No we're not having LQ! You just wish!" I said. He's annoying me.

We all started eating when,

"Oh my god!" Lalisa covered her mouth as she realized something.

"What is it?" the three of us asked at the same time.

"Today is the exam right? I haven't studied yet!" she said.

"Even if you fail the exam, you would still pass the subjects" Taehyung said.

"But... I should've studied. I'm really slacking off lately." she worriedly said.

"Holy shit! We're late!!!" Jimin said when he noticed the time is already quarter to nine.

Fucking great! Too much for having a distraction!

We all stood and ran to our rooms.

Lalisa's POV

I was able to hold the handle of the bathroom but Jungkook squat my hands away.

"Sorry baby, I'll shower first!" he said and he entered the bathroom but I was able to stop the door from finally closing, I entered the bathroom too.

"No! I will shower first!" I said as I push his muscular body out.

"No, I'm the guy and I'm the boss so therefore I shower first!" he said and he started taking his shirt off.

I don't want to lose to him so I took off my sleepwear too.

"Jk! I told you I will shower first because I'm the lady and lady's first!"

"That was ancient ago Lalisa, You should know gender equality by now!" he said then he pulled his shorts down together with his boxers.

"I told you me first!" I yelled while pulling my panties down.

We got silent when we realized what we were doing.

As we are now inside a small bathroom.

His cock is standing tall and proud in front of my very eyes and his eyes were now focused on my bare pussy.

What are we gonna do now?

Sorry again for cursing but Fuck!



Author's Note

Readers: What do you think will happen?

A. They will forget about the exam and JungCock will take charge of the day? Or

B. They will be a good role model student and come to class on time to take the exam?



The Boy's Talk

Jungkook's POV

I can't hold back anymore!

It only took one step towards Lisa to close the gap between us.

I pressed her naked body to the wall and began kissing her. She tried to push me but I held both of her hands and pinned them to the wall.

Tilting my head, I was able to open her mouth with my tongue. And her tongue met mine. I began kissing her lips while massaging her tongue with mine. I then moved to her neck to place gentle kisses. Sucking every part from her jaw to her collar bone.

At first she tried to fight back but I didn't let her. I badly want her right here, right now.

Her hands slowly stopped fighting too that's why I let go of her and moved my hand to massage her breast while my free hand move down to touch her pussy.

I smiled on her neck when I realized she's wet.

Fucking wet.

I made her wet.

And because of that I pulled slightly away to look at her face.

I looked at her and her eyes has this longing look. A desperate one as if begging me to go on.

"Baby?" I asked while lining my cock to her entrance.

She nervously looked down to see my angry cock about to rip her.

She gulped and then nodded.

"Don't scream okay?" I said and she hummed in response.

"Hey! Are you not yet done preparing? We're late!" we heard Jimin outside our room.

I rolled my eyes as he cut us our heated moment. Lalisa's eyes widened and she was able to move away and proceed to shower.

Fucking timing.

I'm gonna kill that guy!

We had to shower together quick without looking at each other or else.

So now, imagine how hard it is to go to school with a boner and worst is that it is our exam.

I'm gonna fail for sure.

During the exam period. I looked at Limario who is answering the questions silently. Actually, the three of them are now answering but I can't help myself but to look at him or her.

I'm really amazed that he looks like a pretty boy but underneath that boy uniform is a woman's body I would die for.

I can't believe she was able to fool me for a long time and I even considered myself as gay.

I want to thank God for making her a girl instead for if not, I won't have the chance to have sex with her.

I smiled when I remembered how stressed I was back then thinking that I fell in love with a guy like me.

"Mr. Jeon! You are not answering the exam yet." the professor called my attention which made Lalisa turn her head to me.

She gave me a worried look. Taehyung gave me a confused look while fucking Jimin secretly laughed.

Okay, Jimin is really bitter.

I sighed and just continued the exam.

At 3 o'clock, Lalisa and my group finished taking the exams from all our subjects.

She bid me and the boys goodbye because she still has to prepare for her exam at Ladium which I really find weird. She even has to bring girl clothes to change in the comfort room first just to change her gender.

If it was me acting like that, I would have been caught the first day.

"I really find it weird why she needs to take a subject there." Jimin said as we walk back to our dorm.

"Exactly" I said.

"Maybe she wants to breathe the girl's air. She's been always around us boys and maybe she needs to change that for a while." Taehyung answered and we nodded in agreement.

"Yeah! Chae said Lalisa is really happy everytime she's with our sisters. Maybe because she can freely act her own self when she's with girls." Jimin smiled.

I can't help but smile too. I want her to be happy always and I'm glad she made friends with our sisters. Our sister has this bond that you cannot get in quickly. Even Tzuyu find it hard to get in their group even if she was my girlfriend. But Lalisa, befriended them all as easy as that.

"By the way, what took you so long to prepare, we barely make it in time." Jimin asked curiously and I turned pale.

Because I almost fucked her if not for your great timing. But good thing I didn't because she would be limp for sure. And she won't be able to come to school.

"Because it took her long enough to transform to a boy." I simply answered.

"You think she can make it years of pretending without anyone knowing? The school would kick her out the moment they knew. And she would be brought back to her country for sure." Jimin worriedly said which made me stop on my track.

"No! No! I won't let that happen! I won't let her be that far from me." I shook my head continuously.

"But what if someone caught her? Like Tzuyu. She can blackmail you or something like that. She's classmates with Lalisa and she knows Limario right? What if she finds out that both of them are the same person? She would tell both universities for sure." Jimin explained and I felt my head hurting from overthinking.

"Hey! Stop thinking like that! You're giving Jk a hard time." Taehyung said.

"I was just thinking the possible scenarios where Lalisa might be caught." Jimin defended.

"Then we must help her hide her identity as long as she's here." Taehyung suggested.

I really want to thank these two for their concern but still, Jimin's word makes me worry.

Next year, we will be set to another dorm mates and I'm afraid Lalisa will be paired to another guy. She would be exposed for sure.

My head hurts so much from thinking a lot of things.

Why does she have to pretend like this? She should have just enrolled at the all-girls University but if she did not enroll here, I would never have met her.

What if Tzuyu barges inside our dorm again and she sees Lalisa as Lalisa?

She would freak out I guess.

This is so fucked up!

That's why dad needs to win the election again. If he maintains his power, I can ask the school to have Lalisa stay here and I can also request to be paired with her in the dorm next year.

I have no choice but to be kind to Tzuyu. That's what my father asked of me.

And speaking. She texted.

Hi babe,

Meet me at 5 after class, I'm having a stressful day because of the exam. Meet me outside the University or I'll just go to your dorm.

-Tzuyu

I quickly replied her scared to death that she will go to our dorm.

To: Tzuyu

I'll pick you at the University.

-Jk

Then she sent me a reply.

Okay, see yah babe! 🍷

-Tzuyu

I almost kick the door of our room out of frustration.

I really hate the situation I'm in now. I could only wish Lalisa and I are freely loving each other around everyone's faces but no, we had to hide because of my parents request and her mysterious secret of pretending.



Author's Note

Who is your main ship in kpop by the way?

The Girls' Talk

Lalisa's POV

"You finished the exam quickly. Are you sure you answered them correctly?" Jennie gave me a worried look as we enjoy drinking coffee on the cafe we usually hangout.

We just finished taking the exam that's why we decided to hangout first.

"I think, the exam was fine." I answered. In all honesty it was the easiest subject of the day.

"Good for you! I found it hard actually." Jisoo said.

"Only because you didn't study. You're distracted with your boyfriend!" Jennie rolled her eyes at her.

"You have a boyfriend?" I asked. I didn't know she has one.

"Yeah. His name is Jin. I'll introduce you to him next time Lalisa!" she smiled sweetly at me.

I can't help but smile too. Loving someone really makes you happy. I feel she's as happy as me because I have Jk.

"How about you guys?" I asked the other girls.

"Nah, we're single now." Chae answered.

"But have you been in a relationship before?" I asked curiously.

"Of course we did." Jennie answered as she sips her tea.

"Speaking of boyfriend! I didn't know you and Jungkook will end up together in the end!" Chaeyoung said and I sweat by the way she looked at me crossing her arms on her chest.

"How did you?--" I look over Jennie to ask if she was the one who told her but she shook her head telling me that it's not her.

"Jimin told me to stop asking you out to meet him because you and Jungkook are already together." She said and I looked down my lap.

I don't want her to know about it through other people. It should've been me to admit to her.

"Yeah, it was funny because Chae and I are really fighting for who you'll end up with. I was really rooting for my brother when it would be Jennie's brother in the end." Jisoo started laughing and Chae laughed too.

"I'm so sorry. But I just fell for him. I don't know how it happened actually." I said looking down.

It's really awkward right now.

Jisoo reached for my hand to squeeze.

"It's okay. Don't worry. Taehyung talked to me also. He said that your happiness is his happiness." Jisoo said while giving me a reassuring smile.

"Yeah me too. Sorry for pushing you too hard on my brother. I didn't know there's a thing going on between you and Jk already that's why." Chae admitted guiltily.

"You're not mad at me? I will understand if you don't want to be friends with me anymore." I said with guilty voice.

"Of course not. We're friends first before you met our brothers." Chae said.

It's partly true and partly false because I met Taehyung years back.

"Speaking of my brother. Is he taking care of you?" Jennie raised her brow as if she's ready to kill her brother once she know that he messed up.

"Uhm.. He's good." I simply answered.

Chaeyoung leaned closer to me to ask something.

"Have you done the thing with him already?" she asked and my eyes widened at her question.

"No, why would you ask that?" I said.

"I just want to know if the rumors were true that he's really good at it." Chae answered and the girls chuckled.

I can feel myself blushing just thinking about how good Jungkook really is.

"There's a rumor like that?" I asked curiously. Just how many girls has he done it with to have people create rumors about him.

"Actually there are a lot rumors about them." Chae looked at me and she took my interest on the topic.

"Them? Your brothers?" I asked. Now I'm really curious.

"Yes!" Chae said as she sip her tea while looking at me.

"Hey! Don't scare her!" Jisoo chuckled.

"May I know these rumors?" I asked.

Jennie rolled her eyes and answered. "Now you got her curious." she said.

"One rumor says Jungkook is the best in bed, he is the kinkiest and the most rough one among the three." Cheyung said and they all laughed at how I blushed.

I can't believe we are talking about Jennie's brother like this.

"And Taehyung has the biggest dick" Jennie continued.

Oh my God! He has what?

"How did you know he has the biggest?" I asked her while Jisoo is just grinning.

"Because they have this childhood photo when they were 10 or

11. They are all naked in the beach and Taehyung really has the biggest one." Jennie explained and they all laughed again.

"And..." Jisoo continued while looking at Chae. "Rumors said, Jimin knows the best positions. He's the best in making girl's reach their orgasm." Jisoo finished and my jaw dropped open.

Yeah. My brain is corrupted now.

I can't believe girl talks will be like this.

"So, why are you not doing the thing with Jungkook yet?" Chae asked curiously.

I'm really having a hard time if I would tell them about the pills because Jennie is here and it's really awkward. But they told me those rumors so I should spill too. Maybe they can help?Right?

"Because the pills says we need to wait 7 days first." I admitted shyly. I can't look at their faces now.

"Oh my God! Why not use condom instead?" Chae suggested and I shook my head.

"He says he needs to feel the wall." I answered unsurely. I'm not sure if that's what he actually said.

"You're so cute Lalisa! Will it be your first?" Jisoo asked and I nodded.

"My brother is lucky as shit. But how come he doesn't know much about contraceptives. You should have just used morning after pill." Jennie rolled her eyes.

"What's that?" I asked excitedly. Is there another option because I really want to try it soon.

"Like this. You can have that." Jennie handed me a small box from her bag.

"How is this supposed to work? Is this effective?" I asked her.

"It is effective of course. Just read the direction." She said and she smiled.

"Oh my God! I'm excited. Tell me about what happened after, okay?" Chae said.

I didn't answer her. I just smiled at them. They are really supportive to me and I'm so happy with that.

"Are you sure you're giving this for free?" I asked Jennie.

"Of course. I have those at home and they're cheap. And besides, I don't have a boyfriend at the moment" She said.

"Thank you so much!" I'm so glad I can finally make Jungkook happy.

"Good thing there's a one week vacation break after the exam. Or else, you will not be able to go to school." Jisoo warned me which confused me a bit.

"Why wouldn't I be able to go to school if I do it with Jungkook?" I asked and they all looked at each other.

"Honey, Jungkook is rough in sex. Which means he will not be gentle on you and that will make you go limp mode for days." Jennie answered and they started laughing again.

Ha-ha good joke.

I didn't stop my self from laughing too.

But I frowned when I saw Tzuyu walking to us.

"What?" Jennie asked her rudely.

"Jennie, can I borrow a condom?" She asked with a serious tone like she's in an emergency.

We looked at each other and we turn our heads back to her.

"Why would I give you a condom?" Jennie asked raising her brow at her.

"Because *Jungkook* and I will meet and I'm afraid he forgot to bring one." She answered.

What did she just say?

I can feel my blood boiling right now.

"Can you repeat that princess? You will meet who?" I asked through gritted teeth as I clench my fists so hard.

"I'm going to meet Jungkook. My boyfriend, Jeon Jungkook. If you don't know him?" She answered.

And this is world war Number Three!



Author's Note

Nothing. I just want to piss you off early in the morning. 🙄

In my timezone it's 8am by the way.

The Explanation

Lalisa's POV

The girls were able to stop me before I totally jump on Tzuyu.

"What the hell is your problem?" Tzuyu asked as she compose herself. I was able to grab her hair and now she's combing it back with her fingers.

"I don't have a problem! Ask Jungkook that!" I said.

I can't breath. My chest is aching. My tears are threatening to fall and I don't want her to see me this way. Like a loser.

Yeah, I'm a loser.

Jungkook told me that he would break up with her but they're still together all this time.

Why would he do this to me?

"Crazy bitch!" Tzuyu rolled her eyes at me and she started leaving.

I felt my knees weaken as I slumped down back to my chair.

Jisoo started rubbing my back. And I didn't stopped my self from crying.

I was fooled. Jungkook lied to me.

I was willing to give him everything that I have. I was willing to fight for him from my Grandmother.

Why did he crushed me like this?

I didn't know I would feel this kind of pain.

But it's my fault too for falling to someone who has already a girlfriend right?

But still, why would he made me be his girlfriend if he cannot simply let go of the other?

He should've just let me be if he can't leave her.

"Lalisa, listen to me please." Jennie held my hand as if she's trying to explain.

"Why? Why Jennie? Why would he do this to me?" I sobbed and Chae cried as well.

A moment ago we were all laughing and now it was ruined.

"Lalisa, please listen to me first. I thought Jungkook told you already about the plan. But I guess he has not told you yet so I will explain in behalf of Jungkook." She said.

"Jennie, there's no need to explain. It's clear. He is two-timing us. And I don't want that. I don't deserve an unloyal boyfriend. I'm not

even sure now if he really loves me." I said as I wipe my tears with my fingers.

Chae and Jisoo are silently watching me as Jennie is still holding my other hand.

"Lalisa, listen please.. Jungkook loves you. I'm so sure of that. He even told our parents about your relationship. It was the first time he did told our parents willingly that he loves someone." she said and I looked at her.

"He what?"

"He came to the mansion last day telling us that he will never marry Tzuyu because he thought he was arranged for a marriage with her. He was yelling like crazy and he admitted to father and mother that he loves you and he wants their support on your relationship." She explained which warmed my heart a little but still, why would he cheat on me?

"But why would he cheat on me if he loves me?" I asked. My vision are still blurry from my tears.

"Because that's what father asked us to do. My father's term is coming to an end and Tzuyu's parents promised to sponsor my dad's candidacy. Lalisa, Tzuyu's father will stop the sponsoship if her father knows that Jungkook is not serious with her daughter. And it will be a huge mess between our country and Taiwan. Just imagine the scandal it will create. Our father would totally lose the election." Jennie said and I got quiet. I didn't know it's this serious.

"My parents knows about your relationship and they support it, but they asked us to be good to Tzuyu for the mean time while the election is not yet over. I promise Lalisa, Jungkook loves you but he has no choice. This is what father and mother asked of us. I hope you don't leave my brother. It will crush him Lalisa. Please understand the situation he is in." Jennie begged me.

"I don't know Jennie." that's all I can say.

"Lalisa, Tzuyu is known as a spoiled princess and he won't let Jungkook get away that fast. That maybe the reason why it's hard for him to break up with her. She's threatening Jungkook and my brother is stressed out because he's afraid to lose you. Lalisa, please understand us. We need time. We need your understanding in this matter. Our father's presidency is at risk here." She almost cried while explaining.

"I will try to understand Jennie." I said as I gave her a tight lipped smile.

My world is crushed at what I have known.

"So that mean Jungkook needs to pretend like a loyal boyfriend to her until election?" I asked to confirm.

"Yes. It's the embarrassing truth. I don't want to suck to their

family honestly. We have enough money to finance the candidacy but even if they stop the sponsorship, the drama it will create to the media will surely go out of hand. It will ruin our families' reputation and father will surely lose." Jennie shyly admitted.

I sighed.

I don't know what to do or think anymore. Of course I want to understand them. Jennie seems to be telling the truth and Jungkook even told his parents about us.

But still, he should have told me. I will understand if he did. Besides, he's not the only one lying here. Between the two of us, I *lie* the most.

They don't know I'm a princess and they don't know I'm already engaged.

I think I need to understand for the sake of our relationship. It will be almost two months before the Korean Presidential Election and I cannot be that selfish. I can't let my petty feelings get in between Jungkook and Jennie's father's presidency.

I am aware of how great their father is in ruling this country and it would be a waste if he won't win.

"Lalisa?" Jennie cut me off of my thoughts.

"I will try to understand Jennie." I weakly said.

"I'm so sorry." she stood to hug me and soon the three girls hugged me as well.

They started comforting me telling me that everything will be alright when the time comes.

And I decided I need to clean my mess as well. If Jungkook is brave enough to tell his parents about us, I should also do the same.

I should also face my fear and talk to my grandmother about him.

I should also tell her that I love someone and I will not marry Mario.

I should also tell her that I'm willing to let go of my dream on becoming the queen just to be with him.

I will stand my ground this time and I will not let anybody dictate me.

After talking to the girls, I started walking back to the dorm.

I held my phone and dialled a number.

'Yes, Princess?' he answered on the first ring.

'Kunpimook, book us a ticket to Thailand tomorrow.'



Author's Note

What do you think will happen?

Should Lalisa forgive Jungkook and just support him?

The Scared Boyfriend

Jungkook's POV

Where is she?

I've been waiting for her for 10 minutes now.

Finally, I saw Tzuyu walking.

She opened the car door and got inside my car quickly.

"What took you so long?" I asked her in annoyance. I really hate waiting.

"I was looking for condoms." she answered as she buckle her seatbelt.

"Why do you need condoms?" I asked.

"For you dick of course!" she snapped. She's also not in a good mood just like me.

I wonder why?

"We will do nothing Tzuyu." I said as I start driving.

"We will." she said and her hand travelled to my thigh. She quickly place her hand on my crotch and started rubbing my bulge but I managed to remove her hand.

"Stop it Tzuyu!" I warned as I focus on the road.

"Why are you cold like that? Did you finally found another girl to replace me with?" she asked. Hurt is clear in her voice. But I didn't answer her.

"Please fuck me. I'm so stressed out. The exam was really hard." She begged again.

Okay fine I admit.

If this is just an ordinary day, I would probably fucked her by now but I cannot do Lalisa wrong anymore.

The last time I cheated, she left me for four fucking days! I thought I was gonna die. Those four days were the most miserable part of my life.

I love her and she's the only one now that I wish I can be with physically, mentally and emotionally.

"Where do you want to go? Do you want to eat on a restaurant?" I asked. I need to divert her attention to something else.

"I want to go on a hotel and have sex there." she answered and I almost cursed.

"Why do want to have sex so bad? When we can eat or watch movie instead?"

"Not my fault you're so addicting." she said in a seductive voice. Her hand travelled again on my thigh.

"I can give you anything but that!" I almost yelled. She's really annoying me.

"Tell me, who's this new girl you are with?" she gave me a suspicious look.

"I have no one!" I lied. I don't want her to know about Lalisa. I'm scared she will do something to her.

"Is it Lalisa?" she asked and my eyes widened.

What the fuck!

"Who is that? I don't know her." I tried to compose my self. I can't let her know I'm with Lalisa or she's gonna find out soon about Limario. She would report to the Universities for sure and Lalisa will be kicked out.

I won't let that happen.

"Then why did she turn into incredible hulk a while ago when I told her that I will meet you?" She chuckled.

"You what?"

"You heard me, your sister and her group together with that crazy bitch was at the cafe a while ago, I just asked Jennie to lend me a condom for us to use. And that crazy bitch jumped on me. She even pulled my hair. ! Ughhhhh!!! I hate her! I'll make sure she'll pay for what she did. Doesn't she know that I'm a princess?"

Shit!

"Did you just said you borrowed condom infront of them?" I asked trying to manage my anger.

"Yes, because I'm afraid you'll forget to bring one, and that Lalisa lose her shit when I mentioned your name." Tzuyu rolled her eyes.

I'm doomed.

Lalisa knows already.

"Where are we going?" Tzuyu asked when I started driving real fast.

"I'm taking you home" I said as I clenched my jaw.

"But I want to go on a hotel with you!" she whined.

"I said. I'm taking you home!!!" I shouted and Tzuyu got quiet.

I can't do this anymore. I need to go home. I need to see Lalisa! I need to explain!

She will leave me. But I will not let her leave me. I can't live without her. She's my happiness now. She's the only girl that I love. She's the only one I wanted to be with.

In no time I was already infront of Tzuyu's home.

"Get out Tzuyu!" I said when I was at their gates.

"I'm gonna tell your mom about your rude behavior today!" She warned me.

"Go ahead! Tell her that I refused to fuck you. I don't think being a gentleman is considered rude these days!" I answered. She cannot threaten me anymore.

"You think you're smarter than me? You'll see, I'm gonna make Lalisa's life a living hell. I can even kick her out of Ladium with just one phone call from my dad. You just wait Jk!" she said and she hopped out of my car smirking.

I gripped the steering wheel so hard.

Fuck fuck fuck!!!

I hate her so much!

When I was away from Tzuyu's home, I managed to call Jennie.

"Jungkook" she said on the other line.

"Are you still with Lalisa? Can I talk to her?" I asked worriedly.

"No, we all went home now" she answered.

I really want to cry right now.

"How is she? Did she cry?" I asked hoping that everything is still okay.

"She did."

Oh God! I really need to see her now.

"Jennie, she'll leave me. Please help me. I can't live without her!"

"Calm down Jungkook! Stop crying. I explained everything to her. So if I were you, just go talk to her. She will listen to you." Jennie said on the other line.

"But what if she leave me? What am I gonna do Jennie?" I asked. Damn! I'm really crying now.

"She will not leave you. She said she understands. Just go talk to her. Beg her to stay if she tries to leave you." she answered. I can hear my sister's concerned voice but I'm still scared.

I ended the call and drove home as fast as I could.

When I got inside the dorm, Taehyung and Jimin are there already but Lalisa is nowhere to be found. Maybe she's in the room.

"Is Lalisa home?" I asked both of them.

"No, she's not home yet." Jimin answered.

"Fuck!"

"What's the matter?" Taehyung asked.

Instead of answering him, I just ran inside our room hoping that they are lying.

But when I got inside. She's really not there.

I opened her closet to see if her clothes are still there and I was able to breathe when everything is still there. Her books and notes are still on the study table. Meaning she didn't leave. She's still here.

I still have a chance to explain.

So I waited.

I waited and waited

I waited till it's 1 in the morning.

But she didn't come home.

I can't sleep.

I'm so scared.

I don't want her to leave me.

I didn't notice I was already falling asleep while thinking of her.



Author's Note

Where is Lalisa?

I hate my title by the way



The Goodbye

Lalisa's POV

I decided to sleep the night away from Jungkook. I'm here at a hotel room to send the remaining hours of the night.

And tomorrow I planned on going back to the dorm just to get some things.

Jungkook must be worried by now but I really don't want to see him yet.

I love him and I want to fight for him but I'm human too and humans get hurt right?

I really just want to forget everything But I need more time away from him first. After I fly back to Thailand, I plan to stay there for days.

I wanted to say that everything is fine with me. I can sacrifice a little for him but still, my heart is hurting so bad. Thinking that while I am away, he is with another woman.

I wonder if Jungkook is home already?

Are they still together?

What are they doing now?

Are they kissing?

Are they touching each other?

Is he kissing her body too just like how he kisses mine?

Does he teach her how to touch his body like how he teaches me?

Are they having fun while I'm not there?

I'm so hurt. And I'm so jealous. And this jealousy is eating my whole being up.

I lay down the bed as I cry myself to sleep.

Will it be worth it fighting for him?

Jungkook's POV

When I woke up. I looked around immediately hoping to see Lalisa around.

I removed the blanket around my body and stood to look for her in the bathroom but she's not there.

I walk out of our room hoping that she's playing with her cats or eating but she's also not there.

I sighed as I walk back to our room.

Wait.

I don't remember wrapping my self with a blanket last night.

A smile crept to my lips.

She's here.

My Lalisa is here.

I ran outside the dorm to see the garden.

And there she were watering the plants.

She looks like a fairy doing it and when I walk near her, she looked at me and smiled.

She smiled at me?

I didn't wait any longer and embraced her body so tight.

She didn't leave me!

She's still here!

"I thought you left me!" I said and she chuckled.

"I was thinking about it." she said and I hugged her tighter.

"No please don't leave me." I said as I nuzzle my face in her neck. She smells like home as always.

"I won't. I love you so much to leave you." she said and I pulled away to look at her face.

"Promise me you will never leave me." I begged.

"I told you I won't. But I need to leave for a while." she said with a sad face.

"No, no, no! You're not going anywhere. I'm so sorry okay? I'm sorry for lying. I'm so sorry I didn't tell you about her. About my parents request. They said--"

"I know Jk, Jennie explained everything already. I understand you." she said.

"But why are you leaving for a while if you understand?" shit! I'm crying so much.

"Because I need to. You will not understand it yet but I promise you will when I get back." she said as she carress my cheeks. She looks hurt too but I don't understand. Why is she leaving me?

"I'm scared that you won't come back" I said. As I kiss her hand which was on my face.

"I will always come back. You're my home now Jungkook. If you'll only trust me, this is for us. For our future." she said with sincerity and I was able to breath for a while.

"I promise I didn't do anything with her. If that's the reason why you're leaving." I said. I'm so desperate for her to stay.

But she shook her head.

"I will leave not because of that but because I can't hide anymore. I want to tell you everything about me. About the real me but I'm afraid I need to settle things back at home first before doing that. I promise you. I will come back and we will be together. No one can break us apart after this." she said with finality and I didn't noticed I was already nodding.

Wait why am I letting her?

I should beg her more.

I should kneel in front of her for her to change her mind.

I had a little taste back then of how a day is without her and I don't think I can survive a day or days without her by my side.

"Jungkook, Let's fulfill our promises together." she said as she smile.

Then she stood on her toes to kiss my lips. I kissed her back. We kissed for like forever. And I don't want to let go of her. I feel like if I let go of her I will totally lose her

Moments later,

Lalisa, packed some of her stuffs up. I, Jimin and Taehyung waited for her to finish preparing.

With a heavy heart, I bid her goodbye. I kissed and hugged her endlessly not caring if Jimin or Taeyung is here.

Lalisa didn't allow us to drive her to the airport. Instead a luxurious car parked outside our dorm and her friend Bam took her.

She waved me a goodbye before leaving and I tried my best to memorize her face before she left.

And unlike the last time, I managed to get her number this time.

I called her and she answered.

"Where are you? Are you home already?" I asked as I walk back and forth in our living room.

"Jungkook, I haven't even reached the airport!" she said and she chuckled.

"Oh... I thought you were gone for hours already" I said as I scratch my head.

"I just left the dorm for 10minutes Jungkook. Let's just talk when I arrive there. Goodbye!" she said and she ended the call.

What the fuck? It's just 10 minutes and I can't breath already.

How to survive without Lalisa 101?



Author's Note

Do you think Lalisa can convince her grandmother to cancel the engagement?

Sorry for the dramatic chapter by the way.



The Meeting with the Queen

Pranpriya's POV

I nervously looked at Mario as we walk inside to the secret room where my grandmother and I should meet up.

It was really hard to meet her like this because of the threat in my life. And Kunpimook said, there's a big chance that the one who planned to kill me also stays in the palace.

But who?

Servants?

Guards?

Sir Rudolph?

Aunt Sarah?

Eunha?

I can't imagine one of them wants to kill me. And even if Aunt Sarah doesn't like me, she will never do that.

She can't do that.

The door opened revealing Sir Rudolph.

"The queen has been waiting for you Princess." he said as he guide us inside.

"Mr. Chayut, the queen wants to talk to the princess alone first." he said and I nervously looked at Mario.

"Of course. I will wait here." Mario gave me a smile and he took the seat on the royal couch.

Now I'm more nervous. The original plan was both Mario and I will convince grandmother about cancelling the engagement but now she only wants to talk to me which is nerve wracking.

I walked inside and saw the queen sitting on a chair with a neutral expression on her face. Usually she greets me with a smile but now, it's different.

She must not be happy seeing me.

"Grandmother!" I bowed in front of her.

"What brought you here? Don't you know how dangerous it is for you to come and see me unannounced!" she raised her voice and I can tell she's really not happy to see me.

"Grandmother, I'm really sorry for coming here without asking you first. But I really need to tell you something." I said as I breathed in and out.

"Whatever it is that you want to say, it must be really important

that you travelled from Korea to Thailand and you even bring Mario with you."

"Yes, it is very important." I paused then continued.

"I'm in love with someone and it's not Mario." I announced. I closed my eyes to gather the courage in me.

"I want to cancel the engagement!" I said looking at the queen's eyes.

She looked at me with a surprised expression.

Then she smiled.

Jungkook's POV

She said she would call me when she arrive but it's been hours now?

I just finished cleaning these evil cats poops and I really want to shower first. But I miss her already and she didn't even called me yet.

I better call her then.

I dialled her number but she won't answer.

Why the hell is my girlfriend ignoring me?

But I smiled when she finally accepted my call.

"Who's this?" I scowled when a man answered from the other line.

Is this the right number? But Lalisa answered my call hours ago with this number.

"This is Jungkook. May I talk to Lalisa?" I asked politely even though cheating scenarios are now running on my head right now.

"Lalisa?you mean Pr.. Ow okay.. I'm sorry but she cannot talk with you yet." he said.

"Why?" I need to talk to her because she's mine.

"Because she's talking with her grandmother." he answered.

"So? Call her and tell her that Jeon Jungkook wants to talk to her!" I answered through gritted teeth.

Who does he think he is?

Just because he's with her doesn't mean he can tell me what I should do and not do!

But he just chuckled.

"Her grandmother would kill you if you interrupted their talk." he warned.

As if I'm scared? She's just an old lady right?

"Who are you by the way?" I hate him whoever I'm talking with.

"I'm Mario." he answered.

Mario? The ugly guy?

I want to ask him why is he with Lalisa but we were cut off by another voice.

"Mr. Chayut, they want to talk to you." I heard an older man's voice said.

"Thank you!" I heard him say to the man.

"Jungkook, I need to go, just call her later." he said then he ended the call.

What the hell.

I swear my jealousy is at a point where I want to go and search where this country Luwakar is!

Wait? Was it Luwakar or Lukawar?



Author's Note

I swear I've been writing for hours now but my son keeps taking my phone away.

May I know who your bias in Blackpink and Bias in BTS is?

Mine is Lisa and V lol

But I love Liskook so much!

The Curious Boyfriend

Jungkook's POV

"Where the fuck is that country?" I'm now at my room murdering google search.

There's no such thing as Luwakar on the map?

Did she just made up country names? Because there's clearly no country with that name?

Maybe it's a tribe's place?

Is Lalisa a cannibal?

But I won't mind if she eat my dick.

Yeah. I'm pervert I know.

Maybe I got the wrong spelling or I just heard her wrong?

My hand is itching to book a ticket now.

I really want to go wherever she is because she is with a guy.

That Mario guy really pisses me off.

Why is he even with Lalisa? Is he stalking her or what?

Whoever he is, I don't like him!

And he's even enjoying his time with Lalisa and her family.

Poor me.

Has she ever taught about introducing me to her family?

I want to meet them too but I guess Lalisa has no plans on telling them about me.

Instead, she brought that ugly guy with her instead of me.

Wait.

I think I got his full name?

It was Chayut right?

I heard the old man called him Mr. Chayut.

So he is Mario Chayut?

I decided to search his name on google and my eyes widened at what I read.

Mario M. Chayut

Prime Minister of Thailand.

The fuck did I just talked with a Prime Minister? But he's too young to be in that position?

Maybe he's got connections?

I tried seaching more about him and I found something more intriguing.

He is set to marry the Princess of Thailand?

You mean Taehyung's first love?

I wonder how Taehyung would feel if he knows that the one that he loves was set to marry another man?

He would cry for sure. I know how much he loves that girl.

Good thing she's *dead*. She won't be able to hurt my friend that much.

If it was me and I learned that Lalisa will be set to marry another man, I would totally take her away. I'll ran away with her. Problem solved. Easy!

Wait. I think I haven't seen that princess yet?

What if I searched for her?

I tried searching for her and a name appeared.

Pranpriya Manobal?

Sounds weird but familliar.

Manobal? Where have I heard that?

I started looking for her picture but I was surprised.

Not a single picture of her can be searched.

It's as if her whole existence is deleted.

Now I got more curious.

Who is Mario? Why is he friends with Lalisa? Is Lalisa friends with the princess too?

My head hurts from too much thinking.

And I don't want to think anymore about a *dead* person.

Right! I'll just imagine how I will spend the day if Lalisa comes home.

I can't wait to see her!

Lalisa's POV

"Such a brave princess you are!" grandmother smiled as if she's proud of me.

I can't help but smile too.

"But who is this lucky man we are talking about?" she asked me sweetly.

"He is Jeon Jungkook grandmother." I answered with my chin up. Yes I'm proud of my man.

"Jeon? Tell me, how is this Jeon related to President Jeon?" she asked curiously.

"He is the son of President Jeon Grandma." I answered.
and her smile faded.



Author's Note

Are you still awake?

Sorry for the short chapter but don't worry because I plan to write as many chapters as I can this night.

The Queen's Approval

Pranpriya's POV

"The president's son huh?" she said as she rub her chin.

"As much as I want to support you, I'm afraid I'm still hesitant Pranpriya." she frowned.

I'm so nervous right now. But I try to keep my cool. I can't let my grandmother know that I'm scared of her decision.

"Please tell me why you are hesitant grandmother?" I asked.

"Do you know how your mother died?" She asked.

"She committed suicide because you don't want her and my father together. You don't like my father because he came from a poor family." I answered straightforward.

That's how I heard their story is.

"You got the wrong story my dear." she said.

"You're right I don't want them to be together but not because of your father's status Pranpriya."

"Then why?" I asked her curiously. This is the first time grandmother will talk about my father. She has never mentioned about him my whole life.

"I will tell you the story of your mother and father Pranpriya." she said and I paid her my attention.

"Your mother met your father when she sneaked out of the palace on her birthday. They fell in love at first sight then. He was living a simple life and your mother loved him so much despite his status in life. I was told about their relationship when he got your mother pregnant with you. At first I got really mad and I even had your mother locked in the palace to prevent them from meeting. But she fight for her love and soon I approved of their relationship. Your father started visiting the palace but he never planned to marry your mother even if I approved of them already. After months of him visiting here, a lot has been missing including your mother's precious jewelries." She said.

"Oh my god!" I covered my opened mouth at the realization.

"Yes Pranpriya, your father was a thief. He took almost all the expensive jewelries, gems he can find in this palace. I told your mother about it but she didn't believed me. She didn't believe me that the man he loves just uses him, that he's just taking advantage

of him. And then one day, when you were few months old, your mother found your father with another woman."

"Oh lord!" I can't believe what I'm hearing now.

"Your father has already a wife and he just used your mother to have money. That's the reason why he couldn't marry your mother because he was already married. Your mother committed suicide after that. Her death reminded me that we shouldn't trust people easily. There are evil and wicked people in life Pranpriya and I'm telling you you should get away from them." grandmother warned.

"But Jungkook is not evil grandma!" she doesn't know him. He loves me.

"Does this guy loves you?" She asked raising a brow.

"Yes, he loves me very much!" I answered.

"How sure are you that he is not cheating and he will never cheat on you?" she asked and I got quiet.

Of course he cheated and he's still cheating but...

"See? You're not sure Pranpriya" She said as if disclosing the conversation.

"He loves me grandmother and I'm sure of that. I love him so much too." I said. I felt streams of tears flowing on my cheeks now.

I really want to fight for him. I want to be with him.

"Well.. How about his parents? Does the President knows about your relationship?" she asked as if challenging me.

"Yes, they know already!" I answered proudly.

"Oh my God Pranpriya! Do they know that you're a princess?" she panicked and I shook my head.

"No, but I want to tell Jungkook about me already." I said. I don't want to hide anymore. I want him to know that I'm a princess. I don't want to lie to him forever.

"Don't. Please don't tell him!" she said.

"But why?"

"Pranpriya, are you crazy!? Their whole family is the biggest and most influential in that country. If they know the truth about you, the media will know too and another plan of murder will be set for you. Do you want that?" she explained with worry.

"So, you mean I should not tell him yet until we catch the person behind this?" I confirmed.

"How sure are you that I will still let you go back to that country after knowing that you're dating the president's son?" she asked.

"What do you mean? I want to go back. Grandma please understand. I love him and he will never take advantage of me. He's from a wealthy family, he will never be like my father!" I explained.

"You're still naive Pranpriya! Even presidents can take advantage

of you. Don't you know that? You need to think more wisely especially that you will be a queen!" she almost yelled.

"Then I will just let go of the crown!" I said and thank God my voice did not crack.

The queen studied my expression then she sighed.

"Whoever this boy is, I really hope he won't mess his chances up." she said.

Wait what?

"Are you telling me that???" I want to scream! She's finally approving our relationship?

"Don't get your hopes up. That boy is on probationary period. I will let you go back to that country. Pretend that everything is just normal. And don't tell him that you're a princess! I will have my eyes on him and if he proved me that he can take care and love you, I will let you be but if he messes up and he hurts you, I'm telling you Pranjyoti, I will personally take you back and I will never let him see you again!" she said.

"Thank you so much grandmother! I promise you Jungkook will take care of me!" I hugged her tightly.

I'm so so happy I can finally be with him!

"I can't breathe!" she said and I let go of her.

She is now smiling too.

"Mr. Rudolph, please call Mr. Chayut so that we can tell him that the engagement is cancelled." the queen said. And she looked back at me to smile.



Author's Note

Will it be a happy ever after already?



The Result

Jungkook's POV

"Today is the release of the exam results right?" I asked Jimin and Taehyung as we eat our breakfast.

"Yes, let's go check the results later after we eat." Jimin answered.

"Uhm.. Guys, do you know which country Lalisa is from?" I asked. I'm really still sleepy from staying up late at night. It's hard to sleep without seeing her face. Now I have dark circles in my eyes.

"I think it was Luwak or Lukawar?" Jimin answered unsurely.

Taehyung chuckled because he too doesn't know.

"Why do you want to know?" Taehyung asked.

"Because I want to follow her." I said.

"What?" both of them shouted.

"I said I want to follow her there. We have a week break and I'm bored to just stay here." I said.

"But Lalisa will be mad if you do that. She said you should never follow right? She doesn't even want to be followed to the airport what more to her country?" Jimin replied and I just got quiet.

He's right. Lalisa told me to trust her. She said this is for our future. So, I really need to wait for her patiently even if it's hard.

After preparing, we head to the school to check for the exam's results.

Yeah, you're right Lalisa or should I say Limario Manoban topped almost all the subjects with perfect scores even if she didn't study. While I was just either on the 2nd, 3rd or 4th spot. But she just got 2nd on Korean Law while I got first.

"Sometimes I'm really curious if she's cheating because this is so impossible." Jimin said.

"Yeah...me too but she's really smart. She even became the professor's pet because she knows almost everything." Taehyung answered.

"My baby is just smart. Stop being jealous!" I chuckled.

I'm proud of her.

"I remember back then you hated him because he took the first spot." Taehyung said.

They both laughed remembering that time.

I smiled. It was as if ancient times ago but I still remember everything. The way I got curious about him and the time I slowly fell in love

with him. Then he got drunk and I had to change his clothes, that's when I found out he has a pussy.

"Hey! What are you thinking? You're smiling like a lunatic there?" Jimin smacked my arm.

"Nothing. I'm just lucky to have her." I answered.

"You really are." Taehyung nodded with a sad face.

"So you should make her happy." Jimin said and I rolled my eyes.

"She's happy with me that's for sure." I proudly said.

Suddenly, my phone started ringing.

Jennie is calling?

Why would she call so early in the morning?

I looked at the boys confused look too.

"Hello Jen?" I answered.

"Where the fuck are you! Lalisa is in trouble!"

"Lalisa is what? Why what happened?" I asked nervously. I can see the boys concerned faces when they heard Lalisa's name.

"Lalisa got a hundred percent score in the exam and Tzuyu reported her to the professor saying that Lalisa switched their answer sheets. She is telling that Lalisa is a cheater and she should be kicked out from school. And now the professor seems to believe her. They are now planning to report this to the university president!" I heard Jennie's worried voice.

I swear Tzuyu will never stop.

"I will come to your University now!" I said and ended the call.

I almost crash my phone out of anger.

So this is what Tzuyu means when she said she's gonna make her life a living hell.

"What happened?" they asked.

"Tzuyu wants Lalisa to be kicked out from Ladium. She's accusing her of cheating." I answered.

"What the fuck? Your girlfriend is crazy Jk!" Jimin said.

"She's not my girlfriend!"

"She is. And she will always be. She will never let go of you because she's obsessed with you!" Jimin said while Taehyung frowned.

"I will go to their University now and hopefully she listens to me." I said.

"I'm coming with you." Both of them said and I nodded.

When we arrived at the University, we saw Tzuyu arguing with a professor while Jennie, Chae and Jisoo are defending Lalisa.

"What's happening here?" I asked and Tzuyu smiled in an instant.

"Tzuyu let's talk!" I said and I pulled her to one corner.

"What is it?" she smirked.

"What the hell are you doing! Lalisa will never cheat!" I said.

"I was right. You're really with that bitch all this time!" she said.

"Stop this Tzuyu!"

"Why would I? I want her to be kicked out in this school. You know no one can stop me. Unless you stop me yourself?" she smiled sweetly as she move to me.

"What do you want? Tell me just don't do this to her!" I asked as I gulped.

She smirked and I know I lost.

This is not going to end well.

"You know what I always want." She leaned to my ear to whisper.

"Meet me later. I'll text you the room number." she said. And she walked away.

What am I going to do?

I can't let her be kicked out in this school.

Should I follow Tzuyu?

When I get back to my friends and sister, they look all worried.

"What are you planning to do now? Tzuyu said she will tell this to her father!" Jennie is really worried. All of them are worried.

"I will talk to her." I said.



Author's Note

What do you think will happen?



The Owner

Pranpriya's POV

"Thank you! I hope to see you soon President!" I heard my grandma talk to someone on her phone.

"Who was that?" I asked her when she sat back on the dining table to join me and Mario.

We are now having lunch in secret as the people inside the palace must not know yet that I'm here. Luckily, the palace has a secret place underground where we can freely talk.

There is a bedroom, Dining room and Living room inside that is why I stayed the night here instead of staying on a hotel. Grandmother invited Mario to thank him for being kind to me and apologized for the cancelled engagement. And I thanked him also for his consideration with my decision.

He said that he is really fine with it but if I change my mind, he would still be willing to marry me. The queen even joked that she will have to force the marriage with Mario if she learns that Jungkook is not serious with me. Which I'm confident that it won't happen because Jungkook loves me. And I love him too.

"The University President of Yonsei and Ladium called to tell me that someone is framing you." she calmly answered.

"What? What do you mean framing me?" I asked worriedly.

"A girl named Tzuyu wants you to be kicked out of Ladium. She's been accusing you of switching answer sheets with her and cheating." She said again without even worrying.

"What? I will never cheat grandmother! I promise I didn't do what-" I almost stood from my seat explaining.

"Sssshhhh calm down Pranpriya. I already took care of it." she said.

"How? I don't want to be kicked out from that school grandma. I have friends there. I don't want to be away from them!" I said.

"Who says you will be kicked out? Even if you actually cheated, No one can kick you out in that school!" she said.

"Why?"

"Because I'm one of the owner of those schools" she answered.

"What???"

Jungkook's POV

I nervously walk to the hotel room where Tzuyu wants to see me.

And no, I'm not planning to fuck her. I just want to talk to her and explain to her gently that I cannot do this anymore.

That I love Lalisa and she is the only one I want to be with.

I want to tell her that I cannot see her from now on because it will hurt Lalisa more.

I don't care anymore if my parents hate me.

I need to do the right thing.

For Lalisa.

I breathed in and out first before knocking on the door, when the door opened, Tzuyu pulled me in.

And I was surprised to see her naked in front of me.

Shit!

It's a trap!

"Tzuyu, what are you doing?" I asked her when she locked the door behind her.

Then she started walking to me but I looked away from seeing her naked body.

"Why are you looking away baby? Are you scared that you won't be able to control yourself?" she teased.

"Stop this Tzuyu! I came here to talk to you. Please listen. I don't love you. I never did and I'm really sorry." I said while looking at my shoe.

I saw her bare feet in front of my shoe and that's when I realized she's already in front of me.

"Don't be such a killjoy, I know you want me too." she said as she rub my crotch.

I held both of her wrist to stop her.

"Please stop please!" I begged. I can imagine Lalisa's face in my head.

"I will never stop. Lalisa will be kicked out now if you don't follow what I said. I already told father and now my father will call the President. So tell me, what's your decision baby?" she said in a seductive voice.

Fuck! I just want to jump out of this hotel building.

"One sex will not hurt right? You don't have to tell her. I promise I won't tell our little secret." she winked and she pushed me down the bed.

"Tzuyu..."

"Hmmm?" she said as she started kissing my neck.

She ran her tongue on my jawline as she straddle my waist.

My mind and body is now fighting for what I should do next.

She began rubbing her core on my bulge. Grinding her hips on mine as she kiss me. I didn't open my lips but she bit my lower lip which made me part mine so her tongue pushed in successfully.

"Tzuyu stop!" I said then I was able to push her away.

I stood from the bed and she looked at me with a pair of disappointed eyes.

"I swear, you made a huge mistake Jungkook!" she threatened again.

"No, this is the best decision I will make!" I said then I walked out of the room.

Leaving her there alone and I'm so damn scared.

'What now?' I asked myself.

My poor Lalisa will be kicked out and I wasn't able to help her.

Then my phone started ringing...

"Jennie?"

"Jungkook, The president decided that they will not kick Lalisa out." she happily announced.

"You sure?" I almost jumped out inside the elevator where I am at.

"Yes, so you don't have to worry anymore." she said.

"But how?" how did she get away from Tzuyu's plan?

"I don't know too. But hey let's celebrate!" she laughed.

"Okay! See you sis!"

Thank God



Author's Note

How are y'all?



The Last day of Innocence

Jungkook's PoV

I excitedly wait to see a beautiful blonde girl on the crowd of arriving passengers here at the airport.

There are so many people coming in and out but I immediately saw her walking excitedly to me.

Lalisa

"Baby!" We both run to each other and I quickly engulfed her in a hug.

She would always smell like home to me. Her scent and her body eases me. It feels like I can breath whenever she's near me.

"I missed you!" she said on my chest.

"I missed you more!" I said as I kiss her head.

"Come with me, I badly need cuddles." I said and she chuckled.

I open my car door for her to get in and I drove to the dorm. I wanted to make up for the lost days so I planned on taking her out on a vacation.

We still have 3 days left before the school starts again that's why we should spend it happily together.

When we got to the dorm, Taehyung quickly hugged her as if he's the boyfriend.

"Hey, stop it already!" I said as I pull Lalisa away from him.

"I'm sorry, I just missed you Lalisa." he said as he scratch his head.

Then Jimin came running out of his room too.

"Lalisaaaaa" he said as he ran to my girl and hugged her as well.

I have no choice but to pull her away from him too.

"Killjoy!" Jimin rolled his eyes on me but Lalisa just laughed it off.

"Where are my kittens?" she asked.

"They are sleeping. We already fed them" Taehyung said and Lalisa smiled.

"Thank you so much guys!" she bowed to the two who was in charge of feeding her evil cats but sadly I was in charge of cleaning thier poop.

"Lalisa is tired from the travel so let us have her relax for a while." I suggested and they nodded.

We started walking inside our bedroom which I proudly cleaned

because I know Lalisa is coming.

"Wow! It's sure clean here?" she said as she look around.

"Of course. I need to clean because my princess is coming!" I grinned but she frowned.

Probably because she thinks I'm referring to Tzuyu.

"I miss this bed!" she jumped on her bed and she wrapped her body with her blanket.

I walked to her as I happily look at her face. Just the sight of her face makes my heart warm. Her voice can make me calm and I promise myself I'm gonna do everything to fight for her love. For us to stay together forever.

"Baby, how was your trip?" I asked nervously. I anticipate she will tell me the truth about her already.

"It was okay. I told my grandmother about you." she happily answered.

"Really?" I asked in surprised.

"Yes, and she approves our relationship that's why I'm so happy Jungkook. My grandmother is very strict and I'm glad she accepts you." she said.

"I'm happy too. I can't wait to meet her. By the way Lalisa, prepare your things because we are going to Jeju tomorrow." I said.

"We are going to Jeju?" she repeated.

"Yes, I want to spend time with you alone to make up for the days we were apart that's why." I answered and I lay next to her.

"That would be great! I can't wait Jk!" she said.

"I can't wait too baby!" I answered and I moved my face to hers.

I looked at her beautiful round eyes that I missed so much. Pulling her body more to mine, our lips met and we started kissing.

Lalisa is getting good at responding with my kisses. Her tongue moves now unlike before and I can tell she also wants to feel me too just like how I feel.

Her hand moved to my zipper which surprised me. So I hold her hand to stop her.

"Baby not yet." I said to her mouth as our foreheads are touching.

"Why?" she asked. Disappointment is clear in her eyes but not yet.

So my baby wants to be fucked now huh? My mind smirked at the thought.

She just don't know how much I want to touch her.

"Because I want it to be in a special place." I said and she just rolled her eyes.

"Do you want Jimin and Taehyung to hear you scream my name?" I smirked and she covered her mouth probably from the embarrassment.

"No, I don't want that!" she shyly said.

"Then we will do it tomorrow in Jeju. There you can scream my name anyway you want." I said and she nodded.

I pulled her body more to mine as we take a nap.

Not caring if we are still wearing our shoes on her bed.



Author's Note

So smuts are cumming.

I mean coming.

Goodbye innocent Lalisa



The First Sex

Jungkook's POV

"Come out now, let me see baby?" I excitedly wait for Lalisa to emerge from the bathroom.

I am now patiently waiting in the hotel's bedroom wearing just a small towel on my waist.

I told her to wear the pink set of lingerie which we bought and now she's too shy to come out of the bathroom.

"Jungkook, I'm shy." I hear her say.

I smiled.

This will be that last hour before she finally loses her innocence and I'm so excited my cock is nearly exploding from the anticipation.

"Come on baby. Let me see.. It's just the two of us so don't be shy." I said with a gentle voice. I don't want to scare her and make her run away from me.

I'm honestly so horny right now. Just imagining having sex with the love of my life and to add the excitement up, she's a virgin.

Then, she started walking out of the bathroom, my jaw dropped open as my eyes widened at the sight.

Fucking goddess in front of my eyes.

Calm down cock please calm down! I hold myself back from pinning her to the bathroom door.

My cock is pulsing as the sight and my breathing is getting heavier. I can't wait any longer.

Who will not be when she's wearing this.

"Baby, come closer..." I said. My chest feels so heavy now and I think It will be hard to stop my self from getting rough on her.

I held her hand and made her lay on the bed.

She looks like an angel and she doesn't even the know the pain I will cause her later.

"Jungkook, what should I do?" she asked me unsure of what she will do.

I want her to suck my dick of course but no. This is her day.

I just want to praise her body.

"Just relax there okay? I'm the one in charge of our first." I said as I move between her legs.

"First?" she asked.

"Yes first. We're gonna do it tonight for I guess 5 times?" I asked her permission and she just nodded.

Of course she will agree. She doesn't know yet how tiring sex is.

I removed the towel from my waist and let my cock slap my abdomen.

I saw the fear on Lalisa's eyes as she watch my monster cock which is now so hard that the veins are visible from the overflowing blood.

"Jungkook I'm really scared." she said as she close her long legs. She always closes her legs like that when she's scared.

"Don't be."

I lay on top of her and pressed my lips to her soft ones. I slide my tongue in and pushed it inside. My lips and tongue began massaging hers. We kissed slowly just warming each others up.

Her arms moved around my torso hugging me which makes my chest pressed her clothed breast.

My cock is also pressed in her stomach now.

"Hmmmnn..." she moaned in my mouth when I massaged her boobs. I ran my tongue on her neck down to her chest. Then I stopped in front of her breast. I tried to unhook her bra and she helped me by arching her back.

I successfully removed her bra revealing her perky breast. My mouth sucked her nipples and it swelled from the suction while I play with the other one massaging it groping it and playing with the nipple by pinching.

"Ahhhh" she let out a cry when I pinched it too hard.

"Sorry" I grinned. She must've hurt from the pinching but I can't help it. Her nipples are cute and pink and I just want to play with them so much.

I pulled away and licked my lips as I look at her. Her eyes mirrors the hunger and lust in my eyes. She's horny too and I bet she doesn't even realizes that.

My fingers travelled to her core and I realized she's already wet. But not the kind of wet that is ready for my cock.

So I parted her legs and kneeled in font of her. I moved the beads of pearls of her lingerie to the side.

(A/N: just imagine she's wearing this.)

Her eyes widened when I lifted her hips to meet my face. Her pussy is now in air as I lap it with my tongue. My hand holds her by her ass cheeks to balance her weight.

"Hmmmnn...It feels so good Jungkook" she moans everytime I would suck her clit. I placed her hips back on the bed and pushed my finger in. Her hips moved away from my fingers but I continued pumping her pussy with my finger. She moaned more when I

pushed another finger in. I began sucking her clit as I move my fingers inside her in a circular motion. Now my face is soaked with her juices so I begin licking her out.

I looked at her her face while concentrating on pleasuring her. She looks helpless as she shuts her eyes from the pleasure.

"Jungkook! I can't.... Ahhhhhhhhhhhhh" she screamed when she finally reached her orgasm.

Her hips shook at the pleasure but I steadied her with my hands and continued licking her pussy clean.

She's too sweet and now my cock begs me to finally enter her.

"Lalisa, I can't wait any longer." I say as I kneel between her thighs.

She's still weak from her orgasm but I don't want to wait for her recovery anymore.

"Go ahead." she said weakly. Her eyes are almost closed.

I held my throbbing cock in my hand and I guided it on her opening.

"You ready?" I asked excitedly.

This is it.

I can finally bury myself in her.

I'm guilty that I'm gonna have to take her innocence away. But I want her so bad.

She nodded for me to continue.

Then with full force, I pushed the head of my cock in.

Fuck!

Lalisa's eyes widened and her mouth opened.

And there she goes screaming at the top of her lungs.

"Jungkook!!!" she gripped my shoulder away as I try to push my cock in.

"Baby please.." I plead as her eyes water in pain.

"Jungkook stop! It hurts!!!" she begged and she tried to push me farther but I can't. The head of my cock is finally in and I can't take it out anymore.

"Sorry!" I said and I pushed my cock more which caused her to squeak in pain. Her face twisted as tears fell down on her face.

I'm so sorry!

But she feels so good. Not even half of my cock is buried but I feel like I'm gonna cum at how tight she is.

"You're so tight baby!" I said but she continues to cry. I pity her for the pain I cause her but there's no stopping now. Her nails dug my back but it only adds to the pleasure I feel.

My cock is being choked by her tight virgin walls and few more pushes, I can finally get in.

"Jungkook please pull it back. I can't. It hurts please stop!" she

begged again but I shook my head.

"I love you Lalisa!" I said kissing her lips while preparing my hips for a final thrust.

Finally, I pushed the rest of my cock in earning a scream from her but I kissed her again silencing her screams.

And Oh fucking goodness it feels so good to be burried like this. My cock is in Utopia and it begs to stay there forever.

I looked at Lalisa who is now sweating. Her bangs is wet and her eyes are full of tears.

Poor girl.

But I have no energy to be gentle, now that I got a taste of how great she is.

I pulled my bloody cock all the way out and she whined at the loss. But I quickly slammed it back that she has to grab the sheets for the surprise comeback.

"Fucking tight!!!" I say through gritted teeth as I thrust my hips in her.

"It still hurts!" she said but I just kept on pounding my cock inside her.

"Ughhhhhh!!! You feel so good baby!" my voice is nkW hoarse from the sensation.

Fucking her mercilessly, She wrapped her arms around me as I move faster and harder.

I can feel her juices and her blood in my thigh and it just adds to the pleasurable feeling. Having someone bled for you means a lot. Lalisa loves me so much to give this to me.

I kept on pounding creating sexy and helpless noises from her mouth. I can't help but moan her name too over and over again.

"Baby cum with me" I said and and I focused on rubbing her g-spot everytime my cock would push in.

With few more hard thrust and we both screamed each other's name, we finally reached our climax. I spilled my cum inside her as her pussy pulsed crazily around my cock. Her walls gripped my cock holding it in place.

I promised myself I will try withdrawal but I can't. I'm too lost in the feeling and I can't control my body anymore.

Lalisa closed her eyes as her body finally stopped from shaking.

I just kept my self burried in her spilling every bit of cum in me inside her womb.

I smiled as I wipe the sweat on her sweaty bangs.

This is the best sex I've ever experienced. But I wonder if she feels the same.

"Baby?" I tried to wake her up but she seems to fall asleep.

"I love you!" I gave her lips a quick peck. And I pulled my cock

out.

Shit!

The hotel cleaners are gonna kill me!

The sheets looks like it was from a murder scene as Lalisa's blood stained them.

"What am I gonna do?" I asked my self in panick.

Later I just decided to sleep with her. I'll just take care of it tomorrow.

I thought I can fuck her at least five times now but it seems she easily gets tired.

I snuggled beside her and covered our naked bodies with the soft sheets.

I just can't wait for another day of love making with her.



Author's Note

So, I chose Jungkook's POV in the end because if it was Lisa's, she would just be screaming the whole time.

Btw, I apologize again for the bad smut.



The Day After

Jungkook's POV

Never have I thought that our first sex will end in a hospital clinic.

Yes. It's my fault for being too rough. When I woke up, Lalisa was still bleeding which was weird. I thought she just got her period but she say it's not. She told me she doesn't feel good and her thing hurts so much.

At first I tried to shrugged it off but she begged me to bring her to the clinic for a check up.

And now, we are inside an obgyn's clinic as the doctor observes her.

I really hate the fact that a male doctor is checking her. Of course he is professional but I want to be the only person who can see her thing down there.

"Mr. Jeon, you're her boyfriend correct?" The doctor called my attention when he got back to sit on his chair. I leaned closely to listen to him.

Lalisa is still lying on the examination bed and her eyes are closed as if she's unconscious.

While I face the doctor in front of his office table.

"Yes, doctor I am her boyfriend." I answered and he nodded.

"Is this her first time having sex?" he asked as he look over the paper on his table.

"Uhm yes.." I answered nervously. I really don't want to talk about it with other person because it's awkward.

"I see." he muttered.

"Is there a problem? Is she still bleeding?" I asked. I'm so worried about her right now.

What if she loses all her blood?

What if she dies?

It would be embarrassing if the cause of her death is my dick.

"Luckily, it stopped already." he said and he stopped writing to finally focus on me.

"Thank God!" I said.

"Mr. Jeon, may I ask how long is your penis when it is in it's maximum length?" he asked and I looked at him.

What the fuck? Is he gay? But he looks straight.

"Uhm... Around 9?" I answered unsurely.

"Okay." he said then he wrote something on the paper. It is probably Lalisa's Medical record.

Wait! is he writing my cock's length on her medical record?

That's weird?

"Is there any problem doctor?" I asked him curiously.

"You see Mr. Jeon, your girlfriend's vaginal depth is only 7 inches." he explained but my brows furrowed.

"So?"

"So, that means your penis is too long for her which caused too much stressed on her woman part." he said.

What the? I didn't know there's a limit to the depth of girls? I thought it goes all the way to the throat. My ex girlfriends are not even complaining.

"So what should I do now?" I asked him worriedly. Don't tell me I need to chop my cock off?

"Mr. Jeon, 9 subtracted by 7 is?" he asked.

"2?" I answered. Why are we doing math now? Is he on drugs?

"Correct. That means the next time you have sex. You need to leave the remaining 2 inches or more of your penis out of her vagina so that it won't hurt for her." He explained.

"Are you serious? I don't want that! I want to burry my--" I stopped talking when I realized the look on his face.

"Okay fine!" I said.

"Please take this seriously. Or your girlfriend will never enjoy having sex with you." He said.

"But why did she bled too much?" I asked.

"Well aside from tearing her hymen. You also caused laceration inside her. So avoid being rough and be gentle next time." he answered.

I looked at Lalisa's direction guiltily.

My poor baby suffered from my roughness.

I should've been gentle.

After check up, I help her get back to the hotel. She's really having hard time walking and I feel so guilty now.

"I'm so sorry." I apologized to her when we got back inside our hotel room.

"It's okay Jungkook." she said as she lie on the bed.

"Does it still hurt?" I asked glancing on her crotch.

"Yes it does but I think it will get better soon." she said.

I walked to her to lay on the bed too.

"I love you baby. And I'm so sorry!"

"I love you too Jk!"

The next day, my plan in going to the beach was pushed back

because Lalisa is still limp.

Instead I took care of her. I feed her with the hotel's best food, I would carry her to the balcony to let her enjoy the view of the see.

I settled for kiss. We almost kissed the hole day and it's the happiest even if we cannot have sex.

The day were filled with laughters, teasing, kissing, cuddles and promises.

Promises to be together forever.



Author's Note

I always observe that a reader would stop voting on a smut chapter, then the reader will continue voting on the next chapter after an hour or so.

I find it really funny and weird at the same time.

If you get what I'm thinking.



The Secret Wedding

Lalisa's POV

"Just one? I promise I'll be gentle."

"No!"

"Please baby?" he pouted as he beg me to have sex with him.

But I just refused over and over again.

"Not yet Jungkook please understand." I said and he guiltily nodded.

"Okay, what do you want to do now?" he asked as we cuddle in bed.

It is finally our 4th and last day at Jeju Island together. And sadly, we had to spend the last 2 days inside the hotel because of what Jungkook did to me.

On the first day of our stay, we planned to have our first sex together. But it didn't end well. To be honest, he got me traumatized because of the pain. It was really unimaginable to be ripped like that. And I admit it also feels good but the pleasure is not even half compared to the pain.

He got my sex sore for two days and I wasn't able to walk straight because of that. We had to just stay inside to make me recover which is a waste of time. We could've enjoyed Jeju better.

Jungkook's cock is really big and long and the doctor said he shouldn't put everything in which I agree because I can literally felt his cock hit my organs.

It was a really terrifying experience but funny at the same time. I could still remember Jungkook's colorless face when we got to the clinic.

So that was *sex*?

For me sex is not good. I don't like it at all and I think I don't want to do it anytime sooner.

"Baby?" he asked again. Cutting me from my thoughts.

"Uhm.. I want to travel around. Let's go sight seeing before we go back." I suggested and he gave me he nodded excitedly.

"Of course! Let's go! I want to show you something" he said.

We both tour around the wonderful island of Jeju. We played at the beach, we ate at the local restaurants, we laughed, we kissed, we enjoyed our last day of vacation together.

Later in the afternoon, Jungkook suggested to go on Jeju Herb

Dongsan and I agreed with him because he said it's a nice place.

When we got there, there are no people around.

It was already 5 in the afternoon and the sun is almost setting.

"Baby, let's go there." he said pointing to a white bell tower between a wide pink muhly.

"Why--?" I didn't finished my question when he started pulling me to the tower.

"Oh my God! It's beatiful here!" I said when I looked around the wide pink muhly. The color of the setting sun brings life to the scenery.

I started walking around looking at the place when Jungkook spoke.

"Lalisa, let's go marry" Jungkook said out of nowhere.

I looked at his direction to see him looking at me intently with his hands inside his side pockets.

"What? But we're just 19" I started getting nervous by the way he looks at me. He looks so serious and I hope he's just joking like he usually does.

"No, I mean let's marry each other secretly. No priest, no families no guests, just the two of us and whoever it is up there that is watching us." he said as he walk near me closing our gap. I'm literally blushing at how cute his idea is. And so I nodded shyly.

Of course I want to marry him. He's the only one I want to be with. I love him with all my heart so I would totally marry him on a heartbeat.

"I'm glad you agree. I'm sorry if you found this corny but this is not a real church, you are not wearing a wedding dress and this may not be a real wedding ring--" he said as he pull two silver rings from his pocket. My eyes widened because of it. I wonder how he got that?

"But I promise you, one day I will marry you. And everything will be real. It will be with real marriage documents and a priest, pastor or whatever will be there. And when that time comes, this couple ring will be replaced with a real wedding ring, you will wear the best and the most beautiful wedding dress and it would be on the biggest church... I mean I would marry you in every churches that we can see. It will be the best wedding for every people to see. But for now let's start it here Lalisa..Will you please marry me?" he said full of love and I feel the butterflies on my stomach dancing around.

For me, this is the sweetest thing he has ever said and I feel like my body is melting and I can't breath because of his words.

"I want to marry you too Jk" I answered and he smiled so sweetly. The best bunny smile I've ever seen.



Author's Note

So Unlike the other book, this story will not reach a hundred chapter.

Sorry for the short update by the way.



The Vows

Lalisa's POV

"Lalisa, Limario whatever your real name is." he said as he chuckled. "I want you to wear this ring as the sign of my love and a promise that I will love you forever, I will take care of you, And I will always be there for you. I'm sorry for the wrong things I've done and I hope that you forgive me for that. But I will never hurt you on purpose. Lalisa, You are my happiness, you are my home and you will always be the missing part of me. And without you I find it hard to breathe. Thank you for making me feel how loving a person is. I never actually believed in love until I found you. And with that, I promise I will make you happy. And I also promise to be gentle next time." he said and he winked on the word gentle. "I promise I will treat you like a queen from this day forward. I love you Lalisa." he pushed the ring on my ring finger. Then he kissed my finger wearing the ring.

I noticed he is now crying. And the sight of his happy tears because of the vow warms my heart.

He turned his eyes on me as he waited for my vow.

I breathed in and out first before I start my words.

"Jungkook, wear this ring as the sign of my love and a sign of our memories together. And on those times that we were together, I want to thank you for the happiness you brought me. Jungkook, I love you with all of my heart and I'm willing to sacrifice everything for you. You may not understand it yet. Who I really am, where I came from but this is the real me. And the real me loves you and will always love you. Jungkook I promise you that I will never forget my love for you as long as I live. I love you Jungkook." I said as I wear the ring on his ring finger.

I can't help but cry too. I'm too emotional for this.

I just really feel happy that I married him even if it's not a real one.

"Thank you Lalisa!" he engulfed me in a tight embrace as we are now both crying because of our vows.

I pulled away and kissed his lips.

We kissed in front of the bell tower which serves us our church.

We kissed in front of the pink muhly which serves us our guest.

We kissed wearing the couple rings which serves us our witnesses.

And he whoever is up there who is watching us.

I really hope one day, we can marry each other officially.



Author's Note

Prepare your tissues 🤧🤧🤧

The Plan

Lalisa's POV

After our secret wedding, Jungkook and I walked back to the hotel where we are staying.

We were laughing all the way because Jungkook teases the way I walk. He said I really walk weird which is his fault.

"That's why I will never do it with you again!" I huffed but he's still laughing.

"But we just got married and the first thing couples does is to make love."

"I don't care. I will never do it again!"

"Please Mrs. Jeon?" he grinned.

"What did you just call me?" I'm really blushing at the moment. Did he just call me Mrs. Jeon?

"Mrs. Jeon. You're my wife now right? So you will take my name. From now on, I will call you Mrs. Jeon." he announced as he rests his arm on my shoulder.

It makes me really happy. Imagining this. Imagining like I am his wife. But I know we got a long way to go. We still got more problems to face.

Our problems are not yet over. My life is still in danger that is why I cannot tell him about me yet. Grandmother asked me to keep my identity a secret first. And she still needs to see if Jungkook really deserves me.

While Jungkook has his problem with Tzuyu. Now, I wonder if they were meeting while I was in Thailand? I don't want to know. It will really hurt if they are still seeing each other. But what can I do? That's his parents plan and I need to let them be.

"Baby, you crying?" He asked.

"No I'm not."

"Yes you are! Why are you crying? Did I say something bad? Don't you like it when I call you Mrs. Jeon?" he asked. Worry is clear in his voice.

"No, it's not that. I'm just... I'm just happy." I partly lied.

Of course I am happy but I am hurt too. I'm really jealous of them right now. Why can't I just have him all by myself. He's the only one that I want. I don't care about the crown anymore. All I need is him but it's so hard to call him as my own.

"I'm happy too." he smiled then he held my hand. Intertwining my fingers with his.

"Jungkook?"

"Yes baby?"

"Uhm... What's... Nevermind." I chickened out.

"What is it? Tell me"

"What's your plan with Tzuyu?" I asked and the smile on his face turned into a frown.

"Why are we talking about her? This day is ours." he answered, clenching his jaw.

"I'm just wondering if you would still meet her?" I asked nervously. I don't want to hear his answer but I also want to have a slight idea on how they are doing.

What if my grandmother finds out about them? She will surely take me back to Thailand and I can tell she will not let us see each other again.

"I just don't want to talk about it Lalisa. You know that I love you. And I don't love her." he said pushing the conversation away.

"But, I need to know your plan, so that I can adjust."

"Adjust?" he asked raising a brow.

"Yes, adjust. Like how many days you will spend with her and how many day you're gonna spend with me." I answered and his eyes widened.

"What are you saying? Are you suggesting that I will have a scheduled meeting with both of you?" he asked raising his voice.

"You don't want us to meet you at the same time right? If she finds out about us, she will tell his father and your father's--"

"Stop right there Lalisa! I will never do that to you! I will only spend time with you and not with anyone else!"

"Jungkook, Your father's position is at risk here! I don't want to be the cause of his loss in the coming election." I explained and he sighed.

"You're making this hard for me!"

"Do you think it's not hard for me too?"

"I hate this! This is supposed to be our day but we're talking about cheating!" he almost yelled frustratedly.

"Jungkook, if you meet her, I will try to understand. As your imaginary wife, I need to support you right?" I said as I squeeze his hand.

"You're unbelievable Lalisa! How can you let me just do that!"

"Because I love you. And even if it hurts, I need to make a little sacrifice right." I said giving him a small smile. "I will be fine Jungkook." I lied even if it breaks my heart.

"You are the best wife in the world Lalisa! I promise this will just

be until the election, and after that everything will be okay!" he said and he pulled me for a hug.

"I know Jungkook." I answered on his chest.

So that night we planned everything. He said he will try to be civil with Tzuyu and he promised that no intimate activities will happen between them. I still have to act like I'm not his girl whenever they are around so that she will not create any drama.

The pain inside my chest will just last until election and the election is within the next month.

I promised him also that I will not cause a scene to ruin their family's reputation.

I want his parents to like me too that's why I need to behave and set aside my feelings.

Even if they act like couple in front of my face.



Author's Note

Sad



The Night Together

Lalisa's PoV

I woke up feeling someone placing gentle kisses on my back.

"Jungkook?" I asked. I realized I'm lying on my stomach and his lips are tracing kisses on my spine line.

It's still dark and the only source of light inside our room is from the moon illuminating its light through the window.

"Sorry for waking you baby" I could feel his warm breath on my nape when he moved my hair to the side.

I don't know how but I'm already naked. Maybe Jungkook managed to strip me off without me waking.

"Jungkook, what are you doing?" I asked when he slide his hand beneath me to cup my sex.

"I want you." he answered. I tried to sit but he just pushed me back to the bed. May back is still turned on him and he continued giving me small gentle kisses on my shoulders.

Now my body is responding to him too. I can feel the thing between my thigh is getting wetter as he suck my neck while pushing his finger inside me.

His fingers feels so good. And I guess I need to give sex another try.

Maybe it won't hurt that much this time.

"hmmnnnn... Jungkook I want to see you." I said and he turned me around. Now I'm laying on my back facing him.

I noticed he was naked too. He is hovering on top of me. His eyes were hungry and I know he badly wants me.

I looked down to see that nothing covers his body and I'm really amazed by his perfection.

He leaned to press catch my lips. Pressing his soft lips to mine as his huge manhood brushes my belly button.

We kissed slowly, passionately and full of love. And by the way he kisses me, I can tell that Jungkook wants to be gentle his time.

He is now my imaginary husband and I want to pleasure him on our first night together...

As husband and wife.

His lips travelled south, kissing both of my breast. Down to my stomach then down to my wet core.

I let out continues moans when he started kissing me down there.

His lips and tongue never ceased to create magics of sensation and I really love it everytime he does this. His tongue pushed inside me, flicking it inside that I had to grip his hair pulling his face more to my pussy.

"It feels so good Jk!" I say with eyes shut.

He sucked a part of my pussy which sends more pleasurable sensation down there. I'm now melting from his touch.

I feel like I'm getting more wet as time goes by but he still continuous to lick my wetness with his tongue.

"Jungkook I'm going crazy!!!" I kept moaning his name over and over until everything blacks out.

My back arched as my legs felt numb. I felt strings of tingling sensation and I couldn't stop my body from shaking. I don't know what happened and how it happened but it's a euphoric feeling I would always want and crave for from him. My brain sent signals saying that I'm happy. Whatever you call this. I guess it's orgasm they call it. It's the best feeling my body has tasted.

I feel so flushed after it and Jungkook crawles back to meet my face.

"Have a taste of how sweet you are baby." he said before owning my lips once again. I can really taste myself through his tongue and I suck it for more.

My fear kicked in when I felt Jungkook's cock rubbed my cunt. He is readying himself and I gulped at the memory of the pain he caused the first time we had sex.

I just hope it won't hurt just like the last time.

"I Promise I'll be gentle." he said.

I replied with a nod as I wrap my arms around his neck. I closed my eyes so hard waiting for his cock to tear me again.

With one gentle push, the head of his cock moved in. I almost hit the headboard from shock.

It hurts. It hurts again. But I just decided to bite my lip to stop myself from screaming.

"You're so tight, I can't move!"

He slowly pushed his cock inside. I can tell he is really having a hard time controlling himself from pushing all the way in. But he manage to just let half of his cock from penetrating.

Then he began thrusting in a slow paced motion. My sex hurts everytime but after few slow pushes, it started feeling good. The way his veiny cock rubbed my pussy walls sent me sexual satisfaction. Unimaginable pleasure it is.

Soon my groans were replaced by moans. It feels so good. His cock feels so good inside me.

"Jungkook?" I asked as he keep thrusting slowly.

"hmmnn... Baby?" he answered as his face rests on my neck.

"Push everything in!" I begged.

"Fuck! Are you sure?" he asked as he continue thrusting.

"Yes, give me everything!" I say and with that he pulled his cock out of me. Making me feel empty.

"Are you really su--"

"I am. Please push everything in!" I commanded.

"I'm so sorry for this but I won't hold myself back now!" he said then slammed his 9-inched cock inside me. Earning a scream from my mouth.

My eyes watered in pain but I embraced the soreness inside me. His cock hit my insides so hard and it hurts so bad.

"Are you okay?" he asked. He's not yet moving but his cock is now burried inside me.

"Go on. Please move." I said holding my tears.

It hurts as fuck!

But it feels so good too.

He slowly pulled his cock out and push it back again.

His mouth started doing sexy and hot noises in my ears. Satisfied from penetrating me with his whole length.

After series of slow thrusts, his movements increased in speed.

Moments later, he was already fucking me faster.

He keeps on telling me that my tight pussy feels so good in him and the feeling is mutual because his cock makes me go crazy too.

"Let's cum together baby!" he said.

"Hmnnnn!" I can't answer him. I feel like I'm going to explode now.

"Fuck Lisa! Cum now!!!" he commanded. And with that, we both reached our climax.

He spilled his hot liquid cum inside me and I just welcomed them all while I'm having my earth-shattering orgasm.

It feels so good.

Sex is good.

Jungkook plopped down above me. His cock is still burried. Inside and I just let him in.

We were breathing heavily. Catching our breaths from exhaustion.

"Holy shit!" he pulled out his cock quickly when he realized something.

"What is it?" I asked. I almost stood from the bed from his reaction.

"I came inside you again!" he realized. He covered his mouth while his eyes widened as if he committed a crime.

"Calm down, we're past the seventh day." I said.

"But I came inside you the last time? it was not yet--"

"I took an emergency pill after that. Don't worry Jungkook." I explained and he was able to breath.

"How did you know about emergency pills?" he asked curiously.

"Jennie gave me." I chuckled. I know he will be surprised because of this information.

"Jennie what? You mean my sister Jennie?" He asked as if it's impossible.

"Yes, she offered it to me to solve our problem"

"I never thought my sister will be that useful. And supportive." he said smiling too.

"When did she gave you emergency pills?" he asked.

"The day Tzuyu asked her for a condom." I answered and I felt my heart was stabbed again at the memory.

"Shit! I'm sorry for reminding you about that day but I promise nothing happened between us." he explained guiltily.

"Let's not talk about it." I said sadly.

"But you left me because of that. I hurt you." he said and I shook my head.

"It's not important, at least I was able to go home to Thailand to--"

"Thailand? You went to Thailand?" He asked as if he solved a mystery.

Shit!

"Uhm.. I mean yes. I went there. Luwakar is part of Thailand." I lied and I hope he believes me.

"I thought Luwakar was a country?"

"Did I say that? It's a province in Thailand. It's not a country." Well I have to lie properly now. Grandmother is going to kill me if I mess her plans up.

"So that makes sense." he said.

"What makes sense?" I nervously asked. I hope he hasn't put the pieces of puzzles together yet.

"You are friends with that Mario. The ugly Prime Minister of Thailand because you live in the same country." he said proudly as if he finally answered the mystery in me.

"Uhm yes." I answered.

"And your father is the mayor so your father maybe introduced you two together." he guessed happily.

Oh my poor bunny husband! I'm so sorry for lying.

Instead of saying sorry, I just silenced his mouth with a kiss to stop him from asking more questions.

But the kissed turned into another round of love making in the end.



Author's Note

I really lost the will to write now. I need to improve my writing skills first before I continue writing stories.

**I feel like I'm not giving my readers the justice they deserve.
Cries.**

The Ruined Date

Jungkook's POV

"Baby, please feed me" I pouted at Lisa who is now sitting on my lap.

"Jungkook let go of me. I need to sit properly!" she tried to wiggle out of my embrace but I just held her body more to make her sit on my lap.

I can't help it. I want her to baby me. I want her to take care of me.

We are now back in Seoul eating peacefully at the dorm with Jimin and Taehyung.

"Eww.. stop that Jungkook. It doesn't fit you and look, Lalisa is uncomfortable to sit on you lap!" Jimin scrunched his nose at us but I don't care. The more they are pissed, the happier I am. I want them to see that she's mine now. She's my wife now right?

She's all mine and I want them to drool.

Yeah I'm evil.

"Just eat on your own Jk, you're not a baby anymore!" Taehyung said while focusing on his food as if avoiding us.

I smirked.

"You're just jealous because she is Mrs. Jeon now!"

"Mrs.Jeon?" Jimin asked.

"Jungkook let me sit on my chair!" Lalisa is still struggling to get away from sitting on my lap.

As if I will let her sit beside Taehyung.

"Yes she is Mrs. Jeon now." I proudly announced.

"Mrs.Park will be better." Jimin smirked and he looked at Lalisa to give her a wink.

"Don't listen to him babe, Mrs. Jeon is the better." I said.

"Mrs. Kim will fit her best" Taehyung joked and I frowned.

I don't know why. There's something wrong with what I feel.

Why do I feel like it will be real?

Lalisa as Mrs.Kim?

Nah! That's impossible.

She loves me and I'm sure of that.

I just shrugged my feelings off and continued teasing Lalisa.

She is now laughing so hard in my arms as I kiss her face repeatedly.

And I'm sure my baby will marry me. She will never be Mrs. Kim or Mrs. Park!

She will be Mrs. Jeon!

"Lalisa, let's hang out later after your class at Ladium." I whispered on her ear.

"Where are we going?" she asked excitedly.

"Let's just eat out on a restaurant and watch movies." I said.

"Really? I want to watch a romantic movie Jk!"

"Yes we will, so call me once you're done with your class so that I can pick you on your school." I said and she hugged me.

"Thank you so much! I'm so excited!" she happily said.

3rd Person's POV

After Lalisa's class at Yonsei, she ran to the comfort room to change her men's clothes to her girl clothes.

She needs to change quickly for her class at Ladium. That's why she's in a hurry.

While busily changing inside one of the cubicles, she didn't noticed the girl who entered the next cubicle.

Tzuyu's POV

Today I planned on surprising Jungkook by coming here in their school.

He's avoided me for days and his friends told me that he went on a vacation in Jeju Island.

I know and I can feel it that Lalisa is with him. He really likes that bitch and now I plan to level up my game.

That girl surprisingly dodged my first attack.

I don't know how but even if my dad called the school to kick her out, the President refused to do so saying that it needs more evidence for them to take some action.

Like bitch? I am evidence!

I'm so frustrated. I need to do something else.

I need to *break* them apart.

I was walking to where Jungkook's classroom is when I passed by the comfort rooms. I stopped on my track when someone grabbed my attention.

Limario?

Why is he in a hurry? And why is he carrying such heavy bag? I looked around hoping to see Jk because they are roommates and friends but I can see that he is alone.

By the way he acts, I can smell something fishy.

So I secretly followed him.

He entered a girls's comfort room which was really weird.

Although Yonsei is an all-boy school, they have girls comfort room for their lady staffs.

I slowly entered the comfort room too and good thing no one is around except him. I can see his shoe on one of the cubicles so I entered the next one.

I don't know why I'm doing this but my curiosity is killing me.

Soon I heard the door opened meaning he got out.

When I peeked on the door, he is no longer there. Instead, a girl is now standing in front of the mirror.

Wait.

She looks familiar.

Lalisa?

I was surprised that she's holding the same bag as Limario a while ago.

And it dawned on me.

What the hell?

Limario is Lalisa.

But why? Why is she doing this? Why is she taking schools at both universities?

Now I hate her more!

She fooled us all.

Even Jk.

Wait! Limario and Jk are roommates right? That means all these time Jk was sharing a room with a girl?

So that makes sense.

That maybe the reason why they met.

Jungkook must have known her secret from the start.

I noticed Lalisa is now leaving. I know she will go to Ladium because we have a class at 4.

I followed her to our school and when I got inside our classroom, she was already talking with Jennie, Chae and Jisoo.

I really hate her!

Do these girls even know that she's a lying bitch?

I wonder how Jungkook would feel if he knows that I know his girl's precious little secret.

I smirked at the thought.

Now, I can have this to my advantage.

Just wait and see Lalisa.

Jungkook's POV

Lisa and I planned to have a date at 5pm after her class at Ladium. It's not even 5 but I'm already here in front of their school patiently waiting for her.

The way she expressed her excitement a while ago makes me really want to surprise her more.

I want this day to be perfect. So I already reserved us a table at a restaurant where my family loves to eat. I also bought her two

tickets of pure cringy romantic movies. Even though I hate it, I know she will love it so I will try to watch it for her.

Imagine the surprise I felt when Tzuyu came knocking on my car window instead of Lalisa.

Shit!

What is she doing here?

I looked around hoping not to see Lalisa yet.

I don't want her to see me talking with Tzuyu.

I quickly unlocked the car door for her to get in.

Her smile gives me creeps as if she's got another crazy thing going on in her mind.

"Surprise!" she said happily when she sat on the passenger seat.

"Was your class done?" I asked nervously while looking around.

"Why so tense? Are you scared to be seen by Lalisa?" she asked.

"No!" I lied. I really am scared right now. I don't know what she's planning to do now.

"Don't be scared. She's still at the classroom, the professor is talking with her. So you should treat me for the mean time."

"Why would I treat you?" She's acting really weird.

"Because I'm happy I found out Lalisa's little secret. Or should I say..... Limario?"

Fuck!

She knows.

She knows already about her secret.

What do I do now?

"What do you want?" I asked. If I could only strangle her.

"Nothing hard. I just want you to follow everything that I say." she said while licking her lips.

"And if I don't?"

"Well I have no choice but to expose to the world that she's a fraud. A lying bitch who fooled two different universities with her great acting skills." she chuckled while I tensed.

My heart is beating so fast at the anxiety.

Jimin's words were right. Tzuyu will surely find out. And she will use it to blackmail me.

"Please don't do that please.." I almost cried begging.

"Oh my poor little baby, of course I won't. I'm not that evil. Now just be a good boy and follow me. Ditch your meet up with her tonight and treat me on dinner instead. I'm so hungry." she fluttered her lashes on my while she cling on my arm.

I breathed in and out deeply.

I'm so sorry Lalisa. I will just explain everything to you when I get back.

And with that, I drove my car far from the school heading to the

restaurant where Lalisa and I should meet.



Author's Note

I know you're pissed but wait till the tables turn.



**By the way thank you for the compliments and comments.
I love you all.**

The Sad Princess

Lalisa's POV

I tried calling Jungkook's number again. It's been 30 minutes but he's not here yet.

He said he will pick me up at 5 but not a shadow of him showed yet. I tried calling Jimin if he's at the dorm but he said Jungkook left already.

I wonder where he is. I hope he's fine and safe. I'm afraid if something happened to him.

So I called him again for the 31st time but he's still not answering.

"Where are you?" I muttered as I rub the couple ring he gave me.

Maybe he went home at the Blue Palace?

I dialled Jennie's number to check.

"Hello?" Jennie answered from the other line.

"Jennie, is Jungkook with you?" I asked.

"No he's not. Why Lalisa?" she asked. I can hear the worry in her voice.

"We're supposed to meet here at Ladium but he's not here yet." I said.

"I'm sorry but I don't know. Why don't you go home and just wait for his call Lalisa? Maybe he just forgot that you're supposed to meet." She said.

"Maybe.. Thank you Jennie" I said and I ended the call.

I looked around the the street to see if any familiar car is coming but to my dismay, he seemed to really forgot about our date.

My feet is aching and I really want to go home now but what if he's just late and he came here without seeing me?

I guess I just have to wait a little more. Jungkook prepared this date for me and I don't want his effort to go to waste.

I sat on the bench near the school gate and tried calling him again. I didn't noticed an hour had passed already

It's already dark so I decided to just go home. I started walking to the dorm because it's not that far. But the dark sky started pouring heavy rain while I'm on my way. I ran to avoid myself from getting wet but I see nothing to hide from.

"Princess?" I heard someone call as a car stopped beside me.

"Kunpimook?"

"Oh my God! It's really you! Why are you walking in the rain princess?" he hopped out of his car and lead me to the door of the passenger seat.

"Thank you!" I said when I was finally inside.

"Why are walking in the rain Princess? The queen would kill me if she knows this!" he kept on scolding me while we were on our way to the dorm but I told him to never tell my grandmother about it. If she knows the reason why I waited there, she would hate Jungkook for sure.

When we arrived at the dorm, Jungkook's car is not yet here.

I'm so sad right now that I want to cry. But I'm sure Jungkook has his reason for not showing.

"Oh my God!!! What happened to her?" Taehyung asked when he saw me at the front door with Kunpimook.

"Taehyung, please take care of her. Her clothes are drenched and she needs to change." Kunpimook said.

"I will!" Taehyung panicked while pulling me inside.

"I can manage Taehyung. Thank you Kunpimook for driving me." I said. And Kunpimook took his leave.

Taehyung ran inside and when he got back he wrapped me in a towel. Guiding me inside my room.

"Go and change Pranpriya. I'll just get you a water." he said and he left me there to change.

I feel tired from waiting for Jungkook and so after changing to my pajamas, I lay on my bed to sleep.

Taehyung's POV

When I got back to her room, Pranpriya was on the verge of sleeping.

"Priya, drink this first or you'll get sick." I said.

Good thing, she sat back to drink the water.

"What happened? Where is Jungkook?" I asked.

I'm aware that they are supposed to meet now for a date. I heard them talk about it when we had our breakfast.

"I don't know." she answered. Her eyes are red and I can tell she's about to cry but she managed to smile at me instead.

"Don't pretend like you're okay when you're not. You can cry Pranpriya." I said with a gentle voice.

I don't want to see her cry but I also don't want her to keep it in.

I don't know what happened with Jungkook but I'm sure it concerns Tzuyu. And I hate him for hurting Pranpriya because of that selfish girl. He should know how to protect her. If it's only me she chose, I will never let her cry like this.

Pranpriya started sobbing. And I let her cry on my chest. She doesn't deserve this. She deserves to be happy. She's too kind to be

hurt.

I just wish Jungkook mans up and settle his problem with Tzuyu. I know she's a princess but Jungkook is the president's son. He's just as strong and influential as she is.

"I'm sorry for crying like this. I'm so pathetic" Lisa said and I let her go from my chest for her to wipe her tears.

"You're not pathetic. You are just in love. I know how it feels to love Pranpriya and I know the pain it can cause you." I answered.

"I'm sorry. You must be laughing deep inside now because you think I chose the wrong man." she said.

"No, I don't think like that. Jungkook is a good man. He's just... He's just at the wrong place and at the wrong time meeting you." I said.

"What do you mean?"

"I mean he met you at the wrong place and time when you are now facing a death threat and he is in a relationship with her. If it was another girl, Jungkook would easily dispose them for you. But Tzuyu is different. She can play her cards well and she's a princess." I explained.

When I said that, Pranpriya started laughing.

"Why are you laughing while crying?" I asked.

"Nothing. It's just funny that these people doesn't have any slight idea that I'm a princess too." She said and I nodded.

"If they only knew. When will you tell Jungkook about it? He deserves to know Pranpriya." I said.

"Grandmother told me to not tell him yet" I said.

"Wait what? The queen approves your relationship now?" I asked. But I thought she is supposed to marry Mario?

"Yes she approved. And she cancelled the engagement too." She answered happily.

Lucky guy.

I'm so jealous now. All those years I longed for her grandmother to approve our friendship while Jungkook here can marry her anytime he want.

How I wish I'm Jungkook instead.

"Jack, I want to sleep." she said.

"Have you eaten yet?"

"No, I'll just eat tomorrow. I feel so tired." she said and she lay on her bed again.

"Okay. Goodnight princess." I said while tucking her in her soft blanket.

I switched the light off and closed her door.

Jungkook needs a lot of scolding.



Author's Note

Where do you think Jungkook is?

The Guilty Boyfriend

Jungkook's POV

"Tzuyu please let me go home now." I asked her as I sit on a stool inside a club. It's already 12 midnight and I really want to go home now.

I want to see Lalisa.

I need to talk to her.

I need to explain.

She called me a while ago but Tzuyu took my phone away. She said she will answer it if I try to accept Lalisa's call.

Which I'm afraid she would do. I don't want Lalisa to hear her voice answering my phone. It would hurt her.

"You know you're such a killjoy Jk! Let's enjoy the night more. Remember those times when we would get drunk and you would you would finger me while we're dancing there and those times when you would fuck me so hard inside the men's comfort room." She whispered on my ear.

Yes I remember those times and I don't know Lalisa yet back then. It's different now. She's the only one I want to have sex with. Because she's the one I love.

"Please let's not talk about it." I said.

"Why? It was fun right? Why don't we do it again?" she said as she rub my chest. Tzuyu has been sitting on my lap for a while now.

I know it's wrong. I even tried to stop her but she threatened me again. She said she will tell my parents and hers that I got her pregnant if I don't follow as she say. I don't know what to do anymore.

I can't breath. I feel so guilty right now. But what can I do? I have no choice but to protect Lalisa from getting kicked out and to protect my parents from a scandal. I don't want to abuse her kindness but I'm sure she would understand.

She always understands.

"No let's go home now Tzuyu. You're drunk." I said.

"Hmp. Fine! But let me go to the comfort room first" she said then she stood but she stumbled back down on my lap because she's too drunk. I helped her get up to accompany her to the comfort room

When she was finish, we walked out from the comfort room but I bumped into someone.

"Ow!" a familiar voice said and when I looked up, I wished I bumped into Taehyung instead.

It's fucking Jimin of all people.

"Jungkook? What are you.." he asked then he turned his head to Tzuyu. "doing here with her?"

"Not here Jimin" I said glancing at Tzuyu who is now having fun ay watching us.

I can clearly see how Jimin clench his jaw seeing us both here.

Of course he would be pissed. Tzuyu's arms are wrapped around my torso. While I try to balance her body by holding her.

When we were about to walk away, Jimin grabbed my arm and leaned to my ear.

"You know I don't keep my mouth shut. I'm gonna go tell her about this." he said.

"Don't you dare!" I say through gritted teeth.

I know Jimin, he will grab this opportunity right away to make a move on Lalisa. That's why I wish I bumped into Taehyung instead because he is more understanding. He is just like Lalisa. They are both kind.

When we walked out of the car, I started driving Tzuyu to their mansion, Tzuyu is drunk now and she's closed to sleeping.

I'm glad I managed to survive the night away without having to do the *thing* with her.

We just kissed. That's all. But nothing more.

I will tell Lalisa about what Tzuyu did. Her threats and more but I will not tell her about the kiss.

I really don't want to hurt her.

Few minutes later, I was already infront of Tzuyu's mansion. Their servants carried her to her room and I quickly drove back to the dorm to see her.

I hope she's still awake.

When I got inside, Taehyung was still up.

"Where is she?" I asked nervously.

"She's sleeping." he said.

"Oh okay." I answered. I waited there for him to scold or question where I went but he didn't. He just continued sitting their looking at the same necklace he always stares at.

"Aren't you going to ask me where I went?" I asked.

"Why would I? I know you're with here. You smell the same." he said and I looked down guiltily.

"Jungkook, don't abuse her kindness. You may never be offered one again." he said and I nodded.

"I know."

I walked to our room to see her lying on the bed. I badly want to

hug her body right now but I feel like I don't deserve her embrace. I failed her again. So I just settled on sleeping in my own bed.

I didn't plan to spend the day like this. But it's all ruined now.

The only thing I can do is to make up for her.



Author's Note

By the way, may I know how old are my readers?



The Best Advise

Jungkook's PoV

Lalisa was still sleeping when I woke up. Which is good because I need to make up for her. And I need to talk to Jimin too. After his warning words last night, I need to make sure he'll shut his mouth up.

I went out of the room and saw the two silently eating.

I sat to eat too but no one dared to speak. I can feel the tension on the table and I know that if one of us dare to speak, everything will blow up.

But I need to talk to Jimin. He shouldn't take advantage of the situation Lalisa and I are in.

"Jimin--"

"If you'll ask me to shut my mouth, I'm sorry Jk, but I will tell her what I saw." he said.

"What do you mean?" Taehyung asked him while looking at me.

"Jimin, we did nothing wrong!" I defended with a low voice afraid for someone to hear us up.

"You did nothing wrong? You fucking cheated!!! Don't you know how much I dreamed for that girl? Yet you play with her just like that! I should've known better. You're still the same!" He shouted.

"Jimin, Lalisa is sleeping!" I warned. I don't want Lalisa to wake up from our argument.

"Why? You're scared? You're scared for her to know that you fucked Tzuyu inside the Comfort room?!" he whisper shouted but my eyes widened at his accusation.

What the fuck?

"What did you say Jimin?" Taehyung asked.

"What are you talking about? I didn't fuck her!" I defended. He clearly misunderstood this.

"Yes you did, if you didn't, why did both of you came out there together?"

"Because Tzuyu was drunk and she can't walk!"

"Fuck with your lame excuses!" he rolled his eyes on me.

"I'm not making this up! I just helped her!"

"Helped her get drunk inside a club. Wow Jk! What a gentleman! While Lalisa called me more than 10 times yesterday asking where you are!"

Oh my God! She called him for 10 times?

I didn't know.

I just got quiet. I'm so so guilty for ditching our date like that.

"It must have felt good cheating like that huh? While your girl is miserably looking for you. Tell me, is it worth it Jk? Is it worth fucking another woman while making the other one cry?" he said and I didn't stop myself from grabbing his collar.

"I told you I did not fuck her. She blackmailed me. She knows Lalisa's secret. She knows that she is Limario and now she's threatening that she's gonna tell everyone if I don't follow her!" I shouted on Jimin's face. He's making me look like a villain when I'm a victim too.

"Stop it you two please!" Taehyung pulled my hands away from Jimin's collar.

We glared at each other for a long time.

I hate him right now.

"Even if she blackmails you, you should fight for Lalisa more. If you can't solve your problem with Tzuyu, just leave Lalisa alone. She deserves better." he said.

"And who is that better? You?" I mocked.

"Yes me. Because I'm not a coward like you!" he said then he walked out to his room.

"I will talk to Lalisa." I said to Taehyung and I walk back to our room. I'm sure we woke her up by our loud voices.

But when I get back, she was still sleeping. It's 10am now and we're supposed to be in class but she's still asleep? I walked closer to her and I realized she's sweating. Her lips are parted and she's breathing heavily.

What the fuck is happening?

I place my hand on her forehead.

Shit!

She has a fever!

"Taehyung!" I called while wiping Lalisa's sweat with my hands.

"What is it?" He asked when he was at the door.

"Can you go get me something cold to compress her. Lalisa's got a fever." I said.

Taehyung didn't answer he just ran to get what I asked of him.

When he got back, I started wiping her face with a cold wet cloth.

"Now look what you did to her!" Taehyung spoke on my back.

"Why?" I asked looking at him. Is this my fault? Don't tell me.

Fuck! I remembered it rained heavily last night.

"Lalisa got caught in the rain while waiting for you in front of the school for more than an hour."

Shit.

I messed up again.

Jimin was right.

I really don't deserve her.

I carressed her cheeks and kissed her forehead.

I'm so sorry baby.

Now she's sick because of me.

I'm the worst!!!

"What should I do Taehyung? I don't know what to do. I don't want to hurt her but I'm scared of what Tzuyu can do. What if she successfully have Lalisa kicked out from this school?"

"Then so be it. I would rather have her kicked out in this school than lose her entirely by seeing another girl." he answered.

And his answer made sense.

He's right! I should not be worried about that, Lalisa can transfer to any other school and I will still follow her. If her parents took her back to their hometown, I would still follow her.

I can't lose her.

Tzuyu has been playing with mind for a long time now and I think I've had enough of her games.

I can't sacrifice Lalisa anymore.

"But what if she creates scandal to ruin my families reputation?" I asked him again.

"Then let it be. Things are inevitable Jk. We cannot control them. But I want you to know that people have their own minds. We all know how great a president your father is. You think one scandal can make people change their mind from choosing the next president?" he said and I nodded.

I really want to kiss Taehyung right now but that would be gay and I'm straight.

I love pussies.

I mean Lalisa's pussy.

Okay stop!

I'm getting pervert again.

But he's really right.

I should man up. I should not be scared anymore.

I will do anything except hurting her.

Because she is my imaginary wife and I love her so so much.

I swear that would be the last that I will see Tzuyu.



Author's Note.

Can you guess the main problem that will probably arise in their relationship?

I want to know if you can guess it right.



The Lover's Quarrel

Lalisa's POV

"Good morning baby!" Jungkook greeted me when I opened my eyes.

"Good morning! What time is it?" I asked Jungkook.

"It's already past 9" he answered. I tried to sit up straight from my bed but my head started hurting and I don't know why.

"Wait! I have a class on Ladium! Oh my God!" I panicked remembering my 8 o'clock class.

"Baby, your class is still at 4pm." he said then he pulled me back to bed.

"But today is wednesday right? That means my class is at 8?" I asked.

"No, today is Thursday Lalisa." he said.

Huh?

"You were sleeping the whole wednesday morning."

"I've been sleeping that long?" I asked.

"Yeah, We even thought you're in a coma" he chuckled.

"Really?"

"Yes, you had a fever last day. How are you feeling now?" he asked.

Last day? Now I remember. It was probably because I got soaked in rain from last last night. Which made me realize about Jungkook and I's date.

"I feel okay." I answered shortly. I don't know but I don't feel like talking to him right now after what he did.

"Baby, it was my fault. Look I didn't mean to ditch you but Tzuyu came and--"

"It's okay. Let's not talk about it." I had to cut him off.

I know it's Tzuyu again. But still, it was supposed to be our date. He should have taken it seriously.

"No, I need to explain. I'm so sorry Lalisa okay? Tzuyu's been threatening me. And I just can't--"

"Did you have sex with her?" I asked right away to end the pain in my chest from thinking about them doing that.

"What? No.." he answered hesitantly as if there is something more to it.

"But you kissed?" I accused and I hope I am wrong.

Jungkook's eyes widened and he wasn't able to answer my question.

"Of course you do." I rolled my eyes and stood straight from my bed. Why am I even sleeping with him in the first place!

"Baby, it was just a kiss. And I didn't initiate it. She did and I got just got carried a--"

"Just a kiss Jungkook?"

"It's not a big deal. I don't even love her!"

Wow. Just wow.

"What if I go straight to Taehyung or Jimin and kiss one of them now. How would you feel?" I asked.

"Don't you dare or I'm gonna kill them!"

"See the difference?" I said and I walked out of the room.

"Baby please... "

I can hear Jungkook's voice behind me but I don't want to talk to him right now.

I just went straight outside and good thing Taehyung and Jimin are not here. They are probably in school. I don't want them to hear us arguing. I know Jimin will take advantage of the situation.

I just walked to where my cats are currently playing at.

"Lalisa, let's talk please." Jungkook said. He has already followed me outside.

"About what?" I answered coldly. I just focused on playing with my cat.

"About us. This...you're upset and I'm so sorry. I know I shouldn't have done that." he said.

"Well good thing you know." I said still not looking at him.

"Look, Tzuyu knows about you being Limario already and she threatened me that she will expose it to everyone if I don't follow her. I got scared Lalisa. I don't want you to get kicked out in this school this is the place where I met you and this is the place where I can freely be with you. If you get kicked out, I'm afraid I won't be able to see you again." he explained.

"So you would rather kiss another girl Jungkook?"

"No, I mean I didn't have a choice. I don't want her to tell everyone about you."

"I would rather be kicked out than have you kiss her! You promised me back in Jeju you will not do it! Do you have a slight idea how painful it is having your man kiss another girl? I bet you don't and I hope you don't feel it in the future because it hurts so much Jk!" I yelled frustratedly.

I'm really hurt right now.

Why is loving someone this painful?

"Lalisa please forgive me. I know it was wrong--"

"Yet you do it!!!"

"I don't have anything else to say but sorry. I promise that will be the last day that I will see Tzuyu."

"You always make promises but you keep on breaking them!"

"I know but this time I won't break them. Lalisa just give me one chance of proving myself. Please..." he said.

I looked at his face. He is crying now and with just that my heart softened in an instant. Why can't I hate him that long?

"Baby?" he asked. When I didn't answer him.

"Okay fine. But please no more date-ditching!" I said.

"I promise that will be the last. Come and let's cuddle more." he smiled.

"I stink and I need to bath first." I said.

"Then let me help you." he said and I know what he means.

I don't know why but I didn't stop him. When it comes to Jungkook, I can't hate him that long. I would always end up forgiving him.

I just love him so much.

Moments later, we were both naked inside the bathroom sharing a kiss while having a shower together.

He kissed me all over my body which made me reach my orgasm twice.

Jungkook and I had sex again. We had to do it in a standing position and it was mind blowing.

It hurts but it feels so good.

After the shower, Jungkook carried my wet body in my bed. He gently lay me there and he crawled to me. Owing my lips once again, while his wet body hovers over me.

It feels so hot doing this. Kissing him like this like it's just the two of us in the world. We didn't even mind even if we didn't locked the doors.

Jungkook pushed his cock inside me again making me arch my back from the surprising pain. His size always surprises me and my core will always hurt because of it but I love him doing this to me.

"You're so tight baby!"

Soon we were both breathing heavily as he continues to pound his cock inside me.

He's a bit rough this time but I like it. He makes me feel full down there.

"I love you Lalisa!" He groaned in my ear.

His pace fastened more pushing and pulling his cock inside me.

The room was filled with sex noises, moans, grunts and groans and I'm glad Taehyung and Jimin are not here.

"Jungkook, I'm close."

"Baby I'm cumming inside you!"

After reaching my third orgasm, Jungkook came inside me again.

"You feel so good baby!" he said kissing my forehead while he's still emptying his cock with cum inside me.

I closed my eyes and just closed the gap to kiss him again.

I guess we can call this a make-up sex.



Author's Note

Sorry for the not so detailed smut. Lol

Happy Birthday Kim Jennie 💕💕

The Party

Tzuyu's POV

I arrived at Jungkook's dorm to surprise him but instead of him, it was me who got surprised.

As I hear noises coming from Jungkook's room.

I slowly walked to the door and pressed my ear on it. Then I heard it more clearly this time.

Someone is having sex.

I tried to twist the door knob and I was surprised it was not locked.

I slightly opened the the door and I had to cover my mouth when I saw them there.

I know it is him.

It's Jungkook's back.

He was on top of...

I looked at the girl's face under him.

Lalisa.

I froze to my feet when I saw them there doing it.

Their moans echoed inside the room.

"I love you Lalisa!"

"I love you so much Lalisa!"

"I love you baby!" Jungkook repeatedly said.

"I love you too!" I hear Lalisa say.

Bitch.

I felt a pang of jealousy just hearing it from them.

This is not how we usually do sex.

Jungkook would always do it with me out of lust. But seeing them now, it's different.

He's more gentle.

He kisses every part of her face.

He keeps telling her that he loves her. He keeps on repeating those words.

And I hate it.

Jungkook never said those words to me.

He never says he loves me during sex.

He will just put it inside and leave me after. No hugs, no cuddles no loving kisses and no I love you's.

I envy her.

She's so lucky having Jungkook say that he loves her.

I gripped the side of the door while just looking at them. Then I realized Jungkook is having an unprotected sex with her.

While he always do it with me wearing a god damn condom!

He's not scared to get her pregnant. And it's different with me.

I hate her!

I hate her so much for having Jungkook like this.

It's clear that he really loves her.

Jungkook the playboy finally loved a girl.

But I will not let them be happy while I'm miserable.

I'm gonna ruin this bitch's life.

You just wait and see Lalisa!

Jungkook's POV

After making love with Lalisa, I came out of our room to drink a water.

I'm so happy today to finally make up with her. And I feel like nothing's gonna break our relationship now. I'm not scared anymore. I think everything will be good between us from now on.

When I get back, Lalisa was already sleeping.

I gently kissed her forehead. And looked at her sleeping face. I never thought my stay here at this dorm will led me to meeting her.

Whatever the reason she has for pretending makes me really grateful.

"I love you" I whispered.

When I tried to lay next to her, my phone beeped.

Jk,

Don't forget about your dad's advance birthday party tonight.

-Mom

Shit! I almost forgot. Dad's birthday celebration is this night. How come I forget such important day?

They had to celebrate it a week earlier because my dad will be busy next week for the election.

Mom told me about this already. She said we need to attend to show the press how beautiful our family is.

The event will be attended by some of Asia's political leaders and that includes Tzuyu's father.

But I'm sure Tzuyu will not attend. She hates such events because she said she can't understand the talks of the leaders. And it bores her.

Even if I meet Tzuyu there, I'm not scared anymore. She can't threaten me anymore.

Besides, it's a formal event and I doubt she will dare to create a drama there.

I decided to lay beside Lalisa once again. Cuddling her slim and soft body.

Later in the afternoon, I started preparing for the party.

"You look so handsome with this suit." Lalisa complimented me.

"I always look handsome even if I don't wear one." I said and she chuckled.

"Yes. You're right. You're the most handsome man in the world Mr. Jeon!" she said as she help me with my necktie.

"And tour are the most beautiful girl in my eyes Mrs.Jeon." I leaned to kiss her.

I gently pushed her body to the bed while maintaining the kiss.

Fuck! I'm hard again.

"hmmnn.. Jungkook, you will be late at the party." She said.

"Can do it once before I go please?" I asked. I want to feel her body again but she shook her head.

"No, we can do it later when you get back." she said as she stood up.

"But can we do it more than once later?" I asked. I really want to fuck her until I can't move anymore.

"Yes we will. But for now, let's get you ready. This is an important party for your father right?" she said.

"Yes it is. I'm so sorry I can't invite you. My parents said it would be attended by politicians and I think it will just bore you." I apologized guiltily.

"No, it's fine Jungkook. I understand. I'll wait for you here." she said.

"Thank you! you're the best wife ever!"

I pressed my lips to hers once again. Her lips are so addicting and I'm so lucky I'm the one who can kiss her like this.

"Now go. You'll be late!" she said and she pushed me slightly away.

"See you later baby!" I said.

"I love you Jungkook!" she smiled so sweetly.

"I love you Lalisa!" I walked out of the room but before I leave, I looked back at her.

She was smiling happily at me and I can't wait to see her when I get back.

When I closed the door, I suddenly felt anxious.

Why am I feeling this? i asked my self as I clench my chest.

The feeling is terrifying.

It's as if I won't see her again?

I pushed the door back to see her sitting on the bed.

"Why?" she asked.

"I will see you again right?" I asked nervously.

"Of course. I will wait for you Jungkook." she said and I was able to breath.

"I love you baby"

"I love you too!" she answered and I closed the door to take my leave.

It's nothing Jungkook. You're just being paranoid! I said to myself.



Author's Note

Is Jungkook being a paranoid?

What do you think will happen at the party?



The Person Behind

Lalisa's POV

When Jungkook left, I heard another knock on the door.

I wonder who it is?

I'm kinda scared because I was left alone in the dorm.

Taehyung, Jimin and Jungkook left to attend the party. They said that the party was for Korea and Asia's political leaders. Andnthey will attend because Taehyung and Jimin's father's are there too. And it only means Tzuyu's father will also be there.

I just hope she won't attend the party. I can't imagine them being together right now.

I stood to walk out of my room.

Someone is still knocking and even if I'm nervous. I need to open it. It maybe Jungkook or the other guys.

When I opened the door, I was surprised to see Kunpimook outside.

"Kunpimook? What are you doing here?" I asked.

"Princess, I have a good news!" he said.

I looked around and when I made sure that no one is around, I let Kunpimook in.

I let him sit in the chair and I face him.

"What good news?" I asked curiously.

"The authority finally caught the person who shot you princess!" he announced and I almost stood on my seat from the surprise.

"What? Are you sure?" I suddenly felt relief from the news.

"Yes. He was hiding in a deserted house away from Bangkok and good thing the police was able to trace where he is." He explained.

"Do we know this guy?" I asked curiously.

"No, but we know the person behind Princess." he explained and his expression turned into a serious one.

Oh my God! Am I ready to know the truth who is behind this? I assessed myself.

I need to know.

Even if it will probably hurt.

"Who is it Kunpimook?" I asked nervously.

"The person behind the planned murder was your aunt Princess. It was your Aunt Sarah!" he said and with that I slumped down on my seat.

"My Aunt? Are you sure Kunpimook?" I asked. I can't believe this!

"Yes, the gunman told us that she paid him to kill you and your aunt admitted it herself when the police questioned her."

"But why? Why would she do that?" I started crying. I can't believe she would do this to me.

"Because she wants Eunha to replace you Princess." he briefly explain.

I know. I know she wants Eunha to be the queen. But I didn't know it would be this bad.

How could she do that?

I'm her niece too and even if we are not blood related, I did her nothing wrong.

I treated her like a real aunt even if I know she despises me.

"Where is she now?" I asked.

"She's now locked in jail princess together with the gunman." he said.

"How about Eunha?" I asked worriedly. I feel sad that she can't be with her mother anymore. Eunha loves her mother so much.

"She's innocent princess. She doesn't know her mother's doing. She's still at the palace because she's not part of the plan." he said and I nodded.

"I want to talk to her. I want to say sorry."

"Why would you say sorry? It's her mother's fault for planning to kill you!" Kunpimook said.

"But still, she can't be with her mother anymore." I said.

"You're too kind princess. And I'm afraid people will take advantage of your kindness." he said.

"I never had a mother. That's why I know how it would feel if she loses one." I answered.

"But still... Nevermind. I'm so happy that your problem is finally solved. You can go home anytime you want now princess." he happily said but I frowned.

No. I don't want to go home yet. Jungkook is here and I want to be where Jungkook is.

"I don't want to go home yet Kunpimook. Will the queen agree if I stay here for longer time?" I asked.

"I think she will agree. She knows that you're in love with Jeon Jungkook." he teased.

I blushed at his comment. He's right I really love him and I just want to be with him.

"Will it be fine now if I tell my friends who I really am?" I asked and he nodded.

"Of course. There's no more point in hiding princess. You can tell them right away." he said.

Finally! No more lying.

I want to tell Jungkook about me already.

"How about the queen. How is she?" I asked.

"She's doing great. She's really happy and relieved that you are finally safe princess. As a matter of fact, she's on her way to see you."

Wait what???

"My grandmother is coming here? Is she taking me home? I don't want to go home yet Kunpimook. Please help me. I don't want her to take me away from Jungkook." I plead while holding Kunpimooks hands. But he just chuckled.

"Relax princess. She's just here to attend an important event but she will not take you home yet. But of course she will see you." he said and I heaved a sigh of relief.

I thought she will take me home. Good thing she's not.

"Thank you so much Kunpimook for everything." I said as I bow to him.

"Anything for you princess. Thank you so much for being a good friend too. I hope we remain as friends." he said while smiling at me.

"Of course we will!"

Moments later, Kunpimook took his leave and I decided to make myself dinner. I don't know how to cook and so I just settled with a cup noodles.

While preparing, my phone beeped.

A message?

I took my phone and read.

A message from Jungkook?

Lalisa,

Please come to the party. Wear your best dress because I will introduce you to my parents.

-Jungkook

My brows furrowed when I read it.

I thought Jungkook doesn't want to invite me there? Why is he suddenly inviting me now?

But nonetheless, it makes me really happy reading this.

He wants me to meet his parents?

I want to meet them too.

Ay last everything is going smooth now.

Jungkook and I will finally be happy.

I excitedly prepared for the party.

I can't wait to meet them.



Author's Note

So yeah, It was Aunt Sarah all this time. 🤫

The Uninvited Guest

(A/N: Imagine that the setting is like this. Just a little simpler)

Jungkook's POV

I hate my life.

I never thought Tzuyu will also be here. And now her father the King and my parents are talking and mom asked me to babysit her.

"Why don't you entertain the princess first Jungkook. I'm sure her father will surely appreciate our family's hospitality."

That's what my mom said and now this girl is clinging to my arm the whole time.

My mom asked me that this is her last request for my father's birthday. To act like a gentleman to Tzuyu and pretend that we are doing good or at least civil if not in love.

I had to smile to everyone as Tzuyu and I walk inside the hall where the party is held.

We are yet to wait for some of the important visitors. And this is a good opportunity to make friends with Asia's leaders. I can see a lot of important persons now inside the venue including the Prime Minister of Japan and the President of China. I was even surprise to know that the Prime Minister of Thailand and their Queen are invited based on the guest list. But they are not here yet. They probably won't attend.

I don't know if Lalisa knows the Queen personally but I know she knows the ugly prime minister. And I really don't want to see him right now because I have a feeling that he is a threat to my relationship with my wife.

Tzuyu was smiling ear to ear all this time which weirds me out. Good thing Lalisa is not here or it will really piss her seeing Tzuyu with me like this.

Tzuyu keeps talking about how extensive her dress is but I'm not paying her any attention. I just focused my attention to the other guest.

I smiled when I saw Chaeyoung and Jisoo chatting on the far end of the long table. But they rolled their eyes at me when they saw that I'm with Tzuyu.

I know they think that I'm cheating now but I'm really not.

I was cut off with my thoughts when Taehyung and Jimin walked

to us.

"Well hello there." Jimin smiled and I rolled my eyes. His gonna create drama again for sure.

"What?" I asked coldly.

"Nothing. It's just surprising seeing you two together right now." Jimin said.

"There is nothing going on between us Jimin if that's what you're thinking!" I said.

"Okay. If that's what you say so." he said and he turned his back to leave, leaving me Taehyung and Tzuyu alone.

Taehyung cleared his throat and he looked at Tzuyu.

"Princess, can I talk to Jungkook for a second?" Taehyung asked Tzuyu politely.

Tzuyu thought for a while then she nodded.

"Okay but make it quick." she said and she took steps away from us.

"What are you doing Jk?" Taehyung asked when Tzuyu was finally away.

"I swear this is nothing. Mom just asked me to usher her for the party. This is her request. And she said it's the last one." I explained.

"Even if Lalisa is not around, you should always consider the consequences your actions can make." he said.

"I know. Tzuyu is just here as a guest Taehyung. And as a host, I must not be rude. I need to follow mom. This is just for tonight." I said.

"Are you done talking?" I was surprised when Tzuyu was already beside me.

"We're done princess." Taehyung said. He just gave me one warning look then he left.

Now everyone is thinking that I'm cheating. Even my sister Jennie is shooting me a glare while she's talking to one of the guests.

"Jungkook, can I borrow your phone?" Tzuyu asked.

"Why?"

"I forgot my phone at the mansion. Can I make a call? I'll have my servant deliver it here." she said and I gave my phone to her.

She took my phone and she walked a way to call someone.

I just stood there looking around while waiting for her.

My attention was grabbed when the visitors started taking their seats on the long presidential table.

I then glanced at Tzuyu's direction to see her walking to me smiling sweetly.

She seems to be in a good mood today.

"Let's go" she said as she handed me my phone.

We walked to the table where my father is sitting in the middle.

To my father's left is the Tzuyu's father, next to him sat my mother and I took the seat next to my mother while Jennie sat on my left and Jimin was on her left.

On my father's right was Prime Minister Park and on his right was Justice Kim. Tzuyu took the seat next to Justice Kim.

But when Taehyung was about to sit beside Tzuyu, she quickly told Taehyung that the seat is taken.

I was confused by her action but I just shrugged them off. Maybe Tzuyu expects another visitor. So Taehyung Took the seat next to the vacant one. Facing Jimin.

The rest of the important guests took their seats on the remaining vacant chairs.

When everyone was settled, the party started. My father made a small talk to welcome them all. Then food were served and the room were filled with talks about politics and economies.

We were all eating when the door opened,
Revealing the person I least expected to see.

What is she doing here?

I looked at Tzuyu and I began sweating when I saw her smirking like she just won a game.

Fuck! This is not going to end well!



Author's Note

Hi readers, I hope the story is not boring you.

What do you think will happen next?

The Humiliation

Lalisa's POV

I nervously looked around the people inside the hall. Everyone is now staring at me as I stood on the door.

And by the look on their faces, I can tell that I'm not welcomed.

I feel out of place as I wear a just a simple white dress. While these people are wearing their gowns and suits.

Now I wonder if Jungkook really invited me here. I guess he didn't. And when I looked closely, I saw him there sitting with a surprised expression.

This is a trap. I should have known. And I confirmed it right when I saw Tzuyu sitting in front of Jungkook smiling at me.

It's her.

I know she's the one who texted me. How could I fall for that?

Jungkook clearly told me to wait for him but I didn't. Instead I'm here in front of these people while they look at me. Judging me from head to toe.

I want to leave but I can't move. And I can see Jungkook is not moving too. Even Taehyung and Jimin were also frozen to their seat. While Cahe, Jisoo and Jennie gave me a sympathetic look.

I want to cry.

But I don't want them to see me crying. Tzuyu would love it more if she saw me cry in front of them.

I tried to gather the courage inside me and turned my heel to leave, but Tzuyu's voice stopped me on my track.

I didn't notice that she was already beside me pulling me closer to where they are sitting.

"Oh Hi Lalisa! Are you lost? You see our families are celebrating the President's birthday Party. Come and join us." she said. Her hands are gripping my arms too hard and I want her to let go of me because it hurts. I will have bruises if she continues gripping me like this.

"Thanks but I need to go." I said and I tried to pull my arms away but she pulled me more.

She's strong.

"You're coming with me." she said through gritted teeth then she was able to pull me next to her seat.

I looked at Jungkook who is now guiltily looking at me. He looks

lost as if he doesn't know what to do.

Maybe he's embarrassed to have his parents meet me like this.

Coming to their party uninvited that I look pathetic.

"Ladies and gentleman this is my friend, Lalisa. Oh by the way, are you in the guest list because the chairs are reserved for the guests only?" she asked acting as if she's concerned.

"Tzuyu!" I heard Jungkook's voice.

"What? I was just asking her if she is on of the guest list because we have limited chairs." She said.

"Tzuyu dear, we can ask for more chairs. Let your visitor sit." the President said while looking at me from head to toe.

"Of course, royals like me are too kind to let poor girls like her to at least enjoy royal food." she chuckled.

"Tzuyu! Stop that!" Her father warned. "I'm sorry miss for my daughters behavior, please take the seat next to her." the king said.

I looked down on my lap at the embarrassment Tzuyu caused me.

"Lalisa, I'm glad to meet you again. Please take the seat." Jimin's father smiled warmly at me. The old man is really sweet.

"Oh. So you are Lalisa?" Taehyung's father confirmed as if he knows me.

"Yes sir, I am. Pleased to meet you." I answered And I nervously took the seat next to Tzuyu.

I can feel all the eyes on me. And most of them looks at me with pity while one looks at me with disgust.

The first lady must have noticed my uncomfot that's why she asked us to eat.

"Lalisa, please enjoy the food." she said and I was able to breath. It seems like the adults here are kind and Tzuyu is the only problem.

"Good thing the queen of Thailand didn't show or Lalisa here will be sitting on the floor" Tzuyu laughed which made everyone quiet.

"Tzuyu! If you don't stop!" Her father warned for the second time. He is probably embarrassed with his daughters rude remarks.

"Dad, I was just joking. You see Lalisa and I are close friends because we are classmates. She goes to Ladium University too and I nearly forgot. Jungkook is classmates with her too." she announced and I mentally faced palmed because of her confession.

She will really not stop humiliating me in front of these people.

"What do you mean classmates with Jungkook? Yonsei is an all-boys school. " the president asked.

"You don't know? Jungkook must have not told you yet. , Lalisa here is a very good actress. She can pretend to be a boy and she even fooled the whole Yonsei University with her talent at acting. And yes she is taking classes at both University Mr. President. And I

would like to request from you that if you ever won the the presidency, make sure that she gets kicked out from those schools because she's a fraud. She doesn't even deserve to go there. She's a poor pathetic leech who sucks on every man just to get her ways." Tzuyu continued attacking me and I didn't fought my tears this time from falling.

What did I even do to her for her to treat me like this?

"Tzuyu stop!" Jungkook shouted. But Tzuyu just laughed.

I wiped my tears away and I decided to just go home. I can't stay here any longer If I don't go home now, I'm afraid she will get me crushed more.

"Lalisa, come I'll take you home." I was surprised when Taehyung offered me his hand.

"No, I'm taking her home!" Jimin stood as well. Making the people around gasped.

"No one is taking Lalisa home except me!" Jungkook stood as well.

Now I feel more embarrassed at the attention I am getting.

"Wow! I didn't know this bitch can catch three big fishes like this!" Tzuyu rolled her eyes.

The boys are glaring at each other for a long time while their parents are sharing a worried look.

But I just sat there crying myslef out.

Tzuyu succesfully ruined my night by humiliating me in front of these people. And worse is that Jungkook's parents are here.

"No, thank you. I will go home on my own." I said and I stood.

"Sorry I'm late. Our flight got delayed. Wait, is that you Princess?" A familiar voice interrupted.

And when I look at the source of the voice, I don't know if I will be happy or not to see him.

My ex fiancée.

Mario



Author's Note

I just want to thank those who comments. It really means a lot.

Thank you so much guys!

The Unveiled Secret

Jungkook's POV

I wanted to shed her tears away. She's clearly hurt but I can't even help her out from Tzuyu's craziness.

When she was at the door she looked really out of place and I wish she just stayed at the dorm. She should've just waited there for me.

But Tzuyu took my phone to make her come here and now she's verbally attacking Lalisa in front of our parents and other guests.

And as much as I want to shout at Tzuyu's face right now, I can't because it's my father's birthday and everyone is here.

I can see the panic in my parent's faces because Tzuyu is drawing everyone's attention by exposing Lalisa's secret.

She really needs to stop.

"Tzuyu stop!" I shouted. But Tzuyu just laughed.

Lalisa continued crying which breaks my heart. Who wouldn't? when your secret was exposed like this?

"Lalisa, come I'll take you home." I was surprised when Taehyung offered her his hand.

I rolled my eyes at him. At this point, I'm the one who should come to her rescue instead of him.

"No, I'm taking her home!" Jimin stood as well.

What the fuck? These guys are drawing more attention which pisses me off.

"No one is taking Lalisa home except me!" I said while standing on my chair.

She's my wife. Therefore she comes with no one but me. I want to tell that to everyone's faces.

"Wow! I didn't know a bitch can catch three big fishes like this!" Tzuyu said but I didn't pay her any more attention.

I just glared at Taehyung and Jimin for acting like heroes in front of my girl. They are really worsening the situation more.

"No, thank you. I will go home on my own." Lalisa said.

The door opened and came rushing.

"Sorry I'm late. Our flight got delayed.. Wait is that you princess?" the man interrupted.

And when I looked at the source of voice, I frowned when I saw him.

The Prime Minister. Lalisa's friend who I'm jealous of.

We all look at him as he started walking. I didn't know this Mario knows Tzuyu too.

"Uhm..do I know you?" Tzuyu asked amusely. She seemed to be awestruck by the guy's features.

"Oh no, I'm sorry, I'm not talking to you princess Tzuyu." he said and we all looked at each other.

"Then who are you talking with?" Tzuyu was annoyed this time because she thought the Prime Minister was talking to her.

"I'm talking to another princess." he said then his eyes travelled to Lalisa.

I'm sure she's not referring to Lalisa as princess.

Lalisa froze on her feet when Mario took her hand and kissed it. And I almost jumped out of my seat because of it.

"Do you know this girl Prime Minister Chayut?" My father asked.

"You mean her?" he asked looking at Lalisa.

"Yes her. Are you two acquaintances?" my father curiously asked and I know he will tell him that they are good friends because that's what Lalisa told me.

"We're more than that Mr. President. She is my ex-fiancee." he answered.

They are What???

Did I hear him right? I looked around and everone was shocked too which means I heard him right.

"You are what again?" I asked to confirm.

"I am his ex fiancee." he answered. I look over Lalisa but she can't look me in the eye.

"Stop joking Mister. How can a girl like her catch a Prime Minister too?" Tzuyu asled while chuckling.

Mario was taken aback by Tzuyu's comment.

"Princess Tzuyu, that's very rude to say." Mario said.

"Why? I can say what I want anytime and anywhere." she said.

My mom beside me is clearly pissed now. Because of the scandal this girl is creating. Tzuyu unveiled her true rotten self. And now, even her father is embarrassed.

"Tzuyu. If you don't stop talking in front of these guests, I'm gonna take you back home to Taiwan!"

"Chill dad! I was just having fun and I'm not yet done." she said and she stood to face Lalisa.

"I wonder how your face would twist if I slap you with this?" she said and she raised her hand to slap Lalisa.

All of our eyes widen because to this.

"Don't you dare lay a hand on my granddaughter or I'm gonna chop your hands off!" An old woman's voice echoed through the

room.

Several men in suit came walking inside ushering an old Lady or should I say queen.

I know her. I've seen pictures of her before.

She is the Queen of Thailand.

But why did she call Lalisa granddaughter?

The guests all stood to give her a bow as she walked closer.

Tzuyu put her hands down and smiled at Lalisa, "You are lucky someone stopped me from slapping you. But too bad, you have nowhere else to sit." I heard Tzuyu whisper on Lalisa's ear.

My mother gestured the servants to add more seats and soon servants started placing two more seats beside my father for the queen and the other seat for the prime minister was placed beside Lalisa making Tzuyu moved a little closer to Taehyung.

"It's an honor to finally see you again Queen Sirikit!" my father bowed.

"It's my honor too and Happy Birthday Mr. President." she said.

The Queen turned to the other guests and bowed to them as well.

"Thank you! Come and Join us." my father said and the queen sat beside him now.

Lalisa, sat down again while Mario sat beside her which I'm grateful because Lalisa will not have to sit beside Tzuyu anymore.

Jimin, Taehyung and I are now back on our seats. But everyone on the table are quiet because of the tension the Queen has brought when she arrived.

She has this strong aura that can silence the whole venue. Even Tzuyu got quiet.

"I'm apologizing for my daughter's rude behaviour my Queen" Tzuyu's father said.

"She's your daughter King Pamu? How come she didn't got your good traits?" the queen joked and the guests started laughing.

"I don't know too. She's been the family's blacksheep ever since." the king answered and they all laughed again.

Tzuyu's face turned sour because of it. Having her own father say those things to her.

"She's Tzuyu right. I can tell she needs proper training on being a good princess. Right Pranpriya?" The queen eyed Tzuyu from head down.

"Yes, she is. And she's really stubborn, I don't know what to do with her anymore." The king said.

I want to laugh at Tzuyu's face right now because the table seemed to turn. A while ago she was mocking Lalisa and now, the people at the table are giving her disappointed looks. Even Jennie is having fun because she got herself on a hot seat.

"Oh.. I remember you're the one who tried to accuse my granddaughter of cheating? You even asked the president to kick her out? Don't you know I can kick you out of my school instead?"

I was surprised to hear her say that. What does she mean? And who is she calling granddaughter? Is she really referring to Lalisa? But how? That's impossible!

I'm so confused right now.

Even Tzuyu was confused at the Queen's announcement. She's been calling Lalisa granddaughter for a while now.

"My queen, may I ask what's your relation to Lalisa?" I asked hoping for her to answer the thousands of questions running on my head right now.

"Her name is Pranpriya Manobal not Lalisa and she's my granddaughter. She is Thailand's Princess and soon she will be hailed as the new Queen." she said and the room was filled with murmurs and gasps and questions because of it.

She is what???

I looked at Lalisa who is now looking straight at me with a worried expression.

This can't be.

She is not.

She is my Lalisa, my wife. She is no Princess. She will not be the queen!

"But your princess died already if I remember." my mother asked.

"That was just an act. I had to announce that she died because of the threat in her life. I must protect her before she takes the crown on her 20th birthday. That's why I made her come here in this country to hide her from those who would want to kill her. I even made her go to an all-boy school just to make sure no one recognizes her as the missing princess."

My head is bursting with questions right now. I didn't expect this to happen.

Lalisa is a princess? I really can't believe this!

And she is soon to be a Queen?

A fucking queen of Thailand?

Wait! That means she is Taehyung's?

I glanced at Taehyung and he just nodded. So it's true. She's really the princess Taehyung keeps talking about.

"I see. So that's the reason why she's here and studies at Yonsei." My father muttered.

"Yes. And I want to thank you Mr. President for being hospitable while she's staying in your country. She really loved it here. Staying here made her change her plans. She even cancelled her engagement with the Prime Minister because of your son." she said and my

father's eyes widened.

She did that for me???

I guiltily look at Mario who has this sad look on his face.

So he's supposed to be Lalisa's husband. I clenched my fist at the thought that she will be marrying another guy.

"Oh my God! Are you telling us that the princess loves our son?" my father asked.

"Yes, she loves your son so much that she even threatened to let go of the crown just so I can approve their relationship but I'm afraid your son doesn't love her back." she said.

"Excuse me your highness but you're wrong. I love your granddaughter so much!" I almost stood in my seat from proving my point but my mother made me sit back.

The queen chuckled at my answer.

"No dear, if you love her, she wouldn't be crying. I am aware of your secret meet ups with another girl that she even got sick because of you. And that is not how love works boy. Do you have any idea how people bows down to her? How the people praises her? How people loves her? She is a Princess that everyone loves Jungkook and you just cheated on her." she said.

My parents got quiet because of this. If the Queen only knew how much I love her.

I looked at Lalisa who is now fidgetting her fingers under the table. I want her to tell her grandmother that she is wrong and that I love her but Lalisa is not even defending me.

She knows I love her!

"Your granddaughter knows I love her!" I said.

"I'm sorry but I don't see it like that." she smiled and she turned to my father.

"Please teach your son some loyalty Mr. President. That's an important trait he will need if he plans to be a president in the future." she said and she turned to the King. "And please tell your daughter to stop her madness or I will end her my own. And you know King Pamu that I never joke." she said and she stood.

"Pranpriya, it's time to go home." she commanded.

"But.." Lalisa tried to refuse.

"Where are you taking her?" I asked nervously. I didn't know my heart could beat this fast just expecting an answer.

"I'm taking her back to Thailand where she has a country to rule. Thank you for your hospitality Mr. President." she said while Mario guided Lalisa to stand.

"I'm so sorry for not knowing all of this. We should've treated the princess better." My father bowed to the queen.

"No! She is not leaving this country!" I almost yelled. "Father

please stop them!"

"Come now Princess. His probationary period is over." The queen said and Lalisa started walking away with Mario.

No! No! No!

I ran after her and hugged her back.

"Baby, please don't leave me. Please. You promise me." I said.

"Jungkook, I've had enough of humiliation this day. Please don't add up." she weakly said and she managed to escape from my arms.

Lalisa gave me one last look and then she left with Mario and the Queen.

"Jungkook, get back here!" My father called.

"Mom, I need to stop her please." I said.

"Later, after the party Jungkook please." she sighed. My mom's happy face a while ago turned into a sour one just because of Tzuyu.

"Are you happy now?" I turned to Tzuyu. And she looked down.

"I'm so disappointed in you Tzuyu! How can you embarrass me like this?" the king spoke.

"I..I didn't know she was a princess." she guiltily answer.

"Tzuyu, princess or not you should not treat her like that. You really crossed the line this time and with that I'm afraid I'm going to take you back to our country and have you finish your schooling there!" the king said and Tzuyu started crying.

"No dad please. I don't want to go back there. I want it here. I want Ladium!!!" she screamed like a little girl having tantrums.

"You think the Queen will let you get passed this? You just messed with the University owner Tzuyu. The princess you just messed with just happened to be the granddaughter of the owner of Yonsei and Ladium! There is no way you can set foot there again. So, I'm taking you home." The King said.

"No! Dad please no! I don't know she was that rich! I don't know she was a princess! Please dad don't take me home!" Tzuyu kept crying.

"I really apologize for my daughter's behavior. We just ruined your party Mr. President and with that I will have to leave earlier to deal with her." the King spoke to my father and my father nodded.

"Thank you for coming." My father shook his hand. And they left while dragging Tzuyu out.



Author's Note

I apologize for the bad chapter. I should have written better but I'm really occupied with work that's why I can't focus that much.

By the way, what do you think will happen next? Do you

think the story is near to its end?



The Flight Back Home

Jungkook's POV

I quickly drove home hoping to see Lalisa inside our dorm.

She said she will wait for me. She said I will see her again but I have a bad feeling about it.

When I opened the door of our room, she's not there. I tried to look for her in the bathroom, the garden even Jimin and Taehyung's room but she's not there.

She clearly left. Leaving all of her belongings here.

What do I do now?

I slumped down on my bed messing my hair!

Fuck!!!

Lalisa left me.

She left me because I didn't fought for her much.

I should have done better. I should have fought for her more.

I didn't know I was under surveillance and the worse is that the Queen has been watching my actions the whole time.

I feel so embarrassed having the Queen know my secret meetings with Tzuyu.

I really messed up this time!!!

She even approved of our relationship few days ago. Lalisa told me before that her grandmother approves us and I didn't even know back then that the grandmother she's referring to was actually the Queen.

That may be the reason why she was so happy that time.

Bht now, the Queen thinks I don't love her granddaughter enough which was wrong.

I heard the front door opened and I ran to see if Lalisa came back. But it's Taehyung and Jimin instead.

"Why didn't you tell me!" I asked him the moment he got in.

"Tell you what?" Taehyung asked.

"That she's a princess. That she's the one you love." I asked. He's my friend. He should've told me. I realize I look like a fool because I didn't know that the girl I am with is a goddamn princess.

"Yeah, why didn't you tell us Taehyung?" Jimin asked too.

"Because she asked me to keep it from you guys. Her life was in

threat and she's scared she'll get us in danger if we know the truth." Taehyung explained.

"Who the hell wants to kill her?" Jimin asked.

"I just read the news a while ago that it was her aunt who hopes to get her daughter take the crown instead of Pranpriya." Taehyung answered.

Pranpriya.

It was funny that I searched for her name the last time I was searching for Mario's fiancée having no idea that the one that I'm searching is actually my girl.

And how come I didn't realize all of this. The way she acts tells that she's really a princess. Her soft hands, the way she spoke, the way she complains about the hard bed, the way she easily gets bruises, the way she weirdly acts inside a classroom, the way she knows everything our professors are yet to discuss, the way she cares for animals.

She doesn't know any chores. She doesn't know how to shop, She doesn't know how to do almost every normal person can do. That was all because she lived different. She was home schooled because she's a princess, servants just buys her her clothes, she doesn't even been inside a mall or a movie theater, she's too polite and she's so kind like she doesn't have any idea how evil the real world can be.

She is a princess.

I just fell in love with a princess and I'm so damn lucky she loved me back.

And between the two of us, it is her who sacrifices the most. I admit I was a coward. I just let Tzuyu control me like a puppet which caused me to hurt her over and over.

And now, the queen doesn't approve of me anymore.

I just missed the chance of a lifetime. If I just didn't messed up, I could marry her anytime time now.

I should've done better. I love her so much and now I'm not even sure if I can see her again.

"Taehyung please help me. I need to have her back." I almost kneel in front of him just for him to help me.

I know that he can help me. Taehyung used to tell me stories that she knows the Queen so well.

"I'm afraid I cannot help you Jungkook. The Queen is someone you shouldn't disappoint. When she hates you, she hates you..There's nothing we can do." he said and I think his words crushed me more.

"That's what you get for cheating! I already warned you Jungkook. You should have treated Lalisa better. Now look what happened!" Jimin scolded.

"I'm sorry okay? I know I messed up but please help me. I need to win her back. I need her so much. I will die if I don't see her again!" I started crying in front of them and I expect Jimin to laugh but they both got quiet.

Jimin walked to me and patted my back.

"I'm sorry Jk for saying those things. But crying will not solve your problem. We need to think for a good plan for you to earn the queen's trust." Jimin answered and my head turned to him.

"Plan? You mean you'll help me?" I asked Jimin and he smiled.

"Of course. I don't want you to die" he chuckled and it made me smile. Jimin will help me? And that means a lot. At least someone is out there to help.

Then I look at Taehyung who is intently watching me.

"How about you? Will you please help me? You're the person who can help me a lot. You've been to Thailand and you know where she lives." I asked him nervously, praying that he will help me too.

Taehyung sighed.

"Jungkook, you don't know the queen. She's as scary as hell. You can't earn her trust just like that..It is impossible." He said." And I never stopped on reminding you to treat her better. That is because I know her grandmother." he added.

"I know it will be hard, but I will do anything for me to get Lalisa back. Please Taehyung help me." I said and he slightly nodded making me smile.

"Okay fine. But don't expect too much Jk." he answered.

"Thank you so much!" I said.

"Now, let's get you two back together." Jimin said as he ruffle my hair.

Thank goodness I have these two backing me up. Now all I need to do is to tell my parent that I'm going to Thailand.

Lalisa's POV

"Are you sure you're okay?" Mario asked as we sit on the private plane my grandmother owns.

"I want to tell you I am but I'm clearly not." I answered while looking at my grandmother. She is sitting in front of me with closed eyes but I know she's not yet sleeping.

"You'll be fine. Trust me." Grandmother replied still not looking at me.

"I'm not and I never will. Grandma please I love him!" I said.

She clearly took me by force with her. At first I was so hurt to stay at the party with Jungkook so I left. But I thought we can see

each other again. I thought grandma will let me go back first to the dorm but a moment later, she's telling me that we are going back straight to Thailand.

I freaked out of course. I don't want to go home yet. I promised my husband I will wait for him. Even if I was hurt that he wasn't able to defend me from Tzuyu, I will always forgive him. That's how I love Jungkook.

"That man doesn't love you Pranpriya! Why don't you just focus yourself on Mario instead!" she said and my eyes opened wide.

Don't tell me she's planning to make me marry Mario again???

"I will never focus on anyone except Jungkook!" I said. "No offense Mario" I said.

"No worries!" he smiled.

"Pranpriya stop. I know that Jungkook is a cheater! How can you even fall for a guy like that? He is just like your father and I don't want you to end like your mother!" the queen said.

"Jungkook loves me grandmother. Please believe me. He is not like my father. You don't know how much he loves me!" I almost yelled at the Queen's face.

"If he really loves you, he must prove it himself." she said.

"But how can he prove himself if we are going back to Thailand?" I asked.

"Thailand is not too far for someone who's in love. " she said and I tried to hide the smile on my face.

If proving is the case, I can say we already won.

I'm sure Jungkook will come to me. I trust him. I know he will prove it to my grandmother how much he loves me.

I smiled.

Just wait Grandmother and Jungkook will come at our door to take me back.



Author's Note

Have you ever been in love readers?



The Family Meeting

Jungkook's POV

"Are you sure you are going? We can have some of our guards accompany you and your friends there" my father nervously spoke.

"No dad please don't. I will go with Taehyung and Jimin only." I said.

"I'm really nervous for our son hon. What if the Queen locks him in a dungeon." My mother asked.

"Lalisa will not let her grandmother do that. I know her. She loves Jk so much that she won't let something bad happen to him" Jennie said.

"But still, we don't know the Queen. What if she hurts my son?" My mom asked again. She's being paranoid for this trip I am going. And I know it's only normal for a mother to be dramatic like this.

We are currently having a family meeting about my plan on taking Lalisa back. After persistent begging, they finally agreed on making me go to the country where my wife is.

At first, my father offered that he will go there and talk to the queen on my behalf but I refused because this is my own problem and I should solve it myself. I deserve this for being a coward.

"If you only let Jungkook and Lalisa together from the very start. Nothing of this would happen. They are probably happy now." Jennie rolled her eyes at mom.

"I didn't know she is a princess! Even Jungkook doesn't know that she is. That's why I made him be considerate of Tzuyu's feelings first. Which was wrong because that girl is a bitch after all. I really thought she is the sweetest." My mom answered..

"Good thing you know now." Jennie answered.

"Good thing I didn't let the arrange marriage pursue more or I'm going to have the worst daughter-in-law." my mother chuckled remembering Tzuyu's craziness.

"You planned for an arrange marriage?" I asked almost shouting.

"The King brought it up before the party started and we were considering it but I remembered you have someone else that's why your dad answered that you should decide on your own. It really saddened the King and honestly me too. I didn't know then Tzuyu can be as bad as that." my mother shook her head.

"Thank goodness you didn't." I could only imagine how hurt

Lalisa would be if she hears my sudden engagement with Tzuyu on that party.

"That girl really gave me a headache. But on the other side, I am happy to finally meet the girl that you like." My father said as he smile at me.

"I just don't like her. I love her!" I said.

"No need to shout loverboy!" Jennie rolled her eyes for the 10th time.

"Yes, she is a headache. I really feel sorry for that princess Pranpriya. I want to apologize to her personally for everything that I caused. This is clearly my fault. If I didn't asked Jungkook to tend to Tzuyu's feelings more, this wouldn't happen." she said.

I just got quiet because it's partly true. My mother was scared of me not being in good terms with Tzuyu that she made me choose to hurt Lalisa more. But, it is also my fault for not refusing.

And now, It caused me to lose Lalisa. My wife.

"I'm scared dad, mom. What if she won't let me see Lalisa?" I asked sadly. I can't imagine not seeing her again.

"Just do what you can do Jungkook. Prove her that you really love the princess. Maybe the Queen will listen. Let's just hope for the best." My father said.

"Now I really feel guilty for getting in the way. If I only knew how great this girl is, I would've let you be together from the start. Just seeing her once makes me like her already. She seems to be kind. No wonder you and Jennie really like her." Mother said.

"There's nothing more that we can do now but to hope that they be together again. I can't believe our son is fighting for a girl." father said with an amused expression.

"You just don't know how he and his friends fought just to get Lalisa." Jennie said.

"Oh right! I remember. Does Taehyung and Jimin like her too? I was really worried at the party. I thought you are going to kill each other!" My mom asked.

"Yes, they like her too but she's mine. She only loves me!" I sternly said.

"Possessive much. But sadly none of you guys has her now. She would probably end up marrying that Mario guy." Jennie teased and I frowned.

"No!!! She's mine. No one is marrying her except me!" I really want to punch Jennie now if she's only not my sister.

"Come to think of it. Mario is a really good guy. I know him personally because I am good friends with his father." Father explained and I frowned more.

"And he's hot too. Did you see how Tzuyu's eyes sparkled when

she saw him?" Jennie laughed.

"The princess would be lucky if they end up together." mother added.

"Hey!!! Stop talking about Mario! I'm here and I am your family! You guys should be supporting me and giving me advises yet you are complimenting that ugly guy!" I almost yelled at their faces but they just laughed at me.

"Mario, Taehyung and Jimin. You really have a good competition right now son. I hope you win her in the end." Father said.

"I know."

I know that I need to do my best. But I'm kinda happy that Jimin and Taehyung are out of the picture now. Mario is my only real competition and I really hope the queen don't push their engagement now that Lalisa is back in their country.

I sighed.

Why can't we just be happy together?



Author's Note.

Do you think Mario is the worst competition Jungkook will face among the three?

By the way, if you ever get the chance to see 3 kpop idol. Who would it be? And please rank them with 1 being the highest. 🍷

Mine is

3. Taehyung 🐱

2. Jungkook 🐰

1. My baby Lisa 💖

The Princess' Land

Jungkook's POV

Finally Thailand!

I excitedly inhaled the air of Bangkok when we arrived at the airport.

It feels so good to step foot on the place where Lalisa is born.

I don't know where she is exactly at this point but my heart is beating so fast and I can tell she's just few miles away from me.

"Let's go, my mom is there!" Taehyung excitedly pulled me and Jimin with him. To go to where his mother is.

"Mom! I missed you!" Taehyung embraced his mother who is now crying. His mother lives here that's why Taehyung misses her so much.

"I missed you too Jack!" she replied. Jimin and I just happily watched their reunion together.

When they were done hugging each other, both of them faced us.

"Mom, this is Jimin and this is Jungkook." Taehyung introduced us and she bowed.

"Nice to finally meet the both of you. Thank you so much for being kind to my son!" she said.

"We are happy to meet you Ma'am. And we're happy to be friends with him. He's a great friend." I answered.

"Oh don't call me Ma'am. Just call me Pa, It means aunt." she said and we nodded.

"Come and I'll drive you to our house. Taehyung said you are staying there for few days." she said and we started walking to her car.

When Pa was finally driving, we were all surprised to see the scenery outside our car.

"Holy Shit!!!" Jimin cursed.

Our jaw dropped open when we saw it.

There they were, Thai people rallying around the streets of the city.

What surprised us most is not the rallying people but the thing they are holding.

They were holding banners, placards and more with pictures of Lalisa, my wife.

I don't understand what is written because they are written in

Thai characters and I'm so curious what is there. I can't understand the Thai language yet.

Good thing Taehyung's mother, the Queen and even Mario can speak fluent Korean that's why I can understand them.

"What is happening Pa?" I asked Taehyung's mom when our car suddenly stopped because of the rallying people. They almost block the streets which makes it hard for vehicles to pass by.

"They are rallying because the Queen announced that the Princess is still alive. And they want to see her." She said as she smile at Taehyung through the rear view mirror.

Taehyung hesitantly looked away probably because of her mom's teasing smile.

"Mom, I told you already, Jungkook and Pranpriya are together now." Taehyung reminded and her mother guiltily nodded.

"Sorry. I forgot. I just can't help but be happy that she's really alive. And I know you are happier than me." her mother apologized and I kinda feel guilty. If I didn't came in the picture, Taehyung and Lalisa may have been together now.

"It's all in the past mom. I only want Lalisa's happiness." he said.

I tried to ignore the guilt in me by looking out of the car window again. And I regretted doing it because there I saw pictures of my wife with Mario and heart shapes around their picture like what the fuck!. These people are carrying my wife's picture with Mario and they don't even know that they are not together! I'm the one that she loves! Why do they made edited pictures of them like that and even made a banner out of it?

"Why are there pictures of Lalisa and Mario?" I asked Tae's mom.

"Because the people wants to push their engagement now that they know that she's alive." she answered.

What the fuck? Are they serious?

"Oh my Gosh! Now we better work fast!" Jimin said.

I clenched my fist at the thought. So the queen really wants her to marry him. This is so stupid! Just because I did fail her once, she's already doing this? Doesn't she care about her granddaughters happiness?

"Can we go straight to the palace? I really want to see her now." I said. My heart is aching just not seeing her for days. And the fact that I learned this news doesn't help my anxious heart.

I miss her so much. My wife. I really want to see her now.

"I'm sorry Jungkook but it's impossible to go straight to the palace now. Look how many people are in the streets right now. And just imagine how more people are now rallying infront of the Palace. It's impossible to pass through the tight security now. And I heard the Queen won't let visitors at the moment because of this." she

explained which frustrates me more.

"You mean I have to wait before I see her?" I asked.

"Yes. You need to make a plan first before going there. The Queen doesn't let anyone see the princess yet that's why the Thai people are rallying because they want to see the princess already. They want to confirm if she's really alive."

I sighed.

"But I miss her too. I need her more than these people. She's mine!" I yelled.

"Calm down Jungkook!" Taehyung said.

"But I need to see her. Taehyung help me please." I said. I want to see her, I want to kiss her, to embrace her, to hold her. I feel like she's getting further away from me because of her being a princess.

How I wish she's just an ordinary girl who I can see and spend time anytime I want. But sadly she's a Princess and worse is that she's going to be the Queen. And with that it would be more impossible for us to be together.

Fuck my life!!!

"If you really want to see her, the Palace will have a live broadcast of her later. The princess will be shown in the television to prove people that she's really alive. It will ease the worried people. And they will see that the country has still a future Queen." she said.

I hate that the only way I can see her is through television when few days ago I can kiss her, I can touch her, I can even fuck her.

I'm really sad right now. But I have no choice but to settle with that for the meantime.

Moments Later, we finally arrived at the house where Taehyung's mother lives.

"We're just in time to watch the live broadcast." she said when we settled on the living room.

I excitedly sat straight as Pa turn on the big screen TV.

And when the TV was on. A reporter started talking and thank God there are subtitles.

"We are gathered here this night to finally see the missing Princess of Thailand. Pranpriya Manobal, Thailand's kindest princess turned out to be alive after months of being declared dead. The Queen explained that it she was announced dead just so the Princess can hide from those who wants to murder her. And now that the culprit has been captured, the Queen finally exposed the royal secret."

The reporter smiled and my palms sweated from the antipation of seeing Lalisa through the screen.

"And our dear Thai people, let us finally welcome back our dearest Princess, Our future Queen."

"Pranpriya Manobal!"

My heart stopped for a moment when the camera was turned to her.

My baby.

My wife.

Who happened to be the Princess.

And will be the country's Queen.

I didn't realized I was already crying just seeing her smiling at the screen. I imagine her smiling at me.

She was mine.

I used to kiss those lips, that nose, those eyelids, those cheeks, that forehead.

I used to kiss every part of her body, I used to talk to her, I used to laugh with her, I used to cuddle her, I used to sleep on the same bed as her.

I used to own her but she seemed too distant now.

It's all because of me.

If I just didn't cheated.

If I just fought for her more.

Nothing of this would've happened.

"Good evening my dear people of Thailand. I am Pranpriya Manobal, the Princess. And I'm here this evening in front of you to tell you all that I'm back. I am well and alive. And with that, I promise you that I will be the Queen and that you don't have to fear no more. I will rule this country with all my heart and I will make this country a better one. Thank you so much for your support." Lalisa said.

I can't help but to clap my hands. Jimin and Taehyung joined me too.

Y'all that's my girl right there! And she's a fucking Queen!!!

I'm so proud of her.

I was really lucky to own her heart when she owns the Thai people's heart.

But my chest started aching when the broadcast ended. Making me realize that I don't have her anymore. And all I can do now is to hope that the Queen accepts me back.



Author's Note

How is the chapter so far?

By the way, how long are you as a kpop fan.

As for me, I've been only a fan for 9 months now.

The Palace

Lalisa's POV

"Is there a sign of him yet?" I asked Kunpimook when he returned from a meeting with the Queen.

"No Princess, Jungkook is not here yet." he whispered while looking around. Afraid that someone would hear us.

"What's taking him so long? Grandmother is gonna make me marry Mario in no time. I need him to be here already." I said.

"Sadly, the Queen is not accepting visitors at the moment princess." he said.

"But why? what if Jungkook is already here and he just can't get through the palace gates?" I worriedly asked Kunpimook who has been my secret informant.

Well, all of the people here in the palace follows my grandmother while Kunpimook is the only one helping me. That's why I'm so grateful to him.

He has been secretly following my orders which includes informing me the Queen's Plans and looking out for signs of Jungkook.

My grandmother has been planning on pushing me and Mario back again so I need to work fast. I need my husband to come here soon.

Sadly, I can't call him because my grandmother took away my phone.

"Don't worry Princess, I'll try to see if he's there at the gates. But I doubt it will be easy because there are still people in front of the palace gates who wishes to see you."

"I just wish I can go there to look for him myself." I said.

"It's too dangerous my Princess. But you can at least go to the Main Palace and wave to the crowd. Maybe you can spot him if he's there." he said and I nodded.

"Thank you so much Kunpimook. You really are the best!" I said and he smiled.

"Anything for you princess."

Jungkook's POV

"That's a fucking huge palace!" I said in awe as we watch the Palace from a hotel we are currently staying at.

And my wife lives there. I can't believe she's this rich. But she's

the humblest person I know that's why I love her so much.

She's just close to me but there are still a lot of people in front of the palace gates and I doubt we can enter easily.

"Yeah it is. I can't believe Lalisa made us believe that she came from a small country. What was that again? Lurawak?" Jimin asked while laughing.

"Me too. And I almost went crazy from looking for that place when it doesn't exist in the end!" I said.

"Poor guys. But hey enough talking and let's plan out how you can see the Princess." Taehyung said in a hurry.

"Hmm..through the Palace gates?" Jimin suggested.

"Seriously? Can't you see those people around, we will die before we even reach the gates." Taehyung said.

"You're right. But how?are there other routes leading to the inside of the Palace?" I asked.

Taehyung thought for a moment then he smiled.

"Yeah! Pranpriya always uses a secret route to sneak out of the palace back then! But it's a little longer and harder to take. Pranpriya told me that before." Taehyung excitedly said.

"Really? Why would she sneak out out? Isn't it dangerous for a princess?" Jimin asked.

"She would always sneak out everyday just to see me." Taehyung explained which made me feel jealous towards him. Lalisa really takes extra mile just to spend time with him.

But I'm glad it's me who she loves now. I don't know what I would do if she ends up choosing Taehyung instead of me.

Jimin must have noticed my silence that's why he spoke.

"Do you know how to pass through the secret route?" he asked Taehyung but he just shook his head.

"Sadly, it is only her who knows the secret. But we can walk around the Palace walls to look for it." Taehyung suggested.

Looking at the walls. It is as wide as fuck and I bet it would take us the whole day to go around.

That's what you get for messing up! I told myself.

"So now, what are we going to do once we sneak Jungkook in?" Taehyung asked.

"Wait wait wait! You mean I'm the only one who will have to go inside?" I asked.

"Yes, because you're the only one who needs to talk to the Queen. We'll just wait till you get back." Taehyung said.

I'm scared. What if the Queen chops my head?

Nah! That's impossible. And my wife won't let her do that.

"Okay. I will! Anything for Lalisa." I said with a strong voice even through my heart is hammering out of my chest from nervousness.

"Do you think the Queen will listen to me?" I asked.

"Maybe. I'm not sure." Taehyung said.

"Why don't you just have sex with her secretly and make her pregnant so that the Queen will let you two together because of a royal baby." Jimin joked and Taehyung frowned even more.

"Hey! Let's not talk about Pranpriya's sex activities right now!" Taehyung scolded but Jimin just laughed.

"What? I'm sure they've done it already. Remember how weird Lalisa was walking when they came back from Jeju. She can't even walk properly. Jungkook must have been rough on--"

"Stop! I don't want to hear it!" Taehyung shouted while covering his ears.

It made me laugh too.

Good old days.

"Quit joking around. If I were you, you'll go straight to the Queen and talk to her yourself. If she listens, end of problem." Taehyung said in a very serious manner.

"If she don't?" I asked.

"Then just ran away with her." he said and I smiled.

Ran away? Well. That's a good plan.

"Yeah ran away and let all the Thai people chase you." Jimin said.

"Ahhh! My head is hurting now! I'll just go talk to her and see myself what I should do next."

Come what may.

Shortly after, we arrived at the Palace gates where a lot of people are waiting. And to my luck, Lalisa came in front of the main building but the building is too far.

She waved at the people without noticing me. So I shouted her name.

"Lalisaaaaaaaa" I kept calling her but she can't hear me because of the distance. She started walking away without even seeing me.

The people are going crazy because of her sudden appearance that's why I wasn't able to go near the gates.

Fuck!

How can she be near but I can't even touch her!

I want to kiss her and hug her right now but these people are going crazy like she's their God.

She's my wife for fuck's sake.

What do I do now?

I really wished she's just an ordinary girl from Luwakar. Or a cannibal girl from a tribe's place.

"What do we do now?" I asked as I face Jimin and Taehyung but they just gave me a sad look.

When I looked back at the gate. I saw someone. Someone I know

and someone I think who can help me.

Lalisa's friend which named Bam saw me and he waved his hand.

And I excitedly waved mine.

I can feel it! I know I will see her this day. And I'm so excited!



Author's Note

I apologize for the short chapter.

Btw, I've been reading your answers on my previous question. May I ask now what is your rabbit hole in Kpop?

The Longing Couple

Jungkook's POV

Bam and I sneaked inside the palace.

With His help, we were able to pass through all the securities guarding the place.

It was really really hard. And I'm sweating because of the fear from getting caught.

We're now inside one of the Palace building looking around hoping not to get caught by one of the patrolling guards.

"Where are we? Are we going to see the Queen?" I asked whispering.

"No, the Queen is at the main Building. We are here inside the Princess' room." he said an my eyes widened.

"This is just her room?" What the fuck? This is as nearly as huge as our Mansion!

"Yes, it is. Now come with me. She's been waiting for you." he said and I felt butterflies on my stomach.

"She's waiting?" I asked to confirm as I smile ear to ear.

"Yes, she's been waiting for you for days." he shortly answered.

My baby is waiting for me! I want to jump out of happiness.

She wants to see me? She really wants to see me!!!

"Stop squeaking!" Bam scolded and I zipped my mouth from creating weird noises.

I'm just so happy right now. I thought she's mad and now that I know that she's been waiting. I can't help but smile.

We finally stopped in front of a huge wooden door and luckily, there are no guards rounding at this point.

My baby is inside. I can feel it. My Lalisa-radar is working.

Bam knocked on the wooden door and I stood straight as I wait for an answer. I would literally jump on Lisa right now because I miss her so much!

"Princess, this is Kunpimook. May I come in?" Bam asked.

"Wait... Kunpimook, I'm still changing!" I heard her panicked voice from the other side. She's really there! That's my baby's voice.

And me being me, can't help myself but picture her naked body right now.

My goddess wife.

I hope she lets us in already so that I can see what she's wearing.

I mean only me because I don't want this guy to see her just done changing.

"You can come in now." she said and just the sound of her voice makes me feel complete.

Suddenly, the door was pushed open buy Bam and I searched for her.

And there she was, standing near a big ass bed inside a very huge room that even our dorm can fit.

Her eyes widened when she saw me and I didn't realized I was already running to her closing our distance. Lalisa was running to me too and when she was near, she jumped on me and wrapped her slim arms on my neck.

"Baby!" I say on her neck. It feels so good. So so good to hold her like this. Her legs were wrapped around my waist as I support her weight by wrapping my arms on her back.

"Jungkook! I missed you!" she sobbed on my neck. My baby misses me and hearing this feom her makes me really happy.

I pulled her body closer to me as I want to feel her warmth. Her scent is my home and I feel at ease just by hearing her voice, feeling her body against me.

"I thought you hate me. I'm so sorry for letting all of those things happen baby. I should've done better." I said still holding her body.

"Uhm, I will leave you two alone Princess. Just call me when you need me." Bam said.

"Thank you so much Kunpimook." Lalisa said then I placed her down. I didn't noticed she was just wearing a red silk robe until I look at her body. Her hair is damp which means she just came out from a bath. I suddenly became conscious if I smell alright because I sweated too much from sneaking my self in.

"Let's forget about it. What's important is you're here now." she smiled.

"No, I want to talk about it. I want to apologize for everything. For treating you bad, for always choosing to hurt you because I'm a coward. And none of this would've happened if I just did the right thing. That's why I would like to apologize for everything. I regret hurting you. I'm so sorry baby." I said.

"It's okay Jungkook. I forgive you. We all make mistakes. I lied too. I didn't tell you about the real me. I didn't tell you that I was already engaged." she said.

"No, you lied about the real you just to protect yourself. And you stopped the engagement because of me. My mistake was bigger. I hurt you and that caused me to lose you." I said.

"Jungkook, let's not talk about it anymore. We are humans and we learn through our mistakes. What matters now is that we both

love each other. We are sorry and the only problem we need to solve is our families' approval." she said.

"No, my parents are not a problem anymore. As a matter of fact. They are very sorry for the trouble they caused our relationship. Mom and Dad wants to apologize to you personally." I said and she smiled.

"Really? So my grandmother's approval is our only problem now."

"Yes, And I will talk to the Queen right now to convince her to let me be with you." I said.

"No, not yet." Lalisa stopped me by grabbing my hands.

"Why? I want to make this right. I want to tell her how much I love you and I will do everything just for her to approve our relationship." I said with all my heart.

Now that I'm here in the palace, I really want to talk to her already so that Lalisa and I can be together.

"Now is not the right time. I heard she's talking to Mario. Please stay with me first." She shyly said as she bit her lower lip.

And I know that look.

She wants me. Just like how I want her.

"Of course baby, I want to stay with you too." I said then I leaned to kiss her lips.

Her lips feels so soft and warm that it makes me crave for more. After being away from her for few days, I can't help but to wish that we stay like this forever. I wrapped my arms around her body kissing her lovingly. I just really want to hold her like this.

Her heart is beating too fast against my chest and she's breathing heavily mirroring mine.

"You are not marrying that guy!" I said when I lowered my lips on her neck.

"Hmm" Lalisa didn't answer. Maybe she was too focused on my lips placing gentle kisses on her neck.

"Say it baby." I said as I untie her robe to let me see what's inside.

I succesfully untied her red silk robe.

"Look at that gorgeous body. I'm so lucky I'm the only one who gets to see and touch this." I said as I watch her body in awe. She's only wearing a matching black laced underwear under her robe which compliments her milkish-white skin.

"I will never marry him." she finally said.

"Good. Because you are mine Lalisa. And it will stay like that until forever." I said before owning her lips once again.



Author's Note

Sorry for the late update.

What do you think will they do next?



The Reunion

Jungkook's POV

"Jungkook we haven't locked the door yet, she said when I kneeled infront of her. Facing her clothed cunt.

"Then their eyes will be blessed when they see us." I said and I slid her panties down from her hips.

"You look so hot baby. Can I have a taste?" I asked as I lock my eyes on her pink little pussy.

"Yes please." she said. I didn't wait any longer and I started running my tongue on her pussy lips.

"Ahhh... Jungkook!" she moaned my name as I kiss her, licking her wetness with my tongue.

I placed one of her leg on my shoulder and she grabbed my hair to balance herself.

I started on pleasuring her clit. Sucking it and licking her everytime waves of wetness drips out of her.

She gasped when I pushed two finger in. Curling my fingers inside rubbing her g-spot. I began rubbing her as I suck her.

"Jungkook right there! Ahhhh!" she throw her head back as she came in my mouth.

And I love seeing her cum like this. Good thing I was able to hold her body with my free arm before she falls on the floor.

Her pelvis were shaking and her pussy walls were twitching around my fingers which was still inside her as she reached an intense orgasm.

She's so sensitive right now. And her body feels so weak.

"You like it baby?" I smirked when she came back on her senses.

"That was so good Jungkook!" she smiled. Her eyes sparkled with happiness.

I pulled my wet fingers out of her and sucked it.

"Tasty!" I say and her cheeks reddened when she saw me do that.

Moments later, I was already carrying her weak body to her bed which is wider than our combined beds in the dorm.

After eating her out, my baby came twice that she can't even walk. She's too sensitive now and I'm glad I made her cum like that.

Now I can't wait to pleasure my self too.

"Baby, remove that robe." I asked in a low voice.

"Okay" She let it fall from her shoulders and I removed my clothes too. Not caring if anyone would enter her room.

She's now sprawled on her bed naked waiting for my next move. Her eyes watched me when I remove my pants and my boxers. Revealing my already hard cock.

Her eyes dimmed at the sight.

"You miss my cock baby?" I teased.

"I missed it but It look scary as always." she nervously said.

"Don't be. My cock will get us in heaven." I said then I started crawling to her. My cock is now brushing her pussy as I kiss her breast playing with her nipples with my teeth and tongue.

I sucked her tits and it swelled and reddened. Lalisa just closed her eyes, enjoying my mouth on her breast.

"Jungkook, I want to kiss you too." she said and I smiled.

Fucking great. I'll be getting a bj from the love of my life and I can't wait to be honest.

"As you wish Princess." I said then I flipped us over. My back now lays on her bed and I realized how soft her bed is.

It's the softest and widest bed I've ever seen. Now I understand why she said our bed is hard.

Lalisa shyly held my cock in her hands.

"3,2,1.." I hear her said.

"Wait. Did you just count?" I asked and she nodded.

"Why are you counting?" I asked again.

"Because I'm getting ready." she said.

Oh my lord. You're adorable as always.

"Please don't count baby. Just.. Just start right away." I said and she nodded.

Lalisa's POV

Jungkook moaned with just one lick on the tip of his cock.

His glorious cock feels so hot in my hands. I had to use tow hands to hold it because of its size.

Jungkook's eyes watched me when I stated licking his dick from bottom to top. This is really embarrassing. Having him watch me like this. But I want to pleasure him too.

"Jungkook, don't look" I said when I noticed his lustful eyes.

"You are beautiful. Don't be shy." he said. And I nodded.

I started licking his popsicle stick once again earning groans and moans from him.

Then I put his into my mouth and moved my head up and down. I took just half of his length in my mouth cause it already reaches my throat. I just used my hands on the remaining length because I know he likes it this way.

"Baby you're so good!" Jungkook's eyes are closed now and his

sweaty body is on display.

He looks so breathtaking as I continue sucking his dick while twirling my tongue around his from time to time.

"Baby, I'm going to cum!" he said then he quickly pulled his cock out of my mouth.

He groaned because of it but he smiled sweetly at me.

He must've noticed my confused look that's why he answered.

"Not in my princess' mouth" he said then he pulled me to straddle his waist.

"What are you doing?" I asked when he lifted my hips right above his cock.

"You will take charge baby." he said.

"But I don't know?" I asked nervously.

"You are my queen and you will rule. That includes ruling my dick." he chuckled.

Then he lifted my hips further away from his hard standing cock.

My eyes widened when I realized what he's about to do.

"Jungkook?" I squeaked when the head of his cock entered me.

"Ahhh... Stop!" I say as I feel the pain consume my being.

But Jungkook just pulled my hips down to his cock.

I can feel every inch of his veiny hard cock tearing me and even if I'm wet, it still hurts so bad.

"Baby, don't cry." he said. When all of his length was almost inside.

"I can't move." I said my walls are still adjusting to his size.

"Just move your hips up and down baby." he said and I followed him.

I slowly lifted my hips and move down again.

"I love you Lalisa!" he said.

I did it again over and over slowly. I can see Jungkook's frustration because of it but whay can I do? it hurts and I need to compose my self first.

"Sorry for doing this baby but I can't hold back anymore." Jungkook grabbed my hips and pulled me to his cock all the way down.

"Ahhhh!!!" I screamed when his cock disappered in me. "That one hurts!" I smacked his arm but he just grinned.

He flipped us again without pulling out and he spread my legs open.

"Look at that view. So wet!" he said then he started thrusting his monster cock in me.

It hurts but it also feels good.

His cock hits me so deep and I can't help but moan his name.

"Why are you so tight!"

"So tight baby!"

Jungkook kept telling me how tight I am everytime he pushes his cock in.

"I want to enjoy this baby but I really am cumming" he said then he started slamming his cock inside me. I can feel the pressure building up in me again and I can tell I'm closed too.

"Jungkook faster!" I said then he complied.

His cock moved faster and harder in me and I noaned so hard when I reached a body-shattering orgasm.

I can feel my legs numb and my pussy clamped at his dick.

"Fuck! Your pussy is going crazy!" he said as he mercilessly pumped my weak and sensitive womanhood with his cock.

"I love you Lalisa!" he moaned. Then he spilled his cum inside me.

His cock throbbed inside me as he empty his cum.

"I love you baby!" he said on my neck when he plopped down above me. I can feel his heavy breathing against my chest.

"I love you too" I said then he face me.

"Are you still taking the pills?" he asked.

"Yes I am." I answered proudly. Knowing Jungkook, I should never miss taking one.

He frowned at my answer and I got curious.

"Why?" I asked.

"Hmm..nothing." he answered. Looking away from my face.

"What is it? Tell me?" I pulled his chin to face me.

"Uhm.. Don't you think it would be nice if we make a...baby?" He asked hesitantly.

"What? No!" I said.

"But I want--"

"No Jungkook! I don't want to be pregnant yet." I said as I slid my body away from him. Turning my back on him.

"Okay fine.. Sorry baby for suggesting that. I just really want to be with you forever and having a baby will create us a bond that we can never be apart from each other anymore." I hear him say as he hug my back.

"Jungkook, a baby will not solve our problem. And we're too young for that!" I said raising my voice.

"I know. I'm sorry okay?" he said, pulling my back to his.

His arms were wrapped around me now and I can feel his hard cock on my ass.

He's hard again.

I really wonder how he gets hard as easy as that with just few seconds.

"Okay. But please no more talk about baby making!" I said and he

chuckled.

"Baby, what we are doing now is baby making only that you are on pills." he said.

"Whatever!" I said.

"My baby is getting feisty." he said then I was shocked when he pushed his cock inside me again.

"Ow!" I almost screamed. "Jungkook! What are you doing?" I asked as I look at him over my shoulders. His hands gripped my hips so hard making it hard for me to pull away from him.

"Uhm..fucking?" he grinned then he pulled his cock out, grabbing my hips up and the next thing I know, I was already in all fours.

"Jungkook?" I asked again. I don't know what he's about to do and why am I in this position.

"Just relax their baby." he said as he brush his cock on my opening.

Doing this is really embarrassing. My ass is clearly displayed on his sight right now and I want to move away but he's gripping my hips so hard. I'm sure it will create bruises tomorrow.

"I'm gonna enter you" he said and I blushed. His cock started penetrating me in a slow and gentle manner.

"Fucking tight baby! Your pussy's so tight!" he groaned as he push all the way in.

I had to bite my lip at the pain. His size will surely be the death of me.

Jungkook started moving again and his cock feels so deep in me. It's hitting my end because of the position

He began on thrusting harder. I had to grip the sheets.

My bed squeaked at Jungkook's roughness and later, my room was filled with our sexy noises.

He really feels so good inside me. Hitting my walls so hard.

"I love you so much! I'm going to cum again!" he announced while pushing his cock harder in me.

After few hard thrust, Jungkook came inside me again shortly after I reached my orgasm.

I ignored the soreness in my pussy and my aching body.

Bruises started to form around my body and Jungkook looked at it guiltily.

"I'm so sorry for giving you those." he said and I shook my head.

"It's fine. Now let's go to sleep. I'm so tired." I said but he pouted.

"But we were just starting?" he whined like a little boy throwing tantrums.

"Jungkook, let me rest for a while. My thing is aching."

"You mean you didn't enjoyed it?" He asked sadly.

"Of course I enjoyed doing it but your cock is just too big. I need

to recover first!" I replied.

"Fine but we'll do it again tomorrow okay?"

"Yes." I answered shortly and closed my eyes. I'm too tired to even wear back my robe.

Jungkook hugged my naked body. And we slept with smiles on our faces.



Author's Note

I apologize for the bad chapter and the misspelled words. I'm too lazy to edit lol

LalisaManoBang

This is not an update.

I just want to express how happy I am seeing Lisa's holy forehead.
She even trended on twitter with the hashtag #LalisaManoBang



Look at that beauty. I swear she makes me question my sexuality.



The Day Before Judgement

Lalisa's POV

"Princess? The Que..Oh my God!" I heard Sir Rudolph's voice.

I rubbed my eyes open and realized I was still naked. The only thing that covers my body is my sheets. Jungkook and I's clothes and underwears are scattered on the floor.

Shit! I cursed mentally when I realized that Sir Rudolph saw this.

"hmmm baby, it's too early." I look beside me and realized Jungkook is sleeping naked too. Jungkook pulled my waist to him more.

"Princess, the Queen is calling for you. Please dress up and see her. I'll wait for you in the Queen's chamber and please tell your visitor to come too." I hear him say. His back is turned on us. Awkward at the sight of the naked Princess.

"Oh.. Owkay.." I answered.

This is so embarrassing! I want to kill Jungkook right now. If we just locked the door, this would never happen. Sir Rudolph will probably tell my Grandmother about this.

Sir Rudolph finally left and just after a minute it opened again for Kunpimook.

"Princess.. Holy shit!!!" he blushed when he saw us too but he quickly left the room.

"Jungkook wake up!" I shook his body.

Gosh, his muscles are just so...

"hmm" he hummed with still closed eyes.

"Jungkook! Get up and change before everyone sees us!" I say.

"Then let them be" he shrugged and continued sleeping.

"Jungkook!!!" I yelled and he quickly sat up straight.

"Geez! Why are you shouting so early in the morning? I'm still enjoying your bed."

"Bacause you are not getting up!"

"Good morning baby! Look at that gorgeous body!" he said and he started hovering me again.

What's wrong with this guy? He's like this all the time.

I pushed him quickly before his lips lands on my chest.

"Jungkook, I swear to god, the queen is going to chop your stick if we don't see her right away!" I warned and he quickly stood from the bed. I stood to wear my robe back.

"Why didn't you tell me sooner? She knows I'm here?" he asked. And I tried my best not to look down his naked form. His cock is hard again. And I closed my legs to stop myself from wetting.

He's a bad influence. Now he has this effect on me to want him physically too.

"Sir Rudolph probably told her by now. So please get ready." I said. "I need to bath first. Just wear your clothes from yesterday." I added.

"But I smell like cum! Is it fine to meet the Queen smelling like that?" he chuckled.

Oh I forgot!

"Fine. You will bath with me to save some time. And we'll just have Kumpulook deliver fresh set of clothes for you." I said.

He smiled wickedly.

"I know that smile Jungkook. No, we are not doing sex today!" I said and he pouted.

"Fine."

I walked to the intercom to talk. "Kumpulook, please send me here new set of men's clothes. Something that would fit Jungkook." I said.

"Wow! It's cool" he said and I was done giving request.

"What's cool?"

"Having someone deliver me clothes." he said.

"Come on now. Let's take a bath." I said and pulled him.

When we got inside my bathroom, Jungkook gasped.

"Wow! You got an awesome bathroom. This will be a good place for us to fuck." he said.

"Every place is a good place for you to fuck" I rolled my eyes.

"Not churches though." he muttered.

"You are a very holy man" I sarcastically said.

"Thank you." he smiled innocently.

I can't with him! Instead of arguing, I just walked to my bathtub.

"Jungkook, hurry or the Queen will get here first" I said and I let my robe down and settled on my bathtub but I hear him groan because of it.

"What?" I smiled when he too got in.

"You're making it hard for me to think properly when I see your body like this." he said and I chuckled.

"Just be a good boy now and I will reward you later." I said.

"Now we are talking." Jungkook excitedly grinned.

After the bath, Jungkook changed to a more decent clothes. And I really want to thank Kumpulook for his help. I plan to make him my right hand when I became the Queen because of his loyalty. Besides, his father wants to retire now because of his age.

"Are you ready?" I asked him.

He gave me a tight lipped smile. And he breathed heavily while shaking his fingers maybe to ease his nervouness.

I can't help but be worried for him. I don't know how the Queen will react especially that he just sneaked in our palace.

"Let's go." he said.

We started walking to the Queen's Chamber with Kunpimook leading us.

"The Princess is here" Kunpimook announced when we're already in front of the closed doors of the Throne Room.

"Let her in" Sir Rudolph said from the other side.

The door finally opened and I held Jungkook's shaking hand. He looked at me and I smiled.

"Everything is going to be okay. Don't worry Jungkook. Our love will prevail." I assured him while squeezong his hand. he smiled and nodded.

He turned his head forward and we walked hand in hand to where the Queen is.

I ignored the anxiety building up on me. I love this man so much and I will never let her take me away from Jungkook. I am his as he is mine.



Author's Note

I still can't get over my Lisa's forehead. I'm turning gay tbh



By the way, is it possible to buy Elle Magazine with Lisa as the cover online?

The Queen's Judgement

Jungkook's POV

I nervously walked inside holding Lalisa's hand. This is the most terrifying, nerve wracking feeling I've felt ever my whole life. As if I will be sentenced to death. Well it's partly true because losing Lalisa will be the death of me.

I don't know why but the I'm really nervous facing the Queen right. Maybe because somehow I know that if I fail, I might never see my wife again.

The Royal Throne Room is a bit intimidating. I feel like I'm a very small human being just being here in front of the Queen who sits on the Queen's chair looking down on me. On her right stood an old man.

I am not the Jeon Jungkook which is the son of the president here but the Princess' lover. And today, the Queen will pass her judgement whether I like it or not.

I gulped and swallowed the remaining fear in me and just focused on how to persuade her to let me be with her granddaughter.

"Your majesty." I said and bowed.

"Jeon Jungkook, how did you managed to sneak inside the Palace without me knowing?" she asked glancing at Lalisa.

"It was my order to let him in grandmother." Lalisa said.

"And who took your order?" She asked glancing at Bam. Bam nervously looked down.

"I did." Bam answered guiltily.

"I can punish Kunpimook for disobeying me." she said glancing at the old man. And the old man sadly nodded.

"No! Kunpimook must never be punished! It was me who insisted for him to help me." Lalisa panicked and I felt bad. Bam didn't do anything wrong. He just helped me see Lalisa.

"Then you will take the punishment instead of him?" She asked Lalisa and we got quiet. I can feel this is her plan. To leave us with no choice.

"What is my punishment?" she asked and my eyes widened. She's not serious right?

"No, punish me instead! It was my fault coming here so please let it be me instead of them" I said.

The queen smiled for a moment and I felt uneasy about it. I feel

like we fell into her trap.

"Well then, leave the princess alone, go back to your country and never come back here." she said.

"No!" the three of us said in chorus.

"My Queen, just punish me instead. I'm the one at fault here. So please spare the princess and her lover." Bam defended.

This is so frustrating!

"If I'm going to punish you, I'll have you stop your education at Yonsei." she said coldly. And Bam looked like he was about to cry.

"What? Grandmother please. Not that! That's too much!" Lalisa almost shouted.

"Then if not that, Marry Mario and forget about this boy." she said.

And why the fuck did she just called me boy?

"I don't want to marry him. I love Jungkook. He's the only one that I would marry." she said sternly. I really want to kiss my girl right now for defending me. She really loves me. And I love her so much too.

"You are being stubborn Pranpriya! This man will bring you no good." she said. Looking at me from head to toe. As if judging my whole being.

"He loves me!" Lalisa shouted.

"Loves you? Did you know how many times he cheated on you? The night he made you wait for him, he was holding hands with another girl. Eating each other's faces, sticking thier tongue inside each mouths. They did it everywhere. Inside the Movie Theater, the club, even inside his car." she said and Lalisa's hold in my hand weakened.

No No No! How could she bring that part to her. Now I know she's hurt because of it. And I can't talk because it was true.

"Do you think I won't find out Jungkook? And to add more to those list of your cheating activities, Do you have any idea Pranpriya how this guy usually use his car to pleasure another woman by using his--"

"Please stop!" I shouted. I don't want her to talk anymore. Lalisa is now crying and I hate it! I hate what I did back then! I hate myself so much that I just want to bring back the time and correct my mistakes.

"This guy is a cheater. He will bring you nothing but pain. He's just like your father! A cheater. A lying bastard. Do you want to end up like your mother and commit suicide too?" The queen spoke.

Her father is what?

And her mother committed suicide?

I can't believe this.

So this is the reason why the queen despises me so much. Because of their family's past. And my dear wife is now crying her heart out. I don't know which part hurts her the most. My mistakes or the reminder of her parents. But I'm different. I will never be like her father and she will not end like her mother. We will choose another path. And that is to love each other until our last breath.

I embraced Lalisa in my chest. I don't want her to cry like this. This is all my fault. She deserves nothing but happiness but I caused her too much pain.

"Your majesty please don't do this. You are hurting her." I said.

"You're the one hurting her. You took her kindness and her trust for granted. Do you have any idea how much this princess fought for you when you doesn't even deserve it!" she said.

"I love her. I admit I made a mistake but I regret it so much. Please, just give me one more chance to prove you that I really love your granddaughter. I will do anything. Anything. Just let us be together."

"Pranpriya will marry the Prime Minister and that is final. Mario is perfect for her. Smart, trustworthy and loyal. He is not like you. Look how she's crying just because she was reminded of some of the sinful acts that you did." she said.

I really want to tape her mouth right now to stop her from reminding Lalisa about it over and over again. And It pisses me so much to be compared to that guy when Lalisa doesn't even love him.

"Your Majesty Just give me one chance please. I love her so much. I can't lose her." I begged.

"Nothing will change my mind now. You can go Mr.Jeon" she disclosed the conversation.

I feel like I'm already losing now. The Queen won't listen to me and I need to act fast. I can't lose her. She's mine and it will stay as that. I will do anything even if I have to lie. If she won't listen to my pleading. Then I'm gonna do another trick and hopefully it work.

Yeah. Plan B it is.

I composed my self and readied my acting face.

"How can you let her marry another man? When she is carrying my child. He would be a bastard of the Prime Minister if you push their marriage." I said with a sad voice while touching Lalisa's belly.

All of the eyes in the room widened at my fake confession.

And Lalisa's mouth dropped open.

"What are you talking Jk?" she asked whispering. But I shushed her out.

"What do you mean? You got her pregnant?" The Queen asked with her eyes wide opened.

It was fast but I saw it. The way the Queen's lips tugged upward as if she heard a good news.

"Yes"

"No"

Lalisa and I answered at the same time.

So the Queen frowned.

"Who is telling the truth?" she asked and I squeezed Lalisa's hands for her to follow along.

Lalisa hesitantly nodded.

"Yes. I am" she said and the Queen looked at her with pity.

"As much as I want to chop your joystick right now and have it sent to Korea Mr. Jeon, I won't do it." he said and I covered my crotch in an instant. Not my joystick ma'am! This is your granddaughter's favorite. I want to tell her that but I can't because that would be rude right?

"So you really gave him yourself already?" she asked and Lalisa shyly nodded.

The Queen heaved a sigh and got quiet for a moment. Then she spoke.

"The baby will live here. Not in your country Mr. Jeon. You got it?" she said and I nodded confusedly.

"How about us? Are you--"

"I don't want my great-grandson to have a broken family so you can stay here." she said and I almost jumped out where I was standing.

"Really???" I asked excitedly. Lalisa is now smiling ear to ear too.

My plan worked! Right?

"Don't rejoice yet. You will have to work here as my left hand for a year before you can marry the Princess." she said and I frowned.

"Why? That's too long?" I asked. A year to spend here in this country? Serving her? That's too much!

"Well you have a choice. You can go back to your country now and leave my granddaughter and her baby alone." she said and I panicked.

"Of course I won't do that. Anything just to be with her. You can even make it up to 2 years." I joked and the Queen held her chin to think about it.

"That was a joke. Just one year please." I said.

"Fine then. Sir Rudolph. Prepare a feast for the Princess's baby. And Kunpimook, prepare a room for Mr. Jeon to stay." she commanded.

She turned to us. "You can go now Pranpriya and please take care of my great-grandson" she said.

I grinned at the turn of events. I don't mind staying here for a

year before marrying her. I'll just continue my study after this. But right now I need to do this. I can't let her end up marrying another man. I can't lose her.

When I look at my back Lalisa is already scowling at me.

"What?" I asked whispering.

"We are going to talk Jeon Jungkook!" she whispered back and pulled me out of the room.

Uh oh! My baby is mad!



Author's Note

What is your reaction on the Queen's decision?

How can they solve their problem now that she is not pregnant?



The Jealous Husband

Lalisa's POV

"What the hell was that Jungkook!" I asked the moment we entered my room.

"What?" he asked innocently.

"Why did you tell my grandmother that I'm pregnant when I am not?" I really want to punch him a while ago but he made me follow along his lies and I don't want him to look like a liar in front of my Grandmother.

"Because I had to or she'll take you away from me and make you marry Mario"

"I already told you I will never marry him! Why do you have to lie? Now she thinks I'm really pregnant!"

"Easy. Then I'll get you pregnant." he shrugged.

"Oh my God! You are not serious, are you?"

"Why not? I love you, you love me, my family likes you and the queen approved because of a baby. So, why not make it?" he answered.

Like it's as easy as that.

"Uhh! You're so frustrating! Why would we make a baby out of nowhere? That's wrong Jungkook!" I said.

"It's not wrong. People who are in love eventually makes babies in the end. Don't you want to carry my child?" he asked in a sad tone.

"Of course I want. But not yet now. We are too young Jungkook. We are just 19! You haven't even finished college." I said.

"Why are you making things complicated? We need to make a baby or the Queen will kill me for lying." he said almost yelling.

"You sound like we are just going to bake a cake!"

"Making baby is easier than baking a cake. Let's just do it and have fun making it."

"No we're not going to make one!" I yelled.

"Yes we are!" he said and he started unbuttoning his shirt.

"No! We are not!" I shouted and ran away from him.

Good thing my room is wide enough to run from him. And not to brag but running is my best event because I mastered the art of running away from the servants everytime they want me to wear itchy gowns.

"Lalisa come back here!" he said and he started chasing me.

"No!" I kept running away. Knowing Jungkook, I won't let him catch me or I'll end up in the bed.

"Baby! Come to daddy" he teased, still chasing me.

"Ew..Go away" I said chuckling now.

I don't know but the situation is really funny. I should be serious now but Jungkook's laughter is hilariously contagious.

"Come here wife" he said. He's getting closer to me.

Damn! He's fast?

"Jungkook stop chasing me!" I said panting.

"You're the one who is running. I just want to talk" he said.

"Promise?" I asked and he nodded.

"Trust me." He said and I stopped running and went closer to him.

"Okay. What are we talking again?" I asked. Breathing heavily because of running.

"This." he said and the next thing I knew, I was already being lifted.

"Jungkook put me down! What are you doing?" I tried to get away but his arms are holding me tightly. He carried me like a sack then he lay me on my bed.

"I told you we are going to make a baby." he laughed while pinning my hands on the sides.

"Jungkook no. This is raping!" I said.

"No it's not, it's called love making because we love each other."

"But I refuse?" I said.

"Baby please.. Let's do it." he said with a serious expression.

"I don't want to make babies just because we need to solve our problem. This is a baby's life we are talking about Jungkook. Imagine how the child would react if he knows that we made him just because we lied to the Queen!"

"But what can we do now? I already lied to her?" he asked.

"Then we'll just tell her the truth. Not now but soon." I said.

"She will hate me more if she knows that I lied. And she will push you to that Mario again. And I swear I'm going to kill him if he agrees!" .

"But it's better to tell her the truth than to lie like this." I said.

"I don't know anymore." he answered.

As much as I want give him what he wants. I can't. I'm too young to be pregnant. I'm not ready yet.

I noticed that Jungkook was still hovering on top of me. He's just looking at my face, studying my features.

The atmosphere suddenly changed.

"Why?" I asked.

"You are so beautiful. You know that?" he said and I blushed.

"Thank you for everything." He said and he closed the gap between our faces.

Soon, his lips touched mine. He began moving his lips on me gently. His heart is beating fast against my hands which are on his chest.

"I love you Jungkook." I said when his lips moved away. Our breathing is getting heavier this time. His eyes are locked on mine.

"I love you so much Lalisa." he said and he kissed my lips again. His hand travelled south. On the hem of my dress, sliding his hand on my inner thigh. It moved north then stopped between my thighs.

"Hmmm" I moaned on when he started rubbing it. I wrapped my arms around his neck to pull him more.

He slid his hand under my underwear and his fingers began toying with mine.

I got wet with just Jungkook's slight touch.

He pulled my panties down to my thigh and inserted his finger inside while his tongue pushed in my mouth too.

"hmn Jungkook" he kept doing doing it and if feels so good that I kept on moaning on his mouth.

Jungkook removed his fingers on my pussy started grinding his bulge between my thighs.

I can feel the heat on his hard cock despite him wearing his pants.

"Lalisa?" he asked and I nodded.

He removed my clothes and his.

My heartbeat fasten when Jungkook took his cock in his hand.

The sight looks painful to watch. He brushed his head on my opening and with one swift motion, he pushed all the way in earning a groan from me.

His cock hurts me so much as always and I think I will never adjust to his size.

"So so tight baby!" he uttered with closed eyes.

He began moving above me. Pushing his cock gently.

"Does it hurt?" he asked concernly.

"Yes." I admitted. "But it feels good." I said.

"I will move a little faster okay?" he asked again.

"hmm..kay" I answered.

I don't care if he fucks me hard to be honest. I'm too lost in the pleasure to worry about the pain.

Jungkook pressed his lips on me again. We kissed slopily as he started moving faster. His cock's making me go crazy and I can't help but moan his name over and over.

"Jungkook!" I moaned when his cock kept hitting a deeper part in me.

It really feels so good.

"Baby! I can't hold it anymore. I'm cumming" he said while slamming his cock harder and faster in me.

"I'm close." I said.

"Baby cum with me!" he said and I came so so hard. Throwing my head back while my legs shook at the pleasure. My vision blurred and my walls clamped around his length.

"God! Your pussy is going crazy! I can't move!" he groaned.

His cock was still rocking inside me even though I feel so numb down there. He slammed his cock deeper and deeper as he gets faster. I moan and moan in return.

"Fuck!!! You feel so good! You're so tight baby!"

One last push and he came inside me. I felt his hot liquid cum shoot on me.

He came for like forever. And he didn't pulled out, emptying everything inside.

He continued pushing his cock prolonging the pleasure. His body is now glistening with sweat same with mine.

"I love you baby." he kissed my lips again.

"I love you too Jungkook." I answered back when he pulled from the kiss.

He looked at me in the eye and he poke the tip of my nose.

"You are my wife."

"You are my husband."

"You will stop taking the pills" he said and my eyes widened.

So he really wants to get me pregnant?

"Jungkook I told you already!"

"Lalisa please."

"I can't." I answered sadly.

"When do you usually take your pills?" he asked out of nowhere.

"Before I go to sleep." I answered. And I covered my mouth when it dawned on me.

"Shit!"

"What?" he asked worriedly.

"I forgot to take last night!" I pushed Jungkook away making his cock slide out of me. I walk to my drawer naked while Jungkook's eyes studied me.

I took two emergency pill inside and swallowed it.

"What are you doing?" he asked.

"Taking an emergency pill." I answered and he frowned. I didn't paid him attention because I know he will just push the pregnancy more.

I noticed his silence so I looked at his face, concerned what he is thinking. But when I looked at him, his eyes were focused on my

inner thigh because his cum is leaking out of me.

Jungkook licked his lips as he watched me lustfully.

"You're so hot." he said. Then he stood to walk near me.

I gulped.

He's horny again and I think he will not stop especially now that the Queen welcomed him.

"Let's do it again baby?" he said.

I don't know if he's just horny or he just wants to get me pregnant but whatever the reason is, I don't want to do it again right now. My body feels so weak and if he fucks me again, I think I'm going to pass out.

"Jungkook, It's almost 10 in the morning and we haven't eaten yet."

"Really? Why do I always feel full everytime I see you?" he tilted his head.

"Well I'm not. I need to eat and you too. Come on!" I said and I pulled him to prepare.

"Let's just eat each other, I know one position where you can suck my dick while I eat your pussy." he winked.

"Why are you like that all the time!" I asked in frustration.

"Just kidding baby, of course I want you to eat real food. Is it okay if we go out to eat on a restaurant?" he asked excitedly.

"I'm sorry but that's not possible. Being a princess means being locked here. I'm only allowed to go out if I'm with Grandmother." I said sadly.

"So that's the reason why you had to sneak out just to see Taehyung?" he asked. Jealousy is clear in his voice.

I really don't want to talk about my past with Taehyung to Jungkook. I don't like getting him jealous. I know how it hurts being jealous to someone and I don't want Jungkook to feel it.

"Let's not talk about it." I pushed the topic aside.

"You loved him too?" he asked curiously.

"I.. It's all in the past. Let's forget about it." I said as I walk to wear my bathrobe. Jungkook followed me.

"But you really loved him?" he asked behind me.

"Why are you bringing that up?"

"Nothing. Just curious if I'm the only guy that you loved."

"Jungkook you how much I love you. No need to be insecure."

"He's here now." he announced.

"He's what?"

"He came with me and Jimin too."

"Really?" I smiled at the thought that the boys came to support him.

"See? You're smiling like that just hearing his name!" he pouted.

"What are you talking about? I'm not smiling because I heard his name. I just smiled because I'm happy they came with you."

"I don't believe you." he said.

"Why are you being jealous of Taehyung all of a sudden?"

"I'm not." he denied.

"Yes you are. Stop it. You're the one that I love now."

"So you loved him then? And you love me now. how about tomorrow?" he asked.

"Of course you. You're the only one that I love and will love. I don't like you getting jealous Jungkook. Jealousy brings you no good. It will just hurt you so stop the negative thoughts on your head. I will always be yours." I explained and he smiled.

"Promise?" He showed his bunny teeth.

"Promise. I made a vow on our secret wedding remember?" I said holding his hands.

"Yeah I remember. I'm so lucky to have you!" he said.

"Me too."

Then he pulled me for another kiss.



Author's Note

The End.

Joke. The story is not finished yet. They still need to face the biggest threat on the Princess's life.

What could it be?



I Need Your Advise

Hi guys! So Bighit released the schedule of BTS' tour already and I really want to go. The options are only Korea, Japan, US and Canada and Europe.

And the closest to my country is Korea and Japan. So I need your advise. To those who has been in Korea and Japan, which is cheaper in terms of hotel and fair. Japan or Korea? I really have no idea and I need cheaper options. Please help me.

Thank you.



The Mysterious Cousin

Jungkook's POV

After getting ready, the princess and I walked out of her room to join the Queen.

A while ago, Bam or should I say Kunpimook told us that the Queen prepared a feast for us to celebrate Lalisa's getting pregnant.

I'm kinda guilty for lying. She's not pregnant and I think it will be hard to get her pregnant because of that god damn pill! I should've never bought it for her. Now she's taking it seriously.

Honestly, I really want to have a baby with her already. Not because the Queen wants it but because I love her so much and I want her to be the mother of my child.

Lalisa is beautiful, kind and very understanding and she would make a very good wife and mother for sure.

Having Lalisa, makes me forget my dream of being the president and I'm sure my father would be disappointed. Of course he will, he trained me to follow his path for years. I lived a life where I dreamed to rule my own country. But now that I met her, I don't care setting aside my goals, I don't mind to live in this foreign country, I don't mind if I have to serve the Queen first. As long as I am with her, I would be happy and contented.

As I said, Lalisa is my life, she's the air that I breath and without her I would die.

And just imagine the joy it would bring me if I have a baby with her. That would be twice the happiness I feel right now. And I can't wait.

I really want to get her pregnant but she's too scared. I understand though because it is her body and I know the pain of giving birth.

But still, I will be there for her if pregnancy gets rough. I will make sure to to it that I will be there by her side.

Come to think of it, if she turned 20, she will take the crown. That means she will be the Queen and she can decide on her own. She can lift the punishment away from me and I can marry her by then. Wait, does that mean I will be a king if I marry her?

What the fuck! That would be weird.

I never wanted to be the King of Thailand. I want to be the President of Korea. But it is better right than to have Mario marry

her?

I really hate these guys around my wife's life. They make me so jealous. And now I learned that Lalisa was also inlove with Taehyung, I can't help but be jealous more.

Though she assured me that I'm the one that she loves now and I'm the only one that she will love, I still hate the thought that Taehyung was her first love. I don't like it. I hate it.

Lalisa loves Taehyung.

Lalisa loves Taehyung.

Taehyung loves Lalisa.

Taehyung loves Lalisa.

Fuck! I'm so pissed!

I will never let the two see each other again. It would be weird to see your wife with her first love, right? Right!

So no. She will stay in this palace with me. No man can see and touch her but me.

"Baby, are you okay?" Lalisa squeezed my hand.

"Did you just call me baby?" I smiled happily.

"Yeah why?"

"Because you usually call me Jungkook or Jk. I never heard you call me by that before?"

"Don't you like it?" she asked sadly.

"Of course I do. I love it. Please call me baby often." I like the sound of it with Lalisa's voice.

"We're here!" Kunpimook brought us back to the real world.

We stopped infront of a huge door and it opened for us.

And there we saw a very long table with lots of food on it. Music was playing in the background as the Queen sit in the middle.

"Jungkook, look what you did! Theu really thought I'm pregant" she whispered through gritted teeth but I ignored her.

"Come and Join us Princess and Sir Jungkook." The old man said.

"Oh, I'm Rudolph by the way. The right hand of the queen" he added.

"Nice to meet you sir Rudolph." I bowed.

"He can speak Korean too?" I whispered to Lalisa as we walk to the table.

"Yes, most of the people who serve her knows many language and that includes Korean." she answered back.

"So that's the reason why you know it too. And Taehyung knows Thai because he lived here. What language do you usually speak with him?" I asked curiously. I can't stop being jealous, I know.

"Jungkook! Stop talking about Tahyung!"

She pulled me to the seat next to the Queen. I sat there and she sat across me.

"I just bowed at the queen because I don't know the honorifics when it comes to her.

Later, the table were filled with servants. And I was surprised. Usually the Queen would never eat with the servant right? The Queen must have noticed my curious expression so she cleared her throat.

"If you are wondering why they are here. It's because the princess always wants to eat with the servants. When she was young, she will threaten them that she will not eat if they don't join her." the queen chuckled and I looked at Lalisa who is now happily talking with sir Rudolph beside her.

"She's amazing." I said.

"She is. But stubborn too."

"Why?"

"When she was young, she always sneaks out of the palace. I don't know how she does that. But she's really good at it. I would always scold her for that but she won't listen."

Yeah thanks for reminding me about her cheating.

Well it's not cheating because she doesn't know me back then but still. I hate it.

I just nodded and didn't talk anymore. I focused on eating my jealousy out.

My attention was grabbed when a girl the same age as Lisa came in.

She's wearing an elegant dress and I think she's not a servant. She's beautiful but not as beautiful as my wife.

The table got quiet when she arrived. And when I looked at Lalisa, she has this worried expression plastered on her face.

Who is she?

The queen answered my thought.

"Jungkook, I want you to meet Eunha, Lalisa's cousin." the Queen spoke.

"Nice to meet you" I said.

"Nice to meet you too." she gave me a tight-lipped smile and I got chills.

I don't know why but she's scary.

Good thing she knows Korean too but her diction is not that good compared to Lalisa's.

Lalisa on the other hand smiled at her but she didn't respond.

She just took the vacant seat next to Bam who is sitting beside me.

Eunha started asking in Thai with the Queen which I didn't understand but I bet it's about the celebration because the Queen answered with the word *pregnancy*.

It didn't escape my eyes how Eunha looked at Lalisa with hate and disgust. I know that look. It is how Tzuyu looked at Lalisa at the party.

I don't know what happened between them. Why she seemed to hate my wife. But whatever it is, I don't feel good.

I can tell she is a threat.

And I think my wife is not safe with this girl around.

When Lalisa and I got back in the room, she started ignoring me. She just lay down the bed and closed her eyes.

"Baby?" I shook her shoulders. I know she's not sleeping.

"Baby? Are you okay?" I asked.

"I'm fine." she answered coldly.

"You are not. What is it?" I asked and she sighed.

"I don't like you looking at other girls Jungkook. You should know that by now." she said and I got confused.

"What are you talking about? I didn't look at other girls." I don't remember checking out other girls except her.

"Yes you did! You were looking at my cousin the entire time!" she said.

Oh! Now I get it. She's referring to Eunha. But I never looked at her like that. I was just engrossed with her threatening aura.

"I can't believe you are jealous because of that. There's no need to be jealous Lalisa. I was just looking at her because she's been glaring at you the whole time. Which makes me wonder if there's something going on between you two? Are you not in good terms with her?" I asked curiously.

"Uhm.. It's kinda complicated. Her mother is the one who planned to kill me."

"Her mom did that?"

What the fuck! So that maybe the reason why I don't like her.

"Yes. And I feel sorry for Eunha." Lalisa looked down.

"Why?"

"Because, her mother was imprisoned because of me. Now she has no mother. And I know how sad it is to have no mother."

"What are you saying? They are the ones who should be sorry because they tried to kill you!" I said.

I really can't believe Lalisa. She's too kind for this world!

"But still." she said and I got quiet.

"Just try to avoid her. I don't feel good when she's around you." I said.

"Why?" she nervously asked.

"Just avoid her please." I said and she nodded.

"By the way, I'll be going to see Taehyung and Jimin. I will have them go back to Korea without me." I said.

"But, aren't you coming with them? You also need to talk to your parents right?" she asked.

"No, I'll just call them. Besides, I'm really scared to go home. What if the Queen pushes you to marry another guy when I'm away." I said.

"That's impossible." she rolled her eyes.

Later we heard a knock on the door.

"Sir Jungkook, your room is ready!" Bam said and when I looked at Lalisa she just signalled me to go out and face Bam.

But seriously? Why do I need to stay in another room? I just want to stay with Lalisa.

"Please don't lock the door this evening." I said and she nodded.

I plan to make love with her everyday hoping to create a beautiful baby.



Author's Note

I'm so stressed with the coming BTS concert that I find it hard to write.



The Accident

Lalisa's POV

"You need to go now." I said pushing Jungkook out of the door.

"One last kiss!" he said then he kissed me again.

"That's the hundredth time you say that! Now go, so that Jimin and Taehyung can go home. Just get back here quick after you send them to the airport." I said.

"Okay. But please wait for me? Don't flirt with anyone while I'm gone, okay?" he said.

"Geez, you're talking as if you will be gone for days when you will just send them to the airport. And it won't even take 3 hours." I said. Jungkook has been really clingy this day.

"I know but I really feel weird. I feel like I won't see you again if I leave." he said.

"You're being paranoid again. Nothing bad is going to happen. I'm just here Jungkook. I will wait for you I promise. I'm your wife right and wives patiently waits for their husband?"

"Aw.. Thank you. I will come back soon. I love you baby!"

"I love you Jungkook!" I said.

"Call me baby too!" he demanded.

"Okay okay.. I love you baby!" I said and he smiled.

He kissed my lips again for the last time. I don't know but the way he kisses me feels like it's filled with worry. I know he is worried that something or someone will part us again but I will never let that happen. I will do anything for Jungkook. Just for us to be together.

I love him so much.

When he left, I took the chance to sleep. I'm really not feeling well this time.

Jungkook's POV

"What took you so long to get back? We were so worried! We thought you are dead!" Jimin said the moment I entered the hotel room where they are staying at.

"I finally settled everything. The queen allowed me to stay here in exchange of serving her for a year." I said.

I don't want them to know that I lied that Lalisa is pregnant because they might tell Jennie and Jennie will tell my parents. That would be a big scandal for sure. Knowing my parents, they would

probably take Lalisa to our home because of the baby.

"What? And you agreed to it?" Taehyung ask.

"Of course! What else can I do? I really want to be with her and I will do anything just for us to be together." I said and they nodded.

"How about your parents? Will you tell them about this personally?" Taehyung asked.

"No. I'll just call them and tell them that I will stop my studies for the mean time." I said.

"What if they don't agree?" Jimin asked.

"Well they need to. My decision is final. I will stay with her whatever happens." I said.

"You're whipped." Jimin said.

"You liked her too back then. Don't tell me that I'm just the only one who's crazy for her." I chuckled.

"I still like her up to now. But you guys have been through a lot. And as a friend of yours, I need to support you and as her admirer, I need to be happy for her." Jimin said.

"Thanks. That's good to know." I smiled and looked at Taehyung.

Seeing him now, reminded me how jealous I am of him. But still, I'm lucky because he supports me too just like Jimin.

"How about you?" I asked him.

"As I said, I support anything that makes her happy. And you're the one who makes her happy now. Even if she chose Jimin, I will support them too." he said.

"You know you're too kind Taehyung. We don't deserve you." Jimin fake-cried.

"No I'm not. I can be a little selfish too if she chose me." he said and we all laughed.

"So, Now we are going back to Korea without you?" Jimin asked.

"Yes. I will visit soon. But for now, I will stay with her." I said and they nodded.

Shortly after, Taehyung's mom came to pick us up. We dropped Jimin and Taehyung at the airport and Pa drove me to the Palace.

As I ride her car, I can't help but smile. I'm so happy. Everything is finally settled. Everything is fine. Lalisa and I can finally focus on our relationship.

That's what I thought.

But I was wrong.

Because when I got back, I saw her.

At the end of the stairs lying unconscious.

"Oh my God! Lalisa!"

Lalisa's POV

When I woke up, I feel a little dizzy. Maybe I'm just hungry. I decided to eat to feel better.

I walk out of my room down to the main hall and saw Eunha walking up on the staircase.

I know Jungkook told me to avoid her but I really want to apologize for everything.

That's why I ran to her when she was finally upstairs.

"Eunha! Wait!" I called and she stopled on her tracks.

I got nervous when she turned to face me. By the way she looked at me, I can tell she's not happy.

"What?" she coldly asked.

"Eunha I.. I just want to apologize--"

"Apologize? You want to apologize after what you did to my mom! She was innocent! She never tried to kill you!" she shouted.

"But... The..police said." I stuttered.

"Of course you believe them. You don't even care about us. What kind of a princess are you? You are selfish Pranpriya! You only care for yourself. Isn't the crown already enough for you? Now you have someone to love you. The Queen loves you. The Prime Minister wants to marry you! Everybody likes you and I hate it! I was left with nothing! My mother is all I have yet you took her away from me!" Eunha cried this time and I really feel pity for her.

I didn't mean to take her mother away from her. I don't want to hurt her.

"Eunha, I'm really sorry but Aunt Sarah tried to kill me. She needs to pay for what she did." I said.

"Even if what you're saying is true. That my mom really tried to kill you, you are still alive and that must not be a reason why she should not be imprisoned!"

"But what if I died?"

"You should've died." she said.

"Eunha. That's bad wishing others to die! I'm your cousin!"

"You are not my cousin! We don't share the same blood. I hate you! I despise you so much!" she said pushing my shoulders while walking near me.

I took steps back because of it.

"Eunha please.." I said. I'm scared. Jungkook was right. I should've avoided her.

"I hate you Pranpriya. I hate you so much! You should die!" she said and she pushed my chest harder.

The next thing I know, I was already tumbling down the long staircase.



Author's Note

What will happen to her now?



The Sleeping Princess

Jungkook's POV

It's been a day that Lalisa's been staying in the hospital. She hasn't wake yet and I'm so worried.

We don't know what happened. How she fell from the stairs but the servants said that it's impossible for her to fell. They accused someone has pushed her and I think they are right. But sadly, there were no CCTVs in that area.

The doctor said her head hit the floor too hard which caused her head to bleed. Right now, we are still waiting for the results of the tests the doctor ran on her.

I really regret leaving her that day. I knew there's something bad that's going to happen yet I left her. This is all my fault. I should've stayed. If I stayed. This would not happen.

I'm so scared right now. I don't know what will happen to her. I've been so sleepless the past night as I stay in this hospital room with her.

The Queen was worried too. She even said that it was her fault that this happened. And she swore she will do anything that the Princess wants if she wakes. That includes supporting our relationship.

I'm a little bit happy that the Queen is warming up to me but still Lalisa's condition worries me. I want her to wake up already and tell her that the Queen finally approves us wholeheartedly. She even let me when I said I will stay with her at the hospital.

The Queen's busy schedule makes it hard for her to stay here so I volunteered myself to look after her. Besides I want me to be the first she sees when she wakes up.

Jimin and Taehyung cancelled their trip going back home because I called them to tell about what happened to her. Luckily, they were still at the airport when I called because their flight got delayed.

Now, they are here with me at the hospital to take turns in looking after her.

"Jungkook, we'll just get something to eat. Do you want anything?" Jimin asked.

"Nothing. Thank you." I answered and continued holding her hand.

"Okay, we'll just get you something." Taehyung said and I nodded.

They left the room and the doctor came.

"Mr. Jeon, the result of the CT scan test of the princess is here." he said and I stood to pay attention.

"What happened?" I asked.

"Based on her CT scan, he has suffered a brain injury from hitting the floor causing her to lose a lot of blood. But we already took care of it. She's fine by now. Everything is stable."

"When will she wake up then?" I asked. I really want to talk to her already. I miss her so much.

"We don't know yet. But she will soon. We just have to wait."

"Okay" I answered sadly. Even the doctor has no clue on when she wakes up.

"As for the Queen's question about the baby." he said and I looked at him quickly.

Shit! I forgot the queen will ask about the baby! What should I do now?

"What about it?" I asked nervously. I know he will tell me that there is nothing. She is not pregnant just like how we told the Queen.

"The baby seems to be fine if she is pregnant." he said and my jaw dropped open. What does he mean?

"What do you mean?"

"So the queen said she is pregnant and when we checked, there seemed to be no trace of pregnancy yet. So it's either she is not really pregnant or she is pregnant but the embryo is too small yet to be seen by the test." he said

"You.. You.. mean there's a chance that she is pregnant?" I sweat asking him.

"There is. But where not sure yet. It's too early to tell. For now let's just hope she wakes already. But if she does, please refrain from asking her to much question. Her brain may not be stable yet. It can cause her stress so please be gentle." he said.

"Thank you so so much doctor." I said.

"A pleasure to serve the princess. We'll make sure her condition is to be held confidential." the doctor said and he left.

Lalisa could be pregnant? Is it true or he just made a mistake? Either way, I'm both happy and worried. Happy because she is finally stable. Sad because she is still unconscious.

I really want to talk to her already. I want to ask if she's pregnant? But I bet she don't know if she is. My heart warmed at the thought of her carrying our baby. I would really be happy if she is.

My phone started ringing cutting of my daydreaming.

"Hello?"

"What happened to Lalisa? We heard from Jimin that she got into an accident." my sister spoke on the other line.

"She fell from the stairs." I answered.

"Is she okay? We're gonna go there!" she said.

"Who?"

"The three of us, Jisso and Chaeyoung will come visit her." she said.

"But how about school?"

"Don't worry about it. We want to see her. Chaeyoung is crying so much. You know her. She will not stop crying unless she sees her."

"Okay okay. Please be careful. The three of you." I said.

"See you bro."

"See you."

I ended the call smiling. Our sisters really likes her a lot.

I sat back down on the chair next to her bed and caressed her hair gently.

"Please wake up soon baby"

I lay my head on the side of her bed and decided to take a nap for a while.

Moments later, I felt the bed shifted. I opened my eyes and saw Lalisa watching me intently.

"Oh my God! You're awake!" I almost fell on my seat.

She's finally awake!

I wrapped my arms around her and hugged her tightly.

Then I let go of her and held her shoulders to look at her.

I got worried because of the expression on her face. She seemed to not be happy seeing me. The Lalisa I know would jump at me the moment she sees me.

Maybe she's just not on condition to react warmly at me?

"Are you feeling well?" I asked worried.

She tilted her head looking at me.

"Excuse me sir but.. Do I know you?"

This is a joke.

Lalisa's POV

When I woke up, I shut my eyes back and opened it slowly because of the brightness of the room. Then I realized I was lying inside a white room.

This is a hospital room. I think?

What happened?

Why am I here?

I was wearing a hospital gown and my head is hurting so much. I touched my head which was wrapped with a bandage and noticed a

guy sleeping. His head rests on the side of my bed.

I can't recognize him because his face is slightly turned to the other side but his side profile is really nice.

His sharp jaw gives him a sexy look and his lips looks so soft.

Who is he?

When I tried to sat back, his eyes opened.

"Oh my God! You're awake!" he almost fell on his seat.

Then he engulfed me in a tight hug.

I was startled by his action.

Why is he hugging me like this?

Do I know him?

He finally let go of me and he held my shoulders to look at me.

I looked at his face intently. I don't know him but..

He looks familiar.

"Are you feeling well?" he asked me with worried eyes.

"Excuse me sir but.. Do I know you?"



Author's Note



The Lost Memory

Jungkook's POV

"You're joking right?" I asked.

Lalisa is trying to be funny.

"Uhm..sorry I'm not. Do I know you?" she asked again. Confusion is clear in her eyes.

"I.. I'm.." I want to say that I'm her husband but the door opened and both Taehyung and Jimin came in.

Lalisa's eyes moved to them. Then she covered her mouth and her eyes widened as if she saw a ghost.

"Oh my God! Jack?" she jumped out of her bed and ran to Taehyung. She quickly wrapped her arms around him and hugged him tightly.

We were all startled with what she did but no one talked.

I'm so confused. I don't know what to feel. The way she hugs him makes me wish all of this is just a dream. That this is just her prank. That she just wants to get on me for not being a good husband to her.

Taehyung's arms slowly hugged her back. Making Jimin and I looked at each other. We both have questions in our mind right now and I really want to answer Jimin's question but I too am surprised.

"I missed you! Do you know how much I waited for you? Do you know how much I cried because of you?" I heard Lalisa say and my chest twisted in pain hearing her say this.

"Lalisa!" I called. But she didn't pay me attention.

"I'm so happy to see you again. Where did you go? Why did you left me?" she continued talking to him without caring if I'm seeing all of this.

Taehyung has this confused expression on his face. As if he's torn between happiness and sadness.

"I'm happy to see you too but I had to leave..." I hear him say.

I pulled her away from Taehyung making her face me.

"Can't you remember me? It's me Jungkook! Please remember me! This is me! You should be happy to see me not him!"

"Stop! It hurts!" she cried.

I didn't know I was already gripping her arms too much while shaking her. I quickly let go of her and she hid behind Taehyung's

back.

"Jack, make him go. I'm scared of him." she said.

What the? Now she wants me to leave? What the hell is happening to her?

"Jungkook, I'll talk to her first. Can you leave us for a moment?" Taehyung asked.

"No!" I shouted making Lalisa jump. I know she's scared. I know her so much. I can read her just by looking at her and I hate that the reason why she's scared is me.

She loves me.

But why? Why can't she remember me? What's happening?

"Please make him leave." she looked at me from head to toe. If she's only not shaking in fear. I would hug her and kiss her already.

"Jungkook please." Taehyung plead.

I slowly nodded and pulled Jimin out of the room who is now speechless too.

"Who is he? Why is he reacting that way?" I hear Lalisa ask Taehyung when we were already out of the door.

This is too much. I can't hear this anymore. If I don't leave quickly, I swear I'm gonna go and kill Taehyung.

Jimin also followed me when I started walking away.

"What the hell did just happen?" Jimin asked.

"I don't know too." I answered. My voice cracked. I really want to cry right now. I thought everything was fine.

I thought everything will be settled now. No more Tzuyu, my parents likes her already, the Queen supports us now too. She said she will not push Mario to Lalisa anymore. The doctor said there's a possibility that she's pregnant. And I can marry her already anytime soon.

Everything's supposed to be perfect but this happened. This shit happened.

"Where are you going?" he asked.

"I need to see the doctor. I need him to fix her. Whatever is wrong with her head that she can't remember me. You know how much she loves me Jimin! You and Taehyung both know that!" I spoke with a loud voice making the people at the hospital look at me.

"But why she remembers Taehyung only not you?"

"I don't know. But I need her to remember me. She promised me. She took a vow Jimin. I remember her say she will always love me!" I shouted this time.

"Jungkook calm down!"

"How can I calm down when she looks at Taehyung like that? That's how she looks at me then. But it's different now! I know and I can feel it. Taehyung will take advantage of her condition!"

"Taehyung will never do that. He's kind."

"Yes he is kind but remember he told us that he can be selfish too. If Lalisa chose him, he will do anything for them to be together."

"I don't know. I just can't believe Taehyung would do that. We know how both of you fought for your relationship."

"I'm so scared Jimin. What if she won't remember me anymore? I can't live without her. She is my wife. She's my life now."

"I know but if it happens that she won't regain her memory back, then make her fall for you again." he said and I got quiet.

Is it possible for her to fall for me again?

I don't know. I hope so.

After taking few walks we arrived at Doctor Kim's room. We knocked on the door and he spoke on the other side to let us in. I explained what happened to Lalisa. I told him about our relationship and how she forgot about me. Then he explained that her memory loss could be a result of her head injury. He said that it happens usually to those who suffers the same accident.

"Will she remember me again?" I asked.

"There's a high chances of her getting back her memories but there's also a slight chance that she won't."

"But why? Can't she take any medicine or you perform something to make her regain her memory back?" I asked clenching my fists. Jimin noticed and he started patting my back.

"I'm sorry but the only thing that could help her right now is through constant therapy. And you shouldn't push her to remember you. It will just worsen her condition. Please try to be patient."

"But if I can't force her to remember me, what should I do? Anything to make her remember about me, about us?"

"You can bring her to places you usually go to but it would be hard because she doesn't trust you yet. Maybe you can ask for a help from your common friends. But just take it slowly. I'm sure she'll remember you but we just don't know when."

"How long does it usually take for patients like her to recover from memory loss?"

"It could take months to years."

"What? I can't wait that long! I can't even sleep a day without her what more years?"

"Mr. Jeon, I told you to be patient. It's the only way for her to heal. Pushing her more can cause stress to her brain. And it will only worsen her condition. Do you want that to happen to her?" he said and I shook my head no.

"Of course no. I don't want to cause her stress. I love her so much." I said.

"Then good. I will personally perform therapy for her. And I'll do everything that I can to help you." Dr. Kim stood.

"Thank you Dr.Kim." Jimin and I bowed.

When we got out of his clinic, Jimin faced me.

"What now?" he asked.

"I don't know. Maybe I'll just wait for her memory to come back."

"How about we take her back to Korea? Maybe she'll remember you if she sees the place where you both meet?:" Jimin suggested.

"You're right. All I need is the Queen's permission. " I said and I smiled at the thought.

We started walking back to Lalisa's room. Planning everything on my head.

But when we got back, I saw Lalisa holding hands with Taehyung. Smiling at him lovingly.



Author's Note

Thank you so much for supporting this story. The story is about to end and I hope you finish it till the end.



The Queen's Proposal

Lalisa's POV

The boys got back and Jack quickly pulled his hands from holding mine. I don't know why but Jack seems to be guilty showing his emotions for me.

I know he likes me but why does he seem awkward around me?

Is he scared of him? Is he scared of the scary guy too?

But why? Jack said that the scary guy is someone special to me and I need to find out myself who he is in my life. But I really can't remember him. I haven't seen his beautiful face before.

All I know is that when I see him, my heart beats so fast. I'm not sure how I feel. Maybe it's beating too fast because I'm scared of him.

Jack explained that I got into an accident and it made me lose some of my memories back and that includes my relationships with the guys. He said both of us has been seeing each other for a while and I don't know if he means we are dating or we are just seeing as friends. But I hope we are dating though.

I love him. I think I love him. Maybe I still love him? I'm not sure but I'm really happy to see him.

The scary guy named Jungkook cleared his throat and Jack moved farther away from me.

"We're back!" the scary guy announced.

What is happening with my heart? Hearing just his voice makes me nervous. I can't stop my heart from beating too fast.

I looked at Jack for help. I'm scared of him. The shorter guy he's with seems to be sweet though but this Jungkook guy is really scary.

I think I don't like him. But I like the other guy. He looks kind like Jack.

But Jack said he is friends with them so I need to be friends with both of them too.

I should act nicely to them and not be rude.

"Hi I'm Pranpriya!" I introduced myself. I know they probably know me already but I want them to introduce themselves too.

"I'm Jimin!" The other guy took steps to me and shook my hand.

"Nice to meet you." I said then I nervously look at the other guy.

He is scowling at me the whole time and I got conscious making

me fix my hair unconsciously. Do I look fine?

Why does he make me feel guilty? Like I owe him something?

"You.. You.. Are Jungkook right?" I asked and he smiled.

What a gorgeous smile. Not as gorgeous as Jack's but his smile is breathtaking that my eyes suddenly landed on his lips.

I wonder how those lips taste like?

Oh my God! Did I just became a pervert for a second?

That's very wrong of me.

But I can't help it. My body seems to respond at him weirdly.

It's like I long for his touch.

What's happening to me! This is not how a princess should act right?

"Did you finally remember me?" he asked excitedly.

"No. I'm sorry but Jack said you are someone special. I'm sorry if this frustrates you but I'll try my best to remember you." I said and he smiled with hopeful eyes.

"I hope you remember me soon." The scary guy said.

Suddenly the door opened and the Queen came marching in.

"Oh my God! My princess you're finally awake! Doctor Jin told me everything already." she embraced me tightly. And she let go to look at my face "Can you remember me?" she asked.

"Of course I do." I chuckled.

"How about him?" she asked pointing at Jungkook. I looked at Jungkook and shook my head.

"No. I don't know him." I said.

The Queen looked at me worriedly then she looked at my belly.

Okay she's being weird?

"By the way grandmother, this is Jack." I introduced the love of my life.

"Yes, I know him." the Queen sat beside me at the bed and carressed my hair.

"Pranpriya, I want to say sorry for everything. This happened because of me. This is my Karma for being too strict on you. I promise this time I will agree to anything you like." she said with teary eyes.

I don't know what she's talking about but I'm happy that she told me this.

Maybe I can already be with Jack this time even if he's not from a wealthy family?

"You will agree to anything?" I asked excitedly.

"Yes, anything sweetheart." she said.

"Then, I want you to be with him and I hope you agree." I announced happily.

"Sure dear! You can marry Jungkook any time you want!" she

said and I shook my head.

"You don't understand. I don't want to marry Jungkook!" I laughed at my grandmother's joke.

"Then who?" she gulped.

"I want to marry Jack. I want to be Mrs. Kim." I said.

"What the fuck?" Jungkook cursed.

"Sweetheart you don't understand. You should not decide like this when you forgot some of the events that happened in your life." she explained.

"But you said you will agree to anything that I want, right?"

"Yes but--"

"Then I want to marry him. I love him grandmother. And he loves me too right Jack?" I looked at him and he froze while Jungkook snorted.

Why can't he say that he loves me too? I know he loves me. I can see it in his eyes. I can feel it.

"What do you remember so far Pranpriya? Like what happened yesterday?" The Queen asked and I thought for a moment.

"Yesterday was my nineteenth birthday. We held a grand celebration at the palace. Then you introduce me to Mario. My fiancée. That's it. But I don't want to marry him. I love Jack. I love him!" I stomped my feet saying it.

"Please make her stop saying that she loves him." Jungkook said and I rolled my eyes.

Who is he to order the Queen like that? I shrugged and focused my attention on my grandmother.

"Okay, I will let you marry him--"

"What the fuck!" Jungkook cursed again.

"but that is if you regain your memories back." she said and I smiled.

"Sure! You heard that Jack?" I happily smiled at him and he answered with a small smile.

When I looked at Jungkook. He was glaring at Jack so hard.

I clenched my heart which is rapidly beating again.

Who is he?

Why is he making me feel like this?



Author's Note

Now we can finally test Lalisa's love for Jungkook.

Will she fall in love with him again?

The Saddist Friend

Taehyung's POV

Pranpriya is sleeping already. And the Queen left her to our care.

Jungkook took a walk for a while while Jimin was left to look after her.

I sighed and walked out of her room.

This is so fucked up!

How did this happened?

Suddenly she forgot everything about Jungkook. Who he is in her life. How much she loves her. And she remembers me instead.

I'm supposed to be happy right now because she remember that she loved me back then. It is very heart warming and satisfying hearing her say those words. How much she loves me, how she cried for me, how she waited. And if situations where different I would've married her already.

She's the only girl that I loved, the only girl who made me happy, the only girl who broke my heart when she chose my bestfriend instead. And this girl finally said she loves me too and it makes me really happy.

What would you do if this happened to you? That the person you dreamt your whole life finally said she loves you back and she even wants to marry you?

I know being happy is not right. I should be sad and guilty for Jungkook but my darker side tells me to be happy at how the things turned.

Is this my reward for sacrificing too much?

Is this my reward for stepping aside?

Is this my reward for choosing other people's happiness?

Maybe.

Maybe this is my reward.

But if I take advantage of her condition, I will end up hurting my bestfriend. And I don't want him to get hurt just like how I felt back then.

But I guess this is his *Karma*.

His karma for hurting her over and over. For not treating her the way she should be. This is his Karma for cheating. For the nights

she spent with Tzuyu and I hated him so much everytime he comes home smelling like her while Pranpriya waits for him patiently. I hate him so much for hurting her like that. Pranpriya deserves better. Not a cheating and coward Jungkook but a loyal and brave Jungkook.

Jungkook is a good person. I know he loves her so much but still he chose to hurt her.

I only supported them because I saw how Pranpriya is happy with him. And if she's happy, I can't help but be happy too. I can't help but support her too.

But now that it turned out that the reason of her happiness became me myself, I guess I will give her that.

I will fight for her.

'Taehyung that's wrong!' my conscience stopped me instantly from turning into a complete jerk.

I know it's wrong. But the situation is so tempting. Can't I be a little selfish sometimes?

I love her. I really really want to be with her. But what if she gains back her memory? She will leave me for sure and I will end up hurting again.

I know I should move on already. But I can't. I need a little more time to be with her. Just a little more time. I promise I will move on after this.

For now, I plan on teaching Jungkook a lesson. Just a little lesson on how he hurt Pranpriya back then.

I'm gonna make him lose his shit when he sees that the girl she loves is interested in another man.

I know they will end up together but I need to test him first if he is really remorseful of what he did back then.

I'm gonna piss him off first and after this, I will try to move on. Maybe what I will do is wrong but I need this. She was mine at first and he is lucky enough to be chosen. And now, he needs to learn his lesson first before finally getting her.

"Taehyung!" I heard Jungkook's voice called from my back so I turned to face him.

"What?" I asked nonchalantly.

"Don't you dare play with me! She may forget about me but don't you ever take advantage of the situation!" he warned through gritted teeth.

"She said she loves me. You heard that right?" I said and Jungkook's face reddened in anger. I really like to tease him like this because his temper is just so short.

"That's because she fucking forgot about me! But she will remember me soon!" he said unsurely.

"Sure. She will remember you maybe in five years? And by that time we're already married and we would have kids on our own." I teased him more.

"What the fuck! Do you want to die? Because I will kill you!!!" he said raising his fist in the air. He was about to punch me but we were cut by a voice.

"Stop fighting you guys! The princess will be discharged now. Doctor Jin said she will continue her rest at the palace. The Queen said the three of you can stay at the palace if you want. She prepared rooms for you." Bam said and I nodded.

"Why three of us? I should be the only one to stay there with her!" Jungkook raised his voice.

"That's the Queen's order. You can stay or you can go. It depends on you." he said.

"I will stay." I said and Jungkook glared at me.

"No you won't! Go back to Korea! Shoo" he said like a little kid. I really want to laugh at him right now but I need to focus on my plan of pissing him.

"I can't wait to stay in a room with her!" I smiled at Bam and he nervously looked at Jungkook.

"Uhm guys--" Bam started

"You really have a death wish!" Jungkook grabbed my collar and Bam quickly pulled him away from me.

"Stop it! Don't cause a scene here!" Bam yelled.

I turned my back on him and started walking back to Pranpriya's room.

"Hey! I'm still talking to you! Come back here! I swear to god Kim Taehyung!" I hear him say but I just continued walking.

I grinned at how he jealous he could be. Jealous Jungkook is really fun to watch.

I'm so enjoying this.

If I can't be a selfish friend, then I can be a saddist one.



Author's Note

What do you think of Taehyung. Is he going too far?



The Unfaithful Heart

Lalisa's POV

I'm so happy that the Queen made Jack stay at the palace to look after me. She also allowed Jungkook and Jimin stay here too. They were given three separate rooms to stay. But I wonder why Jungkook and Jimin has to stay here too? Am I that close to them?

Especially Jungkook. I'm really curious about him. He is acting differently towards me which makes me feel awkward around him

Now I really wonder who he is in my life.

Is he my lover? But it's impossible because I love Jack. I can't love anybody else beside him.

My curiosity lead me to ask my friend about him.

"Kunpimook, who is Jungkook?" I asked him while brushing my hair. I am preparing for a meeting with three girls I don't know but Taehyung said I am good friends with them.

"He is the son of the President of South Korea Princess" he said.

"He is what?" Oh my God! He is a big time but why is he staying in this palace to look after me? I tried to force my brain to remember him which caused my head to hurt so much that I fell from my chair.

"Ouch!" I held my head which is throbbing in pain.

"Oh my God! Wait I'll call Doctor Jin!" Kunpimook used the intercom to call for my private doctor and shortly after he came rushing inside my room.

"Princess, are you alright?" he asked checking me. He helped me to sit again.

"My head just hurts so much!" I cried in pain.

"Here take this." he made me drink a relaxant. And it effected quickly.

"You're forcing yourself to remember. I told you to take it slow princess. You will gain back your memory through therapy not by forcing your brain to function." Dr. Jin said.

"What happened?" Jungkook barged in my room with a worried expression.

"She's forcing herself to remember things, now her head is hurting." Doctor Jin said.

"Bab..I mean princess stop overthinking. It will just worsen your condition." Jungkook scrouched in infront where I am seated and

held my hands.

"I promise I won't do it again." I looked down guiltily.

"Good!" he smiled.

Wait!

What is happening?

Jungkook is holding my hands and I'm just letting him?

Is this how I should act around him?

But what if Jack sees us like this?

I realized this is wrong.

I quickly pulled my hands from his and stood.

"I..I'm fine. No need to worry Jungkook." I said not looking at his eyes.

"Oh.. Okay." he stood too.

"What time will your sisters arrive?" I asked to change the topic.

"Just an hour and they will be here." He answered.

"I can't believe you are friends with my girlfriend princess."

Doctor Jin said.

"Who is your girlfriend? I'm sorry I can't remember them." I said.

"Jisoo is her name. She is Taehyung's step sister." the doctor answered happily.

"Who is Taehyung?" I asked.

"Taehyung is Jack's real name." Jungkook answered for me.

"Really? Maybe I should start calling him by his real name." I smiled and Jungkook frowned.

Dr. Jin cleared his throat.

"I will go Princess, I will pick Jisoo and her friends at the airport." Dr. Jin said and I smiled.

"Thank you! I can't wait to meet them. Especially Jack's sister." I said.

"She'll be happy to see you. I should go now. Kunpimook will go with me" he said and he left. Kunpimook left with him and I realized Jungkook is still here at my room watching me.

This is awkward. How can I make him leave my room?

"Uhm..I need to take my bath" I said for him to leave but Jungkook took steps to my vanity chair and he sat there.

"Okay" he answered then he crossed his legs.

I just noticed he has a very nice shape of legs. Especially his thighs.

But I frowned when I realized he's not yet leaving.

"I said I will take my bath." I repeated but he just smiled.

"Then go and take your bath. Why? Do you want me to help you?" he smirked and I blushed at the thought.

"No.. Uhm.. I need you to leave my room because.. " I scratched my head. I don't know how to tell him to leave politely.

"Oh.. Are you shy to show me your body?" he grinned and I blushed more.

This guy is really something.

"Yes. So please can you leave for a while?" I said.

"Sure." he smiled then he took few steps to the door. "Nothing I haven't seen" I heard him mutter.

"What was that?"

"Nothing. I'll go now princess. Make sure to lock your door when you take your bath." he smiled sweetly then he left.

I slumped down at the chair where he was seated awhile ago while clenching my chest.

What's wrong with me? I feel really weird around him?

My chest is beating too fast again.

I decided to shrug my feeling off and took my bath, when I was done. I walked to my closet to get some underwear in my drawer. But I was surprised to see boxes of medicines.

When I read the label, I tilted my head.

Emergency Pills?

Pills for what? Is this mine? Maybe I am sick that's why I need to take this.

How about I ask Kunpimook if he knows why I am taking this? But he left with Dr. Jin.

Right! I'll just ask Jack instead. Maybe he knows what are these for. This maybe an important prescription. I should have asked Dr. Jin but I will just ask Jack.

I left my room after dressing up and walked to the guests's building which is just connected to mine.

But there are three rooms?

Which is Jack's room?

I decided to knock on the middle door and the door opened revealing Jimin.

"Hi! What can I do for you princess?" Jimin asked sweetly.

"Uhm.. I'm just wondering where's Jack's room?" I asked and he frowned.

"You need to see him?"

"Yes" I answered. I don't want to mistakenly knock on Jungkook's room. I really feel awkward around him. Good thing I knocked on Jimin instead. I feel comfortable around him more than Jungkook.

"Taehyung is at the room on my right." he said smiling. There's a hint of playfulness in his eyes but I think I should trust him.

"Thank you so much Jimin!" I bowed and I quickly left.

I knocked on the room on the right but when the door opened, I froze when I saw someone I didn't expect.

Shit!

This is Jungkook's room!

He pulled me inside and that's when I realized he is half naked. His body is wet from shower and a towel is wrapped around his waist making the outline of his manhood visible through my eyes.

I gulped at his perfection.

This man is a living sculpture.

"So? What can I do for you Princess?" he smirked as he walk towards me. I nervously took steps backward making my back hit the wall.

The next thing I knew, he was already cornering me closing the gap between us.

But why do I seem to like this?

This is so wrong!

I'm being Unfaithful!

I'm sorry Jack!



Author's Note

Oh no! What will happen now?



The Girls's Reunion

Lalisa's POV

Jungkook leaned closer to my face and I almost melted because of his warm breath fanning my lips.

He is going to kiss me. I know. This is my first time to kiss someone and I think it will be Jungkook.

I know it should be Jack but...

But I don't want to stop him. I want to taste his lips. His lips are so tempting and I can't stop myself from craving his lips anymore.

I slowly closed my eyes and waited for his lips to land on mine.

I can feel it. He is close. He almost brush my lips.

"Pranpriya? Are you there?" I heard Jack's voice from outside his room.

My eyes flew wide open cutting me from Jungkook's spell.

"What the fuck?" Jungkook cursed when I pushed him.

He looked at me disappointedly and I felt guilty. Guilty for disappointing Jungkook but also guilty from being unfaithful to Jack. I should have stopped him but my body reacts differently when I'm near Jungkook.

"I should get going." I said and walked out of his room.

I guiltily faced Jack who is now looking at me worriedly.

"What are you doing there?" he asked.

"I.. I was looking for your room." I answered truthfully.

"That is Jungkook's room. That one is mine and Jimin's is that in the middle one" he explained gently and I nodded.

Jack is really kind. He is not even thinking that I was cheating behind his back. I really feel sorry for him because it seems like I am attracted to Jungkook. And If I let this be, I will end up cheating on Jack. I need to avoid Jungkook from now on as much as I can to stop myself from growing this feeling I have inside.

"Are your sisters here?" I asked.

"Yes, they finally arrived. They are at the palace' waiting room. Come and let's welcome them." he said trying to hold my hand.

"What's this?" he asked the moment he saw me holding something.

"Uhm..I was about to ask you if you know what this is? I can't remember if these are supposed to be mine. I found this in my room." I explained and he took the small box from me.

"This looks weird. I'm not sure what it is but you shouldn't be taking medicines that the doctors didn't prescribed." he said.

"You're right. But what should I do with this?" I asked.

"Throw them?" he said.

"Okay!" I quickly throw the box to the trash bin near us and continued walking hand in hand with him.

I think I don't need those.

Jungkook's POV

I was so close.

Just a little more and my lips will finally land on hers.

I miss my wife's lips so bad.

I need to taste her lips once again to lessen the stress I am feeling these days.

And good thing is that Lalisa is not stopping me from moving closer to her. I can feel it. She wants me too.

I leaned closer and finally she closed her eyes making me close mine too.

My lips nearly brushed hers when we were disrupted by a voice.

"Pranpriya? Are you there?" we heard Taehyung's voice from outside my room.

Our eyes flew wide open cutting us from our heated moment.

"What the fuck!" I cursed when Lalisa pushed me away.

I swear I'm gonna go and kill Taehyung this time!

I looked at her disappointedly and she looked down as if guilty from pushing me.

"I should get going." she said and walked out of my room.

I almost punched the door when I realized she just left me hanging here to be with Taehyung.

"Now what do I do with you?" I asked looking down at my hard cock.

She has this effect with me that my cock automatically stand when she's in my radar.

"What are you doing there?" I heard Taehyung asked from outside my door. I pressed my ear to the door to hear them better. I hope she tells him that we were about to kiss but he just came at the wrong time.

"I.. I was looking for your room." Lalisa answered and I frowned.

I thought she came to see me? But she just mistook my room for Taehyung's?

Now I'm getting more pissed!

What the fuck is she planning with Taehyung in his room?

My head is running cheating scenarios of my wife and my bestfriend and I hate it so much!

I slowly opened the door to peek on them.

"That is Jungkook's room. That one is mine and Jimin's is the middle one" he explained gently and she nodded.

"Are your sisters here?" I hear her ask.

"Yes, they finally arrived. They are at the Palace's Waiting room. Come and let's welcome them." he said trying to hold my wife's hand. How I wish I can cut Taehyung's hand right now!

"What's this?" he asked the moment he saw Lalisa holding something in her hand.

"Uhm..I was about to ask you if you know what this is? I can't remember if these are supposed to be mine. I found this in my room." she explained and I looked closely at the box which Taehyung took to read.

Oh my God!!!

Those are her pills?

What the fuck is Lalisa doing right now? Whybwould she show him the pills?

Now I wonder how Taehyung would react seeing Lalisa taking pregnancy pills.

"This looks weird. I'm not sure what it is but you shouldn't be taking medicine that the doctors didn't prescribed." he said and I was able to breath. Just like Lalisa, Taehyung is clueless too about contraceptive.

If they are just together, Lalisa would end up getting pregnant because of his lack of knowledge with such things.

Wait.

But what if Lalisa and Taehyung have sex?

It's not impossible right?

She thinks she loves him and she will probably give her self to him?

Oh my God!!! I can't let that happen! I swear I'm gonna blow if they do it!

I gripped the side of the door looking at them.

"You're right. But what should I do with this?" she asked.

"Throw them?" he answered unsurely.

"Okay!" she quickly throw the box to the trash bin near them.

'Did she just throw my most hated pills in the trash bin?' I smiled.

Finally!!!

I can have unprotected sex with her and we can finally make babies!

I jumped up and down and mentally thanked Taehyung for his clueless advice to her.

But I frowned the moment I realized something.

What if they do it and he impregnate my wife instead?

Oh no!

This is just so fucked up!

Lalisa's POV

"Lalisaaaaaaa!" Three beautiful girls came running to me and hugged me tightly.

"Hey!" I said smiling. They are squeezing me too tight but I can't help but feel happy and warm around them. I can't recognize them but deep in my heart, I can feel it. I love these girls.

When they finally let go of me, we all jumped and the boys just looked at us happily.

Jungkook came but I tried to ignore him. I need to distract myself from him.

"How are you? Can you remember us?" the chipmunk girl asked while crying.

"Sorry I don't." I answered sadly.

"It's okay. We'll just introduce ourselves." The girl with cat eyes said.

"Thank you!" I smiled and they all introduced themselves to me.

Jimin's sister is named Chaeyoung, Jungkook's sister is named Jennie and Jack's sister is named Jisoo which is Dr. Jin's girlfriend.

I invited them all to the living room to have some tea and all of us enjoyed each other's company. We talked about a lot of things and within minutes I feel close already to them. I think I can now talk to them about my plans.

"By the way, I'm so happy you came to visit. I may not remember you but I feel that you are all especial here in me." I said pointing at my chest.

"Aww" the girls wiped their eyes.

"And with that, I plan to invite you with Jack and I's wedding." I smiled happily and all of them gasped. I consciously looked around and everyone was staring at me with wide eyes.

"What?" I asked.

"You will marry who?" Jennie asked.

"I will marry Jack or should I say Taehyung. I love him since childhood and I can't wait to be with him" I answered and they all got quiet.

Is something wrong? Why do they look disappointed.

Jennie stood and pulled Jungkook farther.

"Excuse us. I need to talk to my brother" she said pulling Jungkook away.

I nodded and faced the other. "Come and drink more tea. It's a very special type of tea from the upper most region of Thailand."



Author's Note

Uh oh! What do you think will Jennie do?

The Siblings' Plan

Jungkook's POV

"What the hell is happening Jk?" Jennie whisper shouted when she pulled me on one corner away from the group.

"I don't know. She suddenly forgot about me, about us." I answered sadly as I look at her from a far. Lalisa is now holding Taehyung's hands which hurts my eyes so bad. I want to look away but I can't. The jealousy I feel right now is over the top. And good thing, Jennie pulled me away or else I would have punched someone.

"And why are you letting her just forget about you like that? She loves you so much! Not Taehyung!" she stomped her foot to prove her point.

"As much as I want to tell her about me, Doctor Jin said we should not force her to remember things because It will just worsen her situation. What do I do now sis? I can't lose her. She's supposed to be mine. The queen already accepted me but she suddenly loss her memory and I can't do anything but to wait." I explained at my sister and she held her chin to think.

"It seemed like she think she's really in love with Taehyung when she's not. And why is Taehyung being quiet about this? Is he taking advantage of the situation?" she asked.

"Of course he will take advantage of this. He loves her. And now she loves him too. I'm out of the picture Jennie and I can't do anything about it! What if she won't remember me anymore and she really marry Taehyung? I swear to God I'm going to die!" I almost cried saying these things to my sister.

"This might be your karma for cheating on her." she said.

"I know. I know I did a really big mistake back then. I can only imagine how hurt she would feel if she'd known I kissed another girl while we were together. I realized how a jerk I am back then everytime I see them hold hands." I said.

"Good think you know! They are just holding hands and you are going crazy like that. Just imagine if they kiss--"

"Stop please I don't want to hear that!" I said covering my ears.

"Fine but Jk pull yourself back together and stop crying! You look like a pathetic gay! We should think of a better way for her to remember you." she said and my brain automatically thought of

something.

"How about I fuck her again? She likes it when I do that to her. Maybe she can remember me physically." I said smiling.

"Are you crazy? She barely remembers you! How will she even agree on having sex with you!" she said.

"Force her?" I answered.

"That's raping Jungkook! Can you use your brain for a while?" She said rolling her eyes at me.

"But I can't think of any?"

"How about we bring her back to Korea? And made her go to places where you usually go. Where do you usually go for a date?" she asked.

"We are always at the dorm Jennie. I never took her out because I'm afraid Tzuyu would see us. The only place we went outside the dorm is the mall to buy clothes." I answered.

"That's sad to hear. You should have taken her to the best places in Korea. I can't believe you are that worst of a boyfriend! If I were Lalisa, I would have broken up with you in day 1" she said and I rolled my eyes.

"I know. I should have treated her better. Like a princess but I was a coward. I learned my mistakes already Jennie so please stop reminding me and help me with Lalisa already."

"We have no choice but to just take her to the dorm and hope that she remembers you when you go there." She said.

Come to think of it.

There is one place where it is special for both of us.

"I think I know where to bring her!" I announced excitedly.

"Where?"

"To the Jeju Island"

The place where I took her innocence.

The place where we first made love.

The place where we got married.

The place where we pledge our vows.

"You sure?" my sister asked.

"Yes. I'm sure she will remember me when we go there." I said with a hopeful voice.

I could clearly remember her voice on my head saying.

Jungkook, wear this ring as the sign of my love. It is also a symbol of our memories together. And on those times that we were together, I want to thank you for the happiness you brought me. I love you with all of my heart and I'm willing to sacrifice everything for you. You may not understand it yet. Who I really am, where I came from but this is the real me. And the real me loves you and will always love you. Jungkook I promise you that I will never forget my love for you as long as I live. I

love you Jungkook.

I could still remember her vow word for word.

I promise you that I will never forget my love for you as long as I live.

Those exact words makes me hope that she will still remember me.

Her love for me will never be erased with just a brain condition.

I may not own her memory right now but I know I still own her heart.

"Then good. Here is our plan, make her remember you with everything that you can by going to the places you spent with. I will take care of Taehyung." she said and I frowned.

"Are you serious? You will just hurt yourself Jennie just like the last time. You know him."

"I know. But I need to try again right?" she smiled bitterly and I pulled her for a hug.

"You're the best sis." I said.



Author's Note

Sorry for the short chapter.

I miss reading your comments btw.



The Ring

Lalisa's POV

When Jennie and Jungkook came back to join us, Jennie suggested that all of us should go and have a vacation in Korea which I agreed happily.

I really want to go to South Korea. They said they met me there but I can't remember being in that country. I just saw pictures of it but I haven't seen it in person.

I know I really miss a lot because of my current condition and I really wish I can get my memories back so that I can already marry Jack. I can't wait to wear a wedding gown, I can't wait to hold a bouquet of flowers and I can't wait to wear a wedding ring on my finger.

I looked at my hands and I was surprised to see a silver ring on my ring finger.

I don't remember where I got this. Maybe it's a gift from someone but why would I put it on my ring finger?

Is this from Taehyung?

I looked at Taehyung to ask him about it but he was too busy listening to Jin and Jisoo's stories. I decided to just ask him later and just focused on listening to the couples too while rubbing the ring.

But when I unconsciously looked at Jungkook's direction, I was surprised to see his hand.

He was wearing a silver ring on his ring finger which looks exactly like what I am wearing.

Oh my God!

Are these couple rings?

Are Jungkook and I a couple then?

But it's impossible!

I don't love him!

I love Jack.

Maybe it was just a coincidence that we have the same ring and we wore it in our ring finger.

This is nothing.

Yeah.

We are not together. If we are, everyone must have opposed already on my plan on marrying Jack.

The funny thing is that Jack didn't even proposed to me but I can feel he wants to marry me too. When we were younger, we used to promise that we will marry each other when we get older.

That's why I don't need him to propose. I know he loves me and I love him. That's enough already.

'Are you sure?' my subconscious asked.

"Yeah... I guess?" I uttered which startled Jack who is sitting closely beside me.

"Are you talking to me Priya?" he asked gently. Luckily the other's didn't hear that I spoke out of nowhere. They were too busy listening to Jisso and Jin's love story.

"I'm okay. Don't worry." I said and he took my hand to squeeze.

I smile in return and leaned to his shoulder to listen to the couples back.

Jungkook's POV

Jisso and Jin were telling us their love story and everyone was listening except my wife who is now sitting beside Taehyung.

She was looking at the couple but I can tell her mind is somewhere else. I really wish she's thinking about me now because if she'll ask me, I'm thinking about her 24/7.

Lalisa looked at her hand and I can tell she was suprised when she realized she was wearing something.

I smiled when I saw her observe our wedding ring intently.

Come on Lalisa! Look at me and see that I'm wearing the same.

But instead of looking at me, she looked at Taehyung instead.

I clenched my fists so hard when I realized she must be expecting that it came from fucking Taehyung!

Lalisa's eyes moved on me and I quickly put my hand with the ring on display. Her eyes widen when she saw my finger wearing the same ring.

'Yeah see that? I wear the same baby because you love me and I love you. These rings are the symbol of our love'

I want to tell her that but she just shook her head as if she's telling herself that it's not possible.

What the fuck is she doing! She really frustrates me so much!

"Yeah... I guess?" I hear her utter which startled Taehyung beside her.

"Are you talking to me Priya?" he asked gently, leaning closely to her.

"I'm okay. Don't worry." she said and he took my wife's hand to squeeze.

Lalisa smiled in return and leaned to his shoulder to listen to the couples back.

I held my chest which is hurting so much from seeing my wife

cheat unconsciously in my very own face.

They look so happy together while I'm just looking at them jealous of how Taehyung gets her affection this time. It's like the world turned upside down.

My thoughts were cut when the Queen and Mario walked in.

All of us quickly stood to bow. But I was too pissed to see Mario coming here too.

Another problem.

"Your majesty, Prime Minister, a pleasant afternoon!" the girl's greeted in surprise.

"Grandmother, these are my friends Jisso, Jennie and Chaeyong." Lalisa introduced our sisters proudly.

"Yes, I met them already at a party back in Korea. I'm glad you paid us a visit" the Queen spoke.

"We are pleased to visit your beautiful country and we really miss Lalisa I mean Pranpriya so much." my sister said.

"Good. I hope you enjoy this country during your stay. I can help you plan a group outing here in Thailand if you want?" the Queen suggested.

"Actually grandma we were just planning on going to Jeju to spend time together. Will that be okay?" Lalisa asked with hopes in her eyes. Like a little kid who wants to go to Disney Land.

"Sure, you can do anything you like my dear." the Queen said and all of us smiled.

Great! Now I can take her back to Jeju where there's a big chance she'll remember me.

"Jeju? I bought a property in Jeju. It's not a mansion but it's really nice because it's near the beach. You guys can stay there if you want. The place is private and I think you guys will like it there" Mario offered while looking at Chaeyong.

Chaeyong blushed in return.

Are these two eye-flirting in front of the queen?

Ew.

But It's better than to have him flirt with my wife.

"That would be great Mario! Are you sure we can stay there?" Lalisa asked.

"Of course. We are good friends. You can stay there as long as you want." he said still glancing at Chaeyoung from time to time.

"Okay then! It's settled we are going to Jeju!!!" Lalisa said and the girls ran to each other bouncing while hugging each other.

I smiled looking at her. Small things like this can easily make her happy despite being a princess, that's why I love her so much.

When the girls started talking about their plans, Mario, Jimin, Taehyung and Dr.Jin talked about the fun activities we can

try in Jeju.

I on the other hand just watched my wife in a distance. Then the Queen slowly walked to me so I stood straight and faced her.

"Take care of my princess and make sure to create a baby when you get there." She said and I gasped.

"You knew?" I whisper shouted.

"Of course I knew. You think I'm dumb? But make sure you'll give me my greatgrandson as soon as possible Jeon Jungkook." She raised her brow and I gulped.

"Ye.. Yes your majesty." I stuttered in response. I'm not even sure if I can do that because of our situation right now. But I guess I can try.

When I looked at Lalisa, she was already talking to Taehyung while smiling sweetly. The way she looks at him makes me lose hope that I'll have her back. But I need to try harder. If she can't remember her love for me, I'll just make sure she'll fall for me again.



Author's Note

I really apologize for the short and boring chapter. And also for the very late update. It's because I got busy processing my passport application for the BTS concert. Sadly, I don't have a passport and visa yet. But I hope I can make it till april for their South Korea schedule.

SAD

So, the prices for the BTS concert ticket in Seoul was announced and it's so cheap.

I was really expecting that I will be spending 30k in Philippine Peso for VIP tickets but it turned that the VIP tickets in SK are just around 6,000 pesos. That's just 120 dollars.

But the sad part is I can't go because I have no passport and visa yet and it will take a lot of time to process here in my country. Besides, I should file for my work leave 3 months before April. If not, my leave application will be denied and the immigration will not allow me to leave.

I'm so heartbroken right now.



Does anybody know if BTS will have another concert this year in Korea besides April? Please let me know guys. 🙏🙏🙏

I really want to go and I think my requirements will be ready on June onwards.

The Body Reaction

Lalisa's POV

Finally my most anticipated day has come! Our private plane safely landed here in South Korea. But we can't go directly to Jeju because The President wants to see me first and I need to go to give courtesy visit as a princess of my country.

"Are you nervous?" Taehyung asked as he guide me to walk.

"A little." I answered shortly. I'm actually super nervous coming in this country which I haven't been. And the fact that the president and the first lady wants to see me too adds up to my anxiety.

I really wonder why they want to see me. Jennie told me that her mom called for how many times just to make sure that I will go to the Blue Palace where the President lives.

"Don't be. You'll be fine" he said patting my back and I hummed in response.

Taehyung and I are now walking ahead. Jungkook and Jennie is at our back, while Jimin, Chaeyoung, Jisoo and Dr. Jin were following. Dr. Jin has to come with me because of my condition which makes Jisoo happy because she say this will be their bonding moment. Theybfind it hard to be together these days because Dr. Jin is working in Thailand while Jisoo studies here in Korea.

But Dr. Jin said he will marry Jisoo as soon as she graduates.

I'm really happy forr! the both of them because they found the love on each other while I am unsure of my feelings.

I'm supposed to love Taehyung wholeheartedly but everytime I plan my dream wedding, someone keeps popping inside my head which confuses me more.

I looked at Taehyung and he smiled sweetly at me. Whenever I'm with him, I feel calm. But my heart will go crazy everytime the other person is around. That's why I don't talk to him too much these days and I don't want Taehyung to notice my confused feelings.

When Taehyung was about to hold my hand, Jennie was able to pull me away.

"Lalisa, look there's a bunny!" she pointed somewhere as we walk to the car.

"Where?" I asked while looking to where she is pointing as I also glance at Taehyung's direction.

"Oh it's gone already. But it's okay. We'll find it soon." she said and she pulled my hand and started walking faster away from the group.

I glanced back and I realized both Taehyung and Jungkook are watching me which made my heart thump a little faster.

I really need to stop looking at Jungkook because my heart is palpitating every time I do.

When we reach the presidential car, I had to be separated from Taehyung, Jimin, Chae, Jisoo because I need to go to the Blue Palace while they go home first for the day.

Our plan is I will stay at the Palace tonight and we'll just see each other tomorrow for our flight to Jeju.

I had to shrug my nervous feelings around Jungkook and act like I'm not intimidated by his presence.

"See you tomorrow." Taehyung said when I was at the car door. Jungkook, Jennie and Dr. Jin are already inside.

"Yes. I can't wait. I'll see you tomorrow" I smiled and tiptoed to give him a peck on his cheek but not before I do the door opened and Jennie pulled me in.

I was surprised at how strong Jennie is for pulling me inside effortlessly.

"We'll go guys!" Jennie grinned at Taehyung and the rest.

I looked at him guiltily but he just smiled.

"See you soon Pranpriya"

"I'll call you later Jack!"

The door finally closed and I sat straight. Dr. Jin was sitting in the passenger seat. While Jungkook, Jennie and I are on the back seat. Good thing Jennie is between us. I really don't want to sit next to Jungkook. His thighs are distracting.

"Jungkook, let's change seats. I feel nauseous when I don't sit next to a window" Jennie said and my eyes widen.

God! If Jungkook agrees, he will have to sit next to me!

"Sure" he said and I gulped. I had to close my eyes to hide my nervousness.

Jennie and Jungkook switched and when his body brushed mine slightly, my whole body weaken in an instant.

I can't describe this feeling but my body has a different reaction when Jungkook is near me.

I focus my eyes on the side instead to not look at him.

"Is it too hot Lalisa?" he asked beside me.

"You're hot. I mean I'm hot? I mean.. Wha.. What do you mean hot?" I asked. I'm not sure if his body is what he is referring to as hot?

Because he is.

Damn. Why is he giving me anxiety?

Jennie chuckled in my answer while Jungkook smirked.

"I'm asking if you feel hot because you are sweating too much. The AC is working fine." he said and I consciously wiped my forehead and neck.

Yeah. He's right. I'm really sweating too much despite the cold temperature inside their car.

I didn't answer him. I will just stutter if I do. I just closed my eyes and decided to take a nap.

Shortly after, I felt strong arms holding me. When I open my eyes, Jungkook's arms are already wrapped around my body and I had to gulp at the short distance between our faces.

He's sleeping but he looks so good. Jennie is now sleeping too. And I'm glad she is because I don't want her to see us like this.

Should I push him away from me?

But his arms feels so good.

It feels like home.

I shrugged my worries and just leaned closer to him. Resting my head on his hard chest, I closed my eyes and fall back to sleep.

"We're here!" the driver announced. I open my eyes the same time as Jungkook's and I realized we are still in the same position a while ago. I'm still wrapped in his arms.

I quickly pulled away blushing so hard. This is so embarrassing. Jungkook was blushing too while scratching his temple.

"You two looks good together" Jennie teased and I reddened more.

This is not right. This is cheating. And in my vocabulary, cheating is the leaast thing that I will do.

We hopped out of the car and I looked around the Blue Mansion.

So this is where Jungkook and Jennie lives?

Guards were lined outside and servants waited inside. As if waiting for an important guest.

We walk inside and a man the same age as Sir Rudolph walked to me.

"A pleasant to have you visit our country Princess Pranpiya and Doctor Kim." he greeted while giving me flowers.

"Thank you so much!" I answered shyly.

"The President and the First Lady is waiting for you. Come with me!" he said and he lead us to a big room where there sits an old man and a lady on a sofa. I presume they are Jungkook's parents. The man looks like Jungkook and the woman looks like Jennie.

"Good--" my greeting was cut when the lady ran and embraced me tightly.

"I'm so happy to see you again. When is the wedding?" the woman excitedly asked.

"Wedding?" I asked back. Is she referring to me and Taehyung's wedding?

"Yes! Wedding. You and Jungkook's wedding!" she said.

"What?!"



Author's Note

How are ya'll?

I miss writing so much.

Thank You!!!

I just got 100k reads on Idol Pleasure and I really can't believe it! I can still remember when I wrote it, I just got 10 reads on the second day and I was already happy then.

Writing a Liskook story was a decision I made for myself. At first, I really like reading Taelice stories but Liskook started grabbing my attention.

And when I started reading Liskook stories, I sometimes get frustrated because of the unfinished stories with good plots. That's why, I wrote something for myself instead. I wrote Idol Pleasure without expectations and it turned out that some people actually liked it despite the poor writing.

There were grammatical errors and wrong spelling in almost every chapter but I'm too lazy to correct it.

And now I wrote How To Be A Real Man 101 which I found a bit complicated to write because readers doesn't like Taelice and Lismin.

But still, I'm so grateful for the reads especially the comments. I love you all and I'm really sorry the bad writing. I don't deserve you but still THANK YOU!



The Embarrassing Secret

Lalisa's POV

"I'm so happy to see you again. When is the wedding?" the woman who I presume as my friends' mother excitedly asked.

"Wedding?" I asked back. Is she referring to me and Jack's wedding?

"Yes! Wedding. You and Jungkook's wedding." she said.

"What???" I asked in surprise. What does she mean by Jungkook and I's wedding. This woman must be mistaken.

Jungkook pulled her mother quickly and whispered something on her ear. I nervously looked at them and wonder what are they talking about.

"I'm sorry princess. I forgot you got an amnesia. Let's talk about other things. By the way I'm Dara Jeon. You can call me Mom and you can call the President Dad." she introduced pointing at the President.

"That would be informal if I call the president that way." I shyly said.

"No need to be formal, we'll be a family soon." she said which makes me wonder more. She's really weird.

"Mom!" Jungkook shoot her mother a warning look. The president must have noticed the awkward exchanged that's why he cleared his throat.

"I'm really glad you paid us a visit princess. I heard you guys are planning to go to Jeju tomorrow? Do you have somewhere to stay when you get there? Because I have a mansion there where you can stay." said the President.

"Yes sir, we already have. We will be staying at a rest house owned by Prime Minister Chayut."

"Just call me Dad princess. No need to be formal." he smiled like Jungkook. The president is really good looking despite his age. Maybe Jungkook will be as good looking as him when he grew old too. His future wife would be really lucky.

"Okay D..dad" I shyly bowed.

"Cute" Jennie muttered.

"Good! For now let's eat. We prepared something special for you." the President proudly said.

I bowed and when I was about to walk, Jungkook took my hand

which surprised me.

"Come on!" he pulled my hand gently.

"Jungkook.. my hand?" I said.

"Oh sorry.." He pulled his hands away when he realized the weird thing he just did.

I felt a slight feeling of emptiness when he let go of my hand. His hand is big and warm and it feels good to hold but I know that we shouldn't do that because we are not together.

I hope we are though.

I shook my head again when I walk with them to the dinning area. I can't let this feelings I have to grow more because I will end up hurting Jack.

Jungkook's POV

I can't sleep. It's now past 9 in the evening and I'm still wide awake.

I can't sleep because of thinking about her.

I ruffled my hair out of frustration while I lay on my bed. Lalisa is probably asleep now in our guest room but I really want to see her, to kiss her and to hug her.

I touched my lips and imagined how sweet it is if I feel her lips against mine again.

I miss her so bad.

I miss her voice, her laugh, her soft body, her warmth, her scent. I miss it everytime she says she loves me and that she will do anything just to be with me.

My relationship with her has been a rollercoaster because of the different problems we faced. But all through out the journey, it was her who always fights and understands the most while I always cause the problem.

Unfortunately, It's different now. She forgot about me and that includes forgetting about fighting for me.

We were almost there. We fought our love from the leaders of different countries. From my parents, to the King of Taiwan and her Princess daughter. Lastly to the Queen of Thailand and their Prime Minister. And now that everybody supports us already including my parents and her grandmother, it was her turn to stop fighting.

Why can't we just be together? When I love her and she loves me too.

I know she still loves me but she's just hesitant because of her memories with Taehyung. And it hurts so much to see them like that. Acting like a lovely couple in front of my very own eyes. Holding each other's hands, laughing at each other's joke, enjoying every bit of moment together when It's supposed to be me she's spending time with.

I then felt a tear escaped my eye. When it comes to Lalisa, I always cry when we face such problems. I didn't know loving her would cause me such pain. But I guess this might be punishment for hurting countless girls back then. Playing with them while they cry for me.

And now that I found her, the love of my life, I realized how those girls hurt because of me.

I wiped my tears away and sat back. I can't cry like this anymore!

I need to see her, right here, right now.

I don't care if she'll scream or what. The mansion is too big for anyone to hear.

I just want her. Only her!

I stood and walked to the guest room where she's staying. I held the door knob but when I was about to twist it open, I hear someone talk from inside.

"But I think she's sleeping now." I hear Lalisa's voice. She must be talking with someone on the phone.

"Uhm..I'll try. Thank you so much!" she said. Who is she talking too?

"I love you too." she said and I held my chest. She must be talking to Taehyung.

"Okay stop talking Park Chaeyoung! I need to go or I'll stain their bed." she chuckled.

Thank God she's just talking to Chae!

The room went silent and I was startled when the door opened.

"Jungkook? What are you doing here?" She asked when she saw me.

"Uhm I.. I just want to ask if the bed is soft enough for you." I lied. I just really want to talk to her.

"Oh.. I think it is. Thank you for your concern" she shyly answered.

What now Jungkook?

I need to think of more things to talk to her more.

A few seconds later and we just stood there awkwardly.

She was just looking at her shoe while I'm just looking at her beautiful face.

"Uhm.." she started.

"Where are you going by the way?" I asked calmly but deep inside my heart is thumping out of nervousness. It's weird to act shy in front of your wife. Fuck Amnesia!

"I'm going to see Jennie. I need something from her." she said.

"I think she's asleep already? Maybe I can just ask her for you."

"Oh no! That would be embarrassing!" she waved no while blushing.

"What is it? No need to be shy." I said. Seriously, there's nothing to be embarrassed of between us. She's my wife and I know everything about her.

I even know how she tastes like. I bit my lip remembering those times when she would moan everytime I eat her out.

"Jungkook" she nervously walked back when I took steps closer to her.

I know she's nervous by the way she gulp but I don't care. I miss her and I really want to feel her right now.

"Yes Princess?" I asked looking into her eyes. I just notice we were already inside her room just by her walking backwards.

"Jungkook, what are you doing?" she asked again.

"Nothing. I'm just asking you what you want?" I said. I really want her to answer that she wants me. Just one word and I won't stop myself from pushing her to her bed.

"Jungkook, I need.."

"What do you need?" I asked in a low and hoarse voice.

"I need pads or tampons!" she answered whispering as if it's an embarrassing secret. I stopped on my track when I realized what she wants.

What did she just say?

"You need what?" I asked again.

"I need pads because I have my period right now. That's why I need to ask Jennie if she has one. I left my personal kit in the Palace." she answered shyly.

I got really disappointed with what she said but what can I do? It's a womanly thing and right now it's just in a bad timing.

"Okay, I'll try finding something in her room." I said and she nodded.

"Thank you so much." she said.

I walked out of her room disappointed, not only because I won't get to make love with her but because I realized she's not YET pregnant.

I sighed.

I really need to act fast because of the Queen. And Jeju is my only hope right now.

Hopefully she gains her memory back there. Then we can make love and she will bear my child. I will marry her and everything will be perfect.

I knocked on Jennie's door and when she didn't answer, I decided to just push it open.

Then I saw Jennie peacefully sleeping already.

I walk to her vanity table and open one of the drawers to look for menstrual pads or tampons.

Seriously girl's pussies are really complicated. They will bleed once a month and they will give birth which they say are really painful. I feel pity for my baby for being a girl. But if she's not a girl, she would be Limario and I would be gay.

Sadly, I didn't find anything for Lalisa in Jennie's drawers.

So I walk to her closet and look for more there. When I open her drawer, I was surprised to see a picture I didn't expect I would see.

It's a picture of Taehyung when he was still in middle school.

I shook my head.

My sister is still the same.

She's still whipped for Taehyung.

But sadly, he doesn't feel the same way for her because of the princess which turned to be my Lalisa.

Jennie has gone through a lot of heartache because of Taehyung when we were still in highschool. She would take pictures of me, Jimin and Taehyung back then and pretend that she only took those because of me. But I know it's because of Taehyung.

I hate seeing her that way that's why I told her to stop.

I thought she moved on already but now I'm sure she hasn't yet.

I placed the picture back and walked out of her room.

Now, what should my wife use?

I can't go back to her without bringing what she wants so I decided to just buy her instead.

I walked out of the mansion and then to my car and drove to a 24/7 convenience store.

I took all the pads and tampons there and paid for it, ignoring the teasing smile of the cashier when she saw the girly stuffs I bought.

"What's your problem bitch?" I asked with a threatening voice.

"Nothing. It's just weird for a man with big muscles like you to buy tampons." she chuckled but I just rolled my eyes.

"Is it weird to buy something for your wife? Maybe your boyfriend is much of a pussy for not buying you when you need one." I snapped and she frowned.

"Rude" she muttered but I didn't answer back.

I took the pads and tampons away and walked back smiling.

I don't care if I look unmanly because of this. I will do anything for Lalisa even if it embarrasses me so much.



Authors Note

Does your boyfriend buy you pads or tampons too? 🍷

And what do you prefer? Pads or Tampons?

Sorry for asking. I just want to know your preference. Lol

The Realization

Lalisa's POV

Jungkook came back sweating.

"Here" he said giving me packs of different brands of tampons and pads.

"This is too much." my eyes widen at what he gave.

I actually just need one because it is my last day but Jungkook bought too much.

"I don't know how many you need so I bought everything in the store" he said and I bit my lip to stop myself from smiling too much.

This guys is so sweet. I can't.

Jungkook being all muscular is the least person I expect to buy these stuffs for me.

"It must have been embarrassing for you. I'm sorry." I said.

"It's nothing" he said scratching his head.

This is really awkward. I want Jungkook to leave me alone already so that I can change but I think he has no plans in leaving yet and it would be rude to ask him to leave when he has done this for me.

"You need to change?" he asked. He can even read my mind.

"Yeah. I guess I need to or I'll stain your bed" I said.

"It's okay. I'll go now" he signalled to leave but I quickly pulled his arms.

"No!! I don't! I mean you can stay here if you're not sleepy yet. We can talk" I offered.

What am I thinking? I shouldn't have said that! But it's too late now. Jungkook is smiling ear to ear already.

"I would love to. I'll wait for you here." he said and I nodded.

"I'll be quick" I said and strode to the bathroom.

I took a warm bath and changed to my night dress.

When I got out of the bathroom, Jungkook is now lying on my bed. Like a four course meal.

His eyes moved from the wall to me and it travelled from my face down to my body.

I tucked my hair in my ear and looked down. Why am I feeling nervous? As if we are going to do something together.

I never felt warm like this before. I don't know what's happening to me but I feel so hot.

"Come here" he said with a low voice, patting the space beside him and I don't know what has gotten into me that I followed him and lay beside him too.

My heart is beating so fast at the short distance between our body that I can even hear his heartbeat.

"Do you want to talk about something?" he asked and I nodded.

I scooted closer to him and lay my head on his arm. Honestly, I want to ask him about who he is in my life but I'm afraid to know the truth. I don't want to hurt someone especially if it's as kind as Jack. So instead of asking him about our relationship, I decided to just ask him about some other thing.

"You guys said that this is not my first time here in Korea. May I ask how did I got here? Is it because of vacation because as far as I know, the queen won't allow me to leave my own country." I asked curiously.

"You fell from the heaven and you landed in this country" he chuckled and I looked at him in disbelief.

"I'm serious Jungkook!"

"I'm serious too. You are an angel Lalisa." He said and I looked away blushing.

"Why are you calling me by my nickname by the way? My name is Pranpriya." I asked.

"That's how you introduce yourself" he answered.

"Really? Why would I do that?" I asked and he sighed.

"It's a long story Lalisa but if I'll shorten it up. It all started when you enrolled here in this country. You took the same course as us. You, Jimin, Taehyung and me are classmates in an all-boy school" he answered.

"Wait what? Why would I study in an all-boy school?" I asked in disbelief. He must be joking.

"You had to pretend like a boy to hide from someone who wants to kill you" he answered.

"Jungkook stop joking! Nobody wants to kill me!"

"I'm not joking. Your aunt planned to kill you that's why your grandmother hid you here." he said.

"My aunt? You mean Aunt Sarah?" I asked in fear. Why would she want to kill me?

"Yes that one. But don't worry she's now on jail." he said and I thought for a moment.

How about Eunha? I asked myself and flashbacks of Eunha pushing me came into my vision.

"Eunha!" I yelled and my head started hurting like hell.

"Jungkook my head hurts so much!" I grabbed my head which hurts and asked for help and he quickly stood to help me sit.

"Stop pushing yourself to remember things!" he stood and grabbed my medicine on the bedside table. "Here" he gave me the medicine and took a bottle of water from the fridge. Luckily, the guest room has one.

"Thank you" I said when my head started easing.

"Let's not talk about the things you can't remember. It will just stress you out." he said in a worried tone and I nodded.

"Lay here to relax." he said and I slowly lay back on the bed.

"Is it okay if I lay beside you?" he asked.

"It's okay" I said. I hope Taehyung won't know about this. I know it's wrong to spend time with Jungkook like this but I can't help it. I want to be with him.

I think I'm falling in love with him?

Jungkook's POV

I lay beside Lalisa and faced her. She looked at me and I just do the same. I just watch her and admired her features more. I miss being with her like this. If she just didn't lose her memory, it would be round 5 by now. But she's on her period now and I think she will not agree on having sex with me like this.

We haven't tried having sex while she's on her period but I won't mind doing it if it's her.

"You are beautiful" I said.

"You don't look bad either." she said which makes me smile. My baby just complimented me and I'm grinning so much because of it. But I just remembered how he looks at Taehyung.

"But Taehyung is--"

"Let's not talk about him." she said looking away.

"Okay" I said. I think I just ruined her mood because of my insecurity. And now she got quiet. I wonder what she's thinking though.

"What are you thinking?" my curiosity led me to ask her.

"I just feel bad but somehow happy" she said.

"What makes you happy?" I asked.

"This. Just talking to you. I don't know why but it feels so good to just talk." she admitted and somehow it made me really happy.

All I thought is that she doesn't care for me anymore but now she just admitted that I'm the reason for her to be happy.

I held her chin to face me and looked at her face. She's so beautiful. Just the sight of her face can make me survive for days.

"Can I kiss you?" I asked my voice nervous. I hope she says yes.

She bit her lip and nodded.

I smiled and slowly leaned to her, hearing the fast beating of my heart. I didn't know kissing her could be this nerve wracking.

Then my lips landed on her hesitant ones. And God it feels so

good to kiss her again. I moved my lips in slow and gentle manner to not startle her and gladly she followed my rhythm.

She's kissing me back!

I held her cheek and bit her lower lip which made her open her mouth more and for me, it is my invitation to push my tongue in. My tongue searched for hers and moved mine inside her mouth.

She moaned sexily when I started sucking her tongue. And my cock hardened in an instant just hearing her voice in pleasure like that.

I quickly hovered over her and surprisingly she just let me.

Our kissed turned from a gentle one to a more passionate one. Lalisa wrapped her arms around me and pulled me more to her.

I know it's bloody down there but I don't care if I enter a bloody war right now. I quickly moved my lips to the crook of her neck and kissed her there.

"Jungkook" she let out a moan while tugging my hair more.

My hand pulled her strap down to let one breast out. My movements were quick as if afraid that she'll wake from this and push me away. I kissed her chest and sucked her nipples hungrily While massaging the other one.

"hmmm.. Jungkook that feels good!" she said throwing her head back.

I know baby, you always say that when I kiss you like this.

When I was about to kiss her other breast, her phone started ringing from the bedside table.

Her eyes flew wide open when we saw the caller ID.

Jack.

She sat back and guiltily looked at me.

"I need to answer this." she said and I got pissed.

What can I do?

I gave her a small nod and she quickly answered the call.

I just sat next to her quietly and watch as she bit her lip while waiting for the voice on the other line.

"Hello?" she said taking a glance at me. While pulling her strap to her shoulder.

"Yes, I'm about to sleep." her voice shaking.

"What am I doing? Uhm.. Nothing. I'm just.. I'm just preparing to go to bed." She nervously answered.

"Okay. I'll see you tomorrow." she said.

"I love you too." she whispered for me not to hear but I heard it anyway. And it hurts like hell!

When the call ended, she stood and faced me.

"Jungkook, please don't tell him about this" she said and my brows furrowed.

What the fuck?

"What are you saying! Lalisa I--"

"Please Jungkook. It's already late. I want to sleep." she said and I looked at her with defeat.

Just a while ago she was pulling me more to her and now she wants me to leave?

I don't know what to do with her anymore. It's very clear that she wants me. Or am I mistaken and it's just a physical attraction that she has for me?

But I think no. I know she still loves me even if she forgot about me. I felt it by the way she kissed me a while ago.

"Jungkook please." she begged when I didn't answer.

I walked out of her room broken with what just happened.

If this happened with another woman, I would probably stop by now but It's Lalisa we are talking about. I'm not just gonna give up my wife like that without trying harder.

She's mine and I'm sure she will remember me and forget about Taehyung once I take her to Jeju.

Lalisa's POV

What did I just do?

I just hurt Jungkook and I feel so bad right now.

I slumped down on my bed and shook my head because of what I just did.

I just cheated on Jack and worse is it's with his friend

But I'm sure by now that what I feel for Jungkook is deeper than what I feel for Jack.

I love him.

I love Jungkook and I'm so sure of that.

But how will I tell Jack about this? That I fell for Jungkook?

I will hurt him for sure because he loves me.

Jack loves me, I love Jungkook but how about Jungkook? Does he love me too?

I don't think he does. But why did he kissed me if he doesn't love me? That was my first kiss and for some reason, I'm glad it was with Jungkook.

Now I really feel bad for Jack. But I need to be honest to myself and tell him that I fell in love another man without me knowing.

I decided to just sleep my worries off and to tell Jack about it tomorrow.



Author's Note

I'm so happy right now because I think I know what the question Mark for BTS Map of The Soul Tour means. So clearly I still have a chance to see them. And to all my fellow PH

armys, please vote for Philippines too. We're currently leading
and we need more votes so please I urge you to vote 🙏🙏🙏

The Decision to Move On

Taehyung's POV

"Jeju Island!"

The girls excitedly hopped out of the van and walked excitedly to rest house owned by Prime Minister Mario Chayut.

"Oh my God! This is so huge!" Chaeyoung covered her mouth and we agree nodding.

It is really huge. It looks like a mansion than a rest house. It also seems like a lot of people can fit in. And the best thing is that it is just by the beach.

The caretaker welcomed us in and I decided to help Pranpriya with her luggages.

"I'll carry that" Jungkook said taking Pranpriya's luggages away effortlessly from me.

I was about to take it back when Jennie pulled me back to the van.

"Taehyung, can you help me with mine?" she asked and I looked at her. Weirder out by her sudden change of mood towards me.

Jennie has been suspicious the past days and I guess it's either because of Jungkook or she suddenly want to chase me again like back then. But I highly doubt the later because what she felt for me then was only some sort of a puppy love. She just got confused about her feelings when we were younger because I treated her really nicely compared to Jimin.

I treated her like a sister.

But I have no feelings for her. As I said back then and up to now. I only treat her as a sister nothing more.

I walked to Jennie and carried her bags. Among the girls, she's the one who brought a lot. Knowing Jennie's love for fashion, I bet she brought different shoes to match her clothes. That's one of the reason why I don't like her that much. She's too classy. Somewhat opposite from Pranpriya. But both are really kind. Jennie has a strong and outspoken personality which I admire but I also love Pranpriya's soft and innocent one.

"Thank you!" she said in a shy way.

I didn't answer her more. I just walked straight to the big house and admired its elegant interior.

We all sat on the big sofa in the living room. The living room has

3 mini sofas and one big that 4 people can sit. All are facing each as if someone would have a meeting. Chae sat beside her brother Jimin, my sister sat beside dr. Jin, and when Pranpriya was about to sit beside me in one of the mini sofa, Jennie quickly moved to me and blocked her.

Lalisa was dumbfounded by her action but she just chose to be quiet. Now she has no where else to sit but beside Jungkook in the big couch.

Jennie is really doing everything for her brother I can tell.

"Jennie, You're making her uncomfortable." I whispered pertaining to Pranpriya.

"Sorry what?" she asked innocently as if she did nothing wrong.

The caretaker is now explaining the house facility controller.

"Nevermind" I answered.

I looked at Pranpriya who is now sitting stiffly beside Jungkook. She's giving me nervous glances and I totally understand why. She must be thinking that I'm mad but I'm clearly not.

Of course, jealousy is here in me but I can't get mad at her. They are supposed to be together now but still I'm just enjoying the time being that she believes that she loves me.

I know what I'm doing is wrong but I'm so sure Pranpriya will be getting her memories back any time sooner. And with that, I will stay like this. Loving her and believing that she loves me too. Though I know it will always be Jungkook who will win her heart in the end.

The caretaker explained that the house has 7 rooms in total. Meaning we can have one room for each but 2 of us must share because we are eight.

"How about Jungkook and Lalisa share one room?" Jennie suggested and I stood from my seat to disagree.

"Are you crazy!" I almost yelled.

Pranpriya stood too and looked at Jennie.

"I'm sorry but I can't share with Jungkook" Pranpriya said and I saw the disappointed look on Jungkook's face.

"Then who must share then?" Jennie asked crossing her arms on her chest.

I opened my mouth to say that I'll share it with Pranpriya. Knowing myself, I will never disrespect her being a woman. I can sleep on the floor and she can have the bed.

"I'll share with Jin" My sister beat me to it and I looked at her in disbelief.

"How can you even stay in one room with a guy without getting married first!" I asked my sister. I know they are already in a serious relationship but I don't like girls having pre-marital sex.

With their long distance relationship, I'm sure they'll jump into it the moment they get alone in one room.

"Tae, we're old enough already. It's normal for couples like us to share the same bed." Jisoo explained calmly which pissed me more.

I don't know but this whole set is giving me a headache.

"No! You can just share with Chae or Jennie. Not to a guy. No offense Dr.Jin" I said and he waved his hand signalling that it's okay.

They all got quiet because they know I have a point.

"Geez! Okay fine I'll just share with Chae. Is it okay?" she asked and Chae nodded.

Thank God!

I looked at Pranpriya and was surprised she was looking at me with a guilty expression.

I know what her looks mean and I can tell she has something to tell me. And I know it's about Jungkook. There must have something happened between them last night. I can tell by the way she avoids Jungkook. Jungkook on the other hand seems to want to get closer to her, as usual.

I'm getting in the way but like I said, I can be a little selfish sometimes. Having her say she loves me even though it's just for temporary makes me really happy.

A moment later, we all started picking our room. And then we meet again in the living room for discussing our plan for the following 5 days vacation.

We've been missing out school for more than a week now but the Queen made sure that we can keep up with the lessons. She owns the universities which was funny because Jungkook has been stressed the whole time with Tzuyu when she planned to get Pranpriya kicked out. If he only knew that Pranpriya owns the universities back then, he could've stopped Tzuyu's craziness immediately.

"How about we go to a club this night?" Jimin suggested and Pranpriya clapped her hands excitedly.

"I want to go! I've never been in a night club!" she announced happily.

"Yes you've been. We met in the club Lalisa, we even danced together." he said and I looked at him. Right, he met her at the club back then. That's when Jimin fell for her. Now I regret that I didn't came with Jimin that night. I should have seen her and recognized that she was my Princess earlier than I've known.

"We did?" she tilted her head as if recalling if she really met Jimin there.

"Yes! You were a very good dancer. That was a fun night." Jimin

smiled at her and Jungkook cleared his throat.

"Are we going to plan our stay here or we will keep on talking about the past? Because I have a lot to tell too!" Jungkook said clenching his jaw and Jimin chuckled.

"Sorry, so what? Are we going to go to the club?" Jimin asked again.

"We can go later maybe" I agreed because Pranpriya seems to like the idea of it.

"For now, let's eat first. Mario prepared lunch for us." Chaeyoung excitedly said.

"How did you know he prepared something for us?" Jimin asked suspiciously.

"Because the caretaker said so duh" she answered.

And we all laughed at Jimin. Such an overprotective brother he is even though they are really not blood related. Well Chaeyoung is just adopted by the Park Family.

After planning our stay, we all decided to eat and to rest for a while because we were all tired from the trip.

Then I heard a knock on the door.

I open it expecting it to be Pranpriya but it was Jennie instead.

"Hey" she said the moment I opened the door.

"Hey" I answered back. I don't know if it's just me or it has become awkward for the both of us to be around lately. Maybe because I know she has plans on breaking Pranpriya and me apart because of her brother but I totally understand it. Just like how my sister Jisoo supports me, Jennie would do anything too for her brother.

"Can I come in?" she asked fidgeting her fingers. Nervous if I will let her in. Whatever it is that Jennie wants, I know It's about Pranpriya.

"Sure. Come on in" I answered and I let her in first.

She looked around the spacious room and decided to sit on the small couch near the bed.

"What is it?" I asked while standing. Just looking at her.

"I need to ask you something" she said.

"What is it?"

"Please sit down first." she patted the space next to her. I sighed and walked to her side to sit.

"This is about Pranpriya right?"

"Yes." she said turning her body slightly to me to face me. "I want you to move on from her starting today" she said and I looked at her with pure disbelief.

"Excuse me? Move on from her you say?" I asked raising a brow.

"Yes, we both know that she loves my brother and what she has

for you is just temporary. Move on now so you won't get hurt the moment she gains her memory back" Jennie explained in a soft and gentle manner.

"I know." I answered.

"You know? Then why are you still acting around her? When you could just say that she's with Jungkook and she just forgot about him." Jennie asked in panic.

"I want to tell her that but I just want to feel being loved by her even if it's just temporary." I answered truthfully and her gaze turned into a sad one.

"Why do you want her to love you so bad? She's not the only one who can love you!" she asked and I looked down. I know exactly where this is going because of Jennie's past feelings for me.

"I want her because I love her"

"But she loves my brother!"

"I know."

"Then why do you keep on pushing yourself to her? Why not just love someone who loves you back?"

"Loves me back? Jennie are you referring to yourself?" I asked chuckling and she reddened in embarrassment.

She didn't answer but just looked down.

I could still remember when she asked me to be her boyfriend back in highschool. She confessed her feelings for me and I was aware of it even before she confessed.

But I already have Pranpriya in my heart. And in my case, I've always remained faithful to her.

If I just didn't met Pranpriya first, maybe Jennie and I are together now. But I can't lie to my heart and force it to be with Jennie when It is already owned by someone else.

"Jennie, what you feel for me is just a childish attraction. You were so young then."

"How does it differ to your feelings with her? You met her when you were younger. The thing you have for her is more of a childish feeling than mine." she stood proving her point.

I got quiet and looked down. It's really awkward to have someone especially a girl push herself to you.

"Taehyung, I have loved you ever since. When will you even look at me just like how you look at her?" sadness filled Jennie's voice and I hated it. I don't like breaking girl's hearts. She's not the only person who confessed to me. In fact there are actually tons of girls who did back then but I can't take advantage of their feelings just like how Jungkook does to the girls who confessed to him.

"I don't know Jennie. I can't return your feelings yet." I answered shaking my head.

"Yet?" she asked with a hopeful voice and I panicked. Why did I say that?

"I mean I can't....ughh! Why are you making this hard for me?" I asked out of frustration.

"You're the one who's making this hard for yourself! You are forcing yourself with someone who loves someone else." she shouted.

"You're not better than me." I snapped back.

We both glared at each other but later on she smiled at me. I don't know what happened and how it happened but we both started laughing.

"Why are we laughing?" she asked holding her tummy while still laughing.

"I don't know. Maybe because we are both crazy?" I answered laughing too.

Living someone makes you go crazy and stupid most of the time.

"Seriously Taehyung, Just think about it." she said in a serious manner.

Sighing I opened my mouth to talk.

"Fine, I will wait for her memories to come back and if it happens, I will move on. I promise." I said and I mean it. I have always planned on moving on and letting go of Pranpriya as soon as she gets her memories back.

"Thank God! So what do you plan now? Will you finally tell her about her real relationship with my brother?" she asked.

"She needs to find out about it herself Jennie. That's what Dr.Jin told us." I answered and she hummed in response but I know she got disappointed.

"Well, I think I already said what I wanted to say. I'll get going. I need beauty rest for our clubbing later. Who knows I might find a hot guy there." she said chuckling and I frowned. I thought she wants me? Girls are really unpredictable.

"See you later." I waved when she was already out of the door.

"See you" she waved too showing her gummy smile.

She's right. I really need to start moving on. Maybe we can start as friends. That's how every relationships start right?



Author's Note

I really really apologize for the late update.



The Closure

Lalisa's POV

I walked back and forth inside my room contemplating on how to tell Jack about my real feelings.

Will he be mad at me if I tell him that I fell in love with Jungkook?

I hope not but I guess he will. I have been telling him the past few days that I love him but everytime Jungkook comes around, I can confirm that what I feel for him is nothing but a puppy love and that what I feel for Jungkook is somewhat deeper.

I don't even know how I fell for him. At first I thought it was just a physical attraction but later on I thought there was more to it. Just the sound of his voice makes me feel calm and at peace. Everything about Jungkook makes me feel complete. It's like he's my other half.

So now, as I realized that I cannot lie to my own self anymore. I decided to tell Jack about it. I walked to his room and knocked. When he opened, a smiled quickly crept into his lips but there's something wrong about him the way he smiled.

It looks forced and not genuine.

"Are you alright?" I asked in worry as I step inside his room. He led me to sit to the couch near the bed and he sat beside me.

"I'm fine. I'm just tired from the travel but don't worry. This will pass quickly." he answered.

"Oh.. Okay" This is a bad timing. How can I tell him that I love someone else when he's not feeling well?

"Do you have something to say?" he asked.

"Nothing. Maybe next time." I answered shortly.

"Don't hesitate to tell me if you have something important to say. You know I always listen right?" Jack reached for my hand to squeeze.

"I will" I answered. I want to be honest right now and tell him that I love Jungkook but this is not the right time. "You want milk? I can get you a fresh milk." I offered to divert the topic and he smiled.

"I would love to" he gave me his boxy smile and I quickly left his room to go to the Kitchen.

I open the fridge and took the box of fresh milk there and a glass

but when I turned, Jungkook was already behind me watching me.

"Oh" is all that I managed to say. After our heated kiss from last night, it became awkward between us. I tried to avoid him the entire trip to Jeju. I don't want him to know about how I feel for him yet because I have Jack and it's very wrong to confess to Jungkook when he knows I'm still with Jack. I don't even know if he feels the same way as me.

Besides, plan to tell Jack first about how I feel before I tell Jungkook.

"You're drinking that?" he asked cheerfully pointing at the fresh milk I'm holding.

"No this is for Jack." I answered biting my lip and his expression turned into a disappointed one. Now I feel guilty for telling him that.

"Oh" he muttered.

I bowed and walked past him. Ignoring his watchful eye on my back.

When I came back to Jack, he quickly drank the milk. And placed the glass and the box of milk at the table to face me.

"Are you going to the club with us later? You can stay here if you're still not feeling well." I said in worry.

"I will go with you later. What if hot guys started flirting with you" he frowned and I got confused.

Jack is not usually the jealous type. But right now I can't believe he seemed to not like the idea of guys being around us.

"I don't flirt." I answered back. I don't even know how flirting happens.

Wait. Is Jungkook kissing me considered as flirting? Maybe yes. Maybe not. But I think it's more of cheating.

I mentally shook my head at the thought. I can't bear to think that I'm actually cheating on Jack. It's very wrong of me. But I love Jungkook. And I can't lie to myself anymore and keep telling me that I don't love him. I should tell him immediately about it.

"There's something bothering you. I can tell. What is it Pranpriya?" he asked in a deep and serious voice. And I decided to not prolong my guilt anymore.

"I'm so sorry Jack" my tears threatened to fall at the thought of hurting him. He doesn't deserve this. He's a very kind person and I just cheated.

"Don't cry." He said wiping my tear which just fell from my eye.

"I...I..." I couldn't even finish my sentence. I just shut my eyes close and cried more.

"You realize that you love Jungkook?" he guessed in a soft and comforting voice and I opened my eyes in shock to look at him.

How can he know exactly how I feel?

"How did you?" I asked. My expression is pure of shock telling him that he guessed it right.

"I didn't have big eyes to not see things clearly. I can see it by the way you move and act around him and if you're worried about how I feel with this, don't worry about me. I just want your happiness." he explained smiling but I can clearly read the hurt expression in his eyes.

He blinked his tears away and I quickly embraced him.

"I'm so sorry" I said and let him sob in my neck. My neck got wet from his crying but I just let him be. I rubbed his back to comfort him but I know no touch can mend the pain he is feeling right now.

"Let me say this again for the last time. I love you so much Pranpriya. I love you so much to let you go and be happy." he said on my neck. His arms are tightly wrapped around me and if someone would just see us right now, they would probably think that we are making out.

"I want you to be happy too. You are a very great man. It will not be hard to look for someone who will love you the way you should be loved. Someone would treat you better the way you deserve to be treated." I said rubbing his back more.

"Thank you. You will always be my first love." he said.

"You are mine too" I answered back. I really wish him to be happy too.

But as of this moment I don't know what lies ahead. I don't what will happen to Jungkook and I. I don't even know if I can be with him. I don't know how he feels but I'm sure hoping we can be together.

Maybe I can tell him how I feel and hope that he tells me the same.

Yeah. That's right. I will tell Jungkook about it this very day.

My phone started ringing startling both Jack and me and because of it, I tried to reach for my phone in my back pocket but I ended falling out of balance with Jack.

I blushed the moment I realized the position we were in.

Because right now, I am on top of him, my lips were pressed on him. His arms are still wrapped around me. While my legs straddle his waist.

Shit!

I quickly stood looking away. And took my phone. I turned it off when I realized It was just an alarm I set for me to be reminded of taking my medicine.

"Uhm..." I started. That was so embarrassing. Now that we had our closure. It is really awkward to be kissing Jack like that. Even if

it was just an accident.

"Sorry" he said. Scratching his head while looking away.

"It's okay." I answered back. "I think I should go now" I bid him goodbye and quickly left his room.

After an hour of staying in my room. I finally got the courage to face Jungkook and tell him how I feel. So I walked out of my room and looked for him.

And there I saw him, ever so gorgeous walking to me. A smile crept to my lips at the thought that he wants to talk to me too.

I smiled when we finally closed the distance. But I got confused when I noticed he was not looking at me. Instead he just walked past me like he didn't saw me.

I swear he has this blank expression which worried me more.

I stopped on my track and looked at his retreating back.

What's his problem?

Now, I lost the courage to talk to him.

Maybe he doesn't feel the way that I feel. Yeah he just probably kissed me without feeling the same.



Author's Note

What happened to Jungkook?

I'm sorry for being late again.

The Misunderstanding

Jungkook's POV

When I got downstairs, I walked to the kitchen to grab something to drink, but I was surprised to see my Lalisa there.

And just by looking at her sexy back right now, I had the urge to hug her from behind and kiss her neck to tickle her. But I won't do that because I know she'll hate it if I do. After our heated kiss last night, she avoided me the entire trip going here in Jeju.

I can't read her mind and I don't know how she feels right now. It's as if she wants me physically but not emotionally. I can tell by the way she clinged to Taehyung the whole time we got here.

But that will not stop me from making her fall for me again. If she will not remember our memories here, I can at least make her fall for me and win her heart back.

Come to think of it. How did she even fell for me back then? The first time I hear her say she loves me was the time she got drunk with Jennie. And I never asked her when and how she fell for me. But I believe that was still the time when she was pretending as a boy.

Now I'm thinking of how can I make her fall for me again? Should I be aggressive and just fuck her for her to remember the pleasure I always give her or should I take it slow and court her like the traditional way?

Lalisa turned to me surprised seeing me behind her. She was holding a box of fresh milk and a glass. And even with a shoxked expression, she still looks beautiful as always.

"You're drinking that?" I asked pointing at the fresh milk she's holding.

"No this is for Jack." she answered and I got disappointed.

"Oh" I muttered thinking that she's really taking good care of another man when I am her husband. She should be taking care of me not Taehyung!

Instead of talking to me, she just bowed and walked past me. Ignoring my hurt expression.

So she just let me kiss her last night without even feeling something for me? I can tell she still wants to be with him than me. I'm really disappointed because I thought she's finally opening up to me but I ended back to zero.

I weakly walked to the living room and saw Jennie there watching TV. Chaeyoung and Jimin are there too but they are arguing about something. I can hear them argue about Mario but I have no energy to think about my friends' problems right now. I have a whole lot list of problems to myself and Jimin's disapproval of Mario and her sister's slight flirting must not add to that list.

Yes, after having Mario meet our sisters personally back in Thailand, he began texting and calling Chaeyoung. Which is actually an advanyage to me because I got one less competition to Lalisa but Jimin has been fuzzing about it the whole time saying that he doesn't like the guy for Chae and she should just look for someone else.

I don't get Jimin though. It's like he's jealous of the attention Chae is giving the Prime Minister but that's weird because they are siblings. Just thinking of the slight possiblity that Jimin likes her sister makes me cringe. I shook my head at the tought of incest. Even if they're really not blood related, it's still fucking weird. As weird as Jaime and Cersei Lannisters' relationship.

I sighed and just walked to sit beside my sister who is now with a cheerful mood.

"What's with that face?" she asked me the moment I sat beside her.

"What? How do I look?" I asked not caring if I look shit right now.

"You look defeated. We just even got here and you're like that already? What happened to the "I- will-make-her-fall-for-me plan?" she mocked and I rolled my eyes.

"She still loves Taehyung! I don't fucking no what to do!"

"No she's not! Can't you see how she looks at him? It's not even close to how she looks at you!"

"I don't know." I sighed weakly.

"Just go and make a move on her already. You just have five days to do that!" she pushed me hard, enough to make me stand.

"Fine." I breathed deeply and gathered all the courage in me to face her.

I walk upstairs and walk directly to her room. But I got no answer when I knocked on it. So I just entered her room thinking she's just sleeping or what. But she was not there.

Where could she be?

I thought for awhile and remembered the milk she took for Taehyung.

She must be in his room.

I shrugged the jealousy inside me and walked to his room instead.

I don't care if I see them talking in his room right now. I want to talk to her even if I have to pass through Taehyung first. She's mine

in the first place.

When I was already in front of Taehyung's door, I slowly opened the door expecting them to be talking in silence. But I got surprised the moment I saw what they are doing.

Because right now, Lalisa is on top of Taehyung kissing him while straddling his waist. And fucking Taehyung's hands are wrapped around her body.

I stepped back and closed the door without them even noticing.

Fuck my life!!!

I shook my head for so many times to brush away the scene I just witnessed.

I just can't believe what I saw. Lalisa and Taehyung is making out on the floor and the fact that she's even on top of him hurts me more.

I can't believe there will come a day where I will see her do such thing with another man.

I'm so pissed right now that I wanted to walk to them and punch Taehyung in the face. Then drag my wife away and lock her in my room but I am too hurt to do that.

Instead, I walked to my room and locked myself in. Punched the wall repeatedly which hurts but it's nothing compared to the pain I feel inside my chest.

My wife just cheated on me with my fucking bestfriend and I just let her be.

I don't know what to do with her anymore! I need to make her realize that what she did was very wrong and that she hurt me so much.

If I could only make her realize how hurt I am too, I will.

After an hour of ruining, throwing and punching every furniture inside Mario's guests room, I decided to go out and take a small walk away from this house. I need to clear my head right now because if not, I might end up killing Taehyung.

When I got out, I saw Lalisa walking to my direction too. She was looking at me but I didn't look at her. I tried to avoid making eye contact because I know myself. Just one *hi* from her, I will end up embracing her and kissing her for sure. And I don't plan to do that. I need to make her feel that she's hurting me with all this Taehyung shit.

So instead of stopping in front of her, I walked past her and didn't say a word.



Author's Note

Now you know what happened lol

The Broken Hearted Cupid

Lalisa's POV

"Oh my God! You are so pretty!" Jennie squeaked when she came inside my room.

"You are even prettier!" I replied truthfully. Jennie is really gorgeous this night wearing a black mini dress exposing her beautiful legs.

We are about to go to the club and I just finished preparing. Both Chaeyoung and Jisoo entered my room and squeaked like Jennie as well.

"Lalisa you are so beautiful!" Jisoo covered her mouth. And I laughed at her exaggerated expression.

"She is!" Chaeyoung said too. Now I'm blushing with all these compliments which I don't even deserve because I'm not as pretty as them. Jisoo looks like a goddess with her red dress while Chaeyoung's green dress and its pink belt emphasized how small her waist is. I on the other hand is wearing a yellow sparkly dress.

We took selfies first before going out to meet the rest of our friends. Chaeyoung intertwined her fingers with mine and we excitedly walked down the stairs and Jennie and Jisoo walked hand in hand too.

I was a bit tensed anticipating Jungkook's reaction on how I look. It's kinda weird but I really want Jungkook to compliment me too. I had a hard time picking what to wear because I have him on my mind the whole time I was deciding.

I really dressed up for him and now I wonder if he'll tell me that I'm pretty too? I do hope so. So, I inhaled and walked down to see the boys smiling ear to ear. I saw Jack, Jimin and Dr. Jin waiting for us but my brows automatically furrowed when I didn't see a glimpse of Jungkook with them.

Jack must have noticed the change of my expression that's why he cleared his throat and spoke.

"Jungkook said he will go ahead at the club." he answered the question in my mind with his hoarse voice.

"Okay" I answered back without asking more. Even though I wanted to ask why he left a little earlier when he can just wait with the rest of the boys. But I stopped myself from asking because I don't want him to think that I'm looking for Jungkook.

On the other hand, looking at the boys right now, I didn't stop myself from admiring their visuals too. All three guys looks so breathtaking as always wearing their party clothes. But Jack's droopy eyes worried me. He seemed to be sick or what.

"Are you sure you're coming with us?" I asked him. He shouldn't force himself to come if he's not feeling well.

"Yeah! Are you sure you're coming? We girls can manage." Jennie said and Jack looked at her with a pissed expression.

"So that you girls can flirt with hot guys?" He rolled his eyes and I was taken aback with his accusation. He's been saying that the whole day that we will meet hot guys there. I wonder what led him to think so?

Jennie rolled her eyes and didn't speak more.

Okay! So there's something really weird going on between these two. But I can't help but smile at the possibility of them being together.

I mean why not? They both are single and both are good looking. Jennie is very kind and I believe she can take good care of him. Jack deserves the best girl and Jennie is that. My friends are the best.

While Jisoo and Dr. Jin are talking lovingly as if they are in a different dimension, Jimin and Chaeyoung are ignoring each other and I wonder why. So the whole trip to the club, Jimin just sat next to Jack and I took the seat between Jennie and Chae. Dr. Jin on the other hand drove while Jisoo was beside him.

I tucked my hair and uninkled my skirt the moment we got out of the car which Mario owns. He has a lot of cars in his rest house and he told us that we can use anything there so Dr. Jin offered to use one and drive us to that famous club.

Come to think of it. Does Jungkook brought a car with him going here or he just ride a taxi? I hope he brought one. Riding a taxi is a bit inconvenient even if the rest house is just nearby.

I became concious of how I look all of a sudden. Jungkook is inside the bar and It makes my heart thump crazily.

We all walked inside the club as wild and loud music played deafening my ears. My eyes then automatically locked at the dance floor where a lot of people are dancing.

Oh how I love dancing!

Coming to a club for the first time is so exciting and I really want to dance right now. My feet started walking to the dance floor but Chae pulled to one corner to settle on the VIP area where Jimin had us reserved through the phone. He said he knows the owner of the club and they are very good friends.

"I know you want to dance already but we need to have a drink

first" Chae chuckled.

She really knows I love dancing. The boys took our drinks and we patiently waited for them. I looked around the club and suddenly I felt as if someone is watching me.

So I looked around and look for those pair of eyes. And there I saw him standing next to the bar, the man who has occupied my mind for days now.

Jungkook.

I caught him staring at me but when our eyes met, he started looking at me indifferently as if he doesn't know me. He turned his attention to the drink in front of him and I was left staring at him.

What's his problem?

This is not how he usually looks at me. Is he mad? But I believe I didn't do anything wrong. I was even ready to confess to him. I was ready to tell him how I feel but I just chickened out when he ignored me a while ago at the rest house

Jimin, Jack and Dr. Jin came back with our drinks and even if I don't want to drink, I would just to forget the way Jungkook treats me coldly for the past few hours.

Dr. Jin sat beside Jisoo, Jimin next to Chaeyoung and Jack sat in between Jennie and I. He offered both of us a drink and I quickly took one shot which startled them.

"What the fuck was that?" Jennie's eyes widened at what I did but I shrugged as if it's just nothing. Hiding the fact that the shot burnt my throat.

"That one hurt. I'll go get you a water." Jack stood and walked away. I don't know why I suddenly feel guilty because I saw a hint of jealousy in Jennie's eyes.

I think Jennie likes him. But how can I just noticed it now? I should've known it when they came in Thailand.

Now I want to play cupid between them. It would be a good idea if I can make them end up together right?

Surprisingly, I don't feel any jealousy in my heart at the idea of Jack being in a relationship with another woman. And that made realize more that I really don't love him just like how I thought.

But if it's Jungkook with another girl, I would probably kill him. And that is funny because he's not even my boyfriend and I have no right to stop him from being with somebody else. But still, It would hurt because I love him.

Jack came back with a water and offered it to me. When I grabbed the glass of water, I noticed how hot his hands feel when our skin brushed.

"Jack, you are burning!" I said in worry while I reach my hand to press on his forehead.

Our friends turned their attention on him especially Jennie. And by the way she scolded Jack, I was able to confirm that she really has something for him.

"I'm fine guys!" he answered weakly when the group plead him to go back home. And knowing Jack, I'm sure he will not go home unless I tell him so.

So I planned something on my mind to help Jack and Jennie be closer.

"Jack, Let's go home." I said and he looked at me worriedly.

"What? I told you I'm okay. You don't need to go home with me." he said.

"No, it's not just that. I really want to go home now. I think I'm drunk." I lied and he slowly nodded his head half believing me.

So we bid our friends goodbye and had to ignore Jennie's sad and jealous expression. If she only knew what I have on my mind she will be grateful for sure.

This is for her.

I looked at Jungkook which is still at the bar. His back is on me and I can't see his face but I decided to just talk to him later and ask him if he has a problem with me.

I need to clear things between us because I really want to tell him already how I feel.

I led Jack out of the club and hailed a cab, when he was finally inside, I guiltily looked at Jack not entering the car and he smiled.

"I know what you are planning. You're not coming with me are you?" he gave me a teasing smile and I responded with a small nod.

Jack can easily read me as 1 2 3. That's his super power. Reading my mind accurately.

"Go on. I will wait here" he said and I turned to go back to the club.

I spotted Jennie who is now at the door and called her.

"Jennie!" I called.

"What is it? Why are you back? Where is Taehyung?" she asked confusedly.

"He is at the cab. I decided to stay. Can you at least go with him? I mean if that is just fine with you. He is not feeling well and I--"

"I would love too." she winked and I hugged her tightly.

"Please take care of him" I whispered in between our hug.

"I will." she said confidently and with that she walked out and I just watch her retreating back.

I smiled just thinking what will happen to them this night. I want Jack to feel better. Though I want to take care of him, I believe I'm not the right person to that.

Because right now, there is only one person that I wanted to take

care of and that is no other than Jungkook.

I breathed deeply and walked back to the VIP area where my friends are seated but when I got back, they were all shocked to see me back. As if they've seen a ghost.

"What's the problem?" I asked.

Nobody answered but Jimin slowly moved his eyes from me to my back and following his gaze was the biggest mistake I ever made.

Because when I looked at my back, I saw Jungkook on the same spot, talking flirtily with a very beautiful girl who is wearing just a small piece of clothing.

It didn't escaped my eye how Jungkook's hands travelled to tuck a lock of hair behind her ear. Then he lean in to whisper something on her and the girl chuckled seductively in return.

That was the moment I wished I just went home with Taehyung and Jennie.

I blinked my tears away when hurt and jealousy washed all over me.

Forget this shitty feelings.



Author's Note

Yeah! I'm gonna piss my readers a little because I'm evil 🖐️



The Dumb Couple

This chapter is dedicated to YGisAbossBitch for making me laugh at her passage comments. 🤔

Lalisa's POV

I can't stand it anymore! I swear I'm gonna go and kill someone if Jungkook don't stop with what he's doing right now.

Chaeyoung and Jisoo has been talking to me to get my head out of the scene in front of me where Jungkook is fliriting with a girl who is 10 times hotter than me.

At first they tried to ask me to go home but I can't. I'm too hurt to just walk away. At this point, I want to talk to him and ask him if we have a problem.

I know, I know he would laugh at my face if I do that. We're not even together. But still, I don't want him near that girl.

"Lalisa, let's go home. You're probably tired now" Jimin suggested but I shook my head and gave him a bitter smile.

"I don't want to go home yet. I haven't even danced." I said and he looked at me with pity.

"Do you want to dance with me?" he offered but I shook my head.

"Maybe later. I need to talk to Jungkook first." I said and with a heavy feet, I walked to him.

I don't know how I managed to be bold like this. But seeing Jungkook with another girl motivated me to talk to him.

"Jungkook!" I called his name when I was in front of him but his eyes were locked with the girl. Their eyes are making out and it's disgusting.

The girl turned to me with an annoyed face and looked at me from head to toe. As if I'm the most unbelievable person she has seen.

"Do you know this girl?" she asked him and finally Jungkook looked at me but with the same cold eyes.

"Yes" he answered and I fidgeted my fingers because of the nervousness I feel. I don't know how he would introduce me to her.

"She is Lalisa my bestfriends' girlfriend" he said and he clenched his jaw. By the way he said it, I can feel he really hates me.

"Oh. I thought she wants to flirt with you too. Good thing he has a boyfriend." she chuckled and I had to stop myself from punching both of them in the face.

"Yes. She has a boyfriend. In fact she loves him very much. Right Lalisa?" he asked in a mocking tone and I opened my mouth to explain that Taehyung and I are over but what's the point of telling Jungkook when he doesn't even care about how I feel. He just kept his hands on her waist and I pathetically looked at them wishing I'm that girl he is holding now.

The music started playing a lively beat.

"My favorite music! Let's dance!" The girl pulled Jungkook excitedly and he followed suit without even saying a word to me.

I just stood there dumbfounded and watched when they started dancing. I couldn't take my eyes away from him because I just notice how good a dancer Jungkook is. But sadly, he was dancing with another girl.

I would probably be 100% jealous by now but the girl he is dancing with is doing a sexy dance with a hiphop song and that's enough reason for me to laugh.

She's dancing weirdly and I can tell Jungkook's just probably holding himself from laughing too.

"Oh shit!" a fine looking guy bumped into me causing me to fall out of balance but luckily, he was able to hold me strongly before I fall.

"I'm so sorry! I didn't mean to bump on you" he apologized and bowed but I waved my hand while shaking my head.

"No, It's okay. I'm not hurt don't worry" I answered.

"Are you alone? What's your name?" he asked boldly and I had to think for a while if I will answer him or no.

"I'm Dylan by the way. This is my club. I hope you're enjoying your time here." he said and I was shocked. He seemed to young to own a club like this. He's just probably as young as me.

"I am. This is an awesome club. Uhm.. My name is Lalisa" I answered awkwardly.

"Nice to meet you Lisa" he smiled and he took my hand to kiss.

I pulled my hand quickly because of what he did and look over Jungkook's direction if he saw that. But good thing, his eyes are still focused on the girl.

"I need to go back to my friends" I said when I started feeling awkward by the way Dylan looked at me.

"I will walk you there." he smiled confidently and I admit. He is good looking. But I don't like his personality. He seemed to be bold, aggressive, strong and confident.

"Dylan?" Jimin's eyes widened when he saw us.

"Jimin?" he looked closer. "Oh my God! It's been a long time. I'm so glad you're here." Dylan answered.

"Lalisa? Why are you with him?" Jimin turned his attention on me

and I answered him to clear things out.

"We just bumped to each other. Are you two together?" Dylan asked.

"Yes we are together coming here in this club. We are with our friends" Jimin answered hesitantly.

"Oh I see. So Lalisa right? Will you please dance with me?" I panicked and search for words to say no in a polite manner, but when I glanced at Jungkook, he was already dancing too close with the girl while looking at me. Too close that her boobs are brushing his chest.

The scene made me so pissed because of how the girl grind her hips to him while Jungkook clearly enjoys how she brushes her hips to his thighs.

I can't be anymore mad at Jungkook right now. I looked at Dylan and took his hand.

"I'd love to dance" I said then Jimin tried to stop me from dancing with him but too late. We already walked to the dance floor.

If you can dance like that with another girl, I can too.

Just watch me Jungkook!

Jungkook's POV

After ignoring Lalisa awhile ago, I decided to ignore her all throughout the day.

Well why not? She hurt me so much and I want her to know that. She made me jealous for days now and I don't even know if she and Taehyung fucked each other a while ago.

I don't think Taehyung would do that do but they were kissing and that's enough for me to be mad at her.

Later in the evening, our group prepared to go to the club which Jimin has been talking about. He says he knows the owner of the club that we are going to. Jimin is the member of our group who loves clubbing and that is because he is a really great dancer. Well I can dance too but Jimin loves dancing more than me.

And back then, both of us would usually go to clubs to hook up with some hot girls. Taehyung on the other hand does not like to come with us because he hates flirting so much. He said, meeting random girls and fucking them for just one night is what jerks do. But Jimin and I won't listen to him.

Those are just one night stands. Not a biggie. Besides, those girls loved what we do to them.

But that habbit stopped when I met Limario or should I say Lalisa. When I met her I kinda regretted doing those with the girls I barely know. Metting her made me change my mind from a lot of things. I wanted to be loyal because of her. I wanted to focus on her and give her everything that I can offer, I even forgot about my

dream on becoming the president, she made me become a cat lover and now her cats owns one room at the Blue Palace and I had to hire someone to take care of them while she still has amnesia.

Lalisa changed me so much. Love changed me so so much. But Love also hurt me so much and now I can't think clearly because of the jealousy I feel inside my heart.

I want to get back on her for what she did with Taehyung. I want to make her jealous too. So I planned on something that will make me see if she can get jealous because of me.

It will be easy. I'll just try to flirt with someone when we got there and let Lalisa see that. Let me see how she will react if I do that.

But I'm kinda nervous though. What if she don't react the way that I want her to be?

But there's no harm in trying right?

"I'll go ahead." I told the boys who were already in the living room waiting form the girls. It's been more than an hour now and they're not yet ready.

I wonder how my wife would look though. What's even taking her so long to prepare. Is she having a hard time picking what to wear? Maybe she's dressing for Taehyung? I know she is.

I had to clench my fist at the thought.

"Why are you going ahead?" Jimin asked and I looked away.

"Do you want me to drive you or are you driving one of Mario's cars?" Dr. Jin asked and I shook my head.

"No, I'll just take a taxi. It's just a short distance right." I answered. I'm not comfortable with driving someones else's car especially if it's from my rival.

Well, not anymore because Mario seemed to divert his attention to Chaeyoung.

I walked out of the rest house and travelled to the club. The club looks classy as if only rich people can get in. And you can tell that the people inside are only from a high class society. The security is a bit strict but they had to give me especial treatment because they know that I'm the president's son.

I took few drinks to lessen the boredom in me. Well if I just don't know Lalisa now, I would've probably hooked up with some of these girls right now. But I will never do that. After Tzuyu, there's no way in hell I would cheat on Lalisa.

I waited for my friends for at least 30 mins and finally I spotted the group walking to the VIP area. My eyes quickly scanned for my wife and when my eyes found her, I forgot how to breath.

She looks like a Goddess with her sparkly yellow dress. Her hair is curled into perfection and right now, she shines so bright.

She's just the best. The prettiest, the hottest girl in this club right now. I observed her and I found it amusing when her eyes locked with the dance floor. She loves dancing, she told me that a couple of times but I haven't seen her dance. And Jimin was so lucky to dance with her.

Chae pulled her when she started walking to the dance floor as if she was hypnotized by it. I had to stop my self from laughing with her cute actions.

I just observed her from a far waiting what she will do next because I don't plan on sitting with them. I have another plan right now and that is to make her jealous.

Her eyes scanned the whole area and suddenly it landed on mine.

Shit! She just witnessed how I drooled at her so I quickly put on my poker face as if I'm not interested in seeing her. There was a hint of shock in her eyes but it turned immediately to a confused ones when she saw my expression.

Oh God! I think It's working!

Her reaction satisfied me but then I saw Taehyung walk to sit beside her and offered her a drink.

I know Lalisa and I'm sure she doesn't like drinking. I have only witnessed her get drunk twice.

She will not take what Taehyung offered. But I frowned when she quickly took a shot and gulped it like water.

Taehyung worriedly left and when he got back he offered my baby a water.

Wow! He really is a gentleman. I kinda want to kick him right now for acting like a hero in front of my wife's eyes.

I don't know what happened because the group all started panicking when Lalisa pressed the back of his hand to Taehyung's forehead. Then moments later, I saw Lalisa left with Taehyung out of the club.

Fuck them!

Where are they even going? I had to compose myself because my plan backfired. Instead of getting her jealous, she made me jealous.

"Hi! You alone?" a beautiful woman walked next to me.

"Yes, you?" I asked back.

I know this is wrong. Talking to another girl like this but I want to divert my attention for a while because my wife just left me with another man.

"I'm alone too. It's kinda sad but luckily I spotted you here. You look hot by the way." she said then she licked her red lips.

"I can order you a drink if you want" I offered when I spotted Lalisa coming back without Taehyung.

This is show time.

"How can I repay you for the drink?" she asked while lowering her dress to give me a slight view of her chest. I bet she's not wearing any bra. I tucked a lock of hair behind her ear.

"Hmm.. How about just spend some time with me?" I leaned to whisper and she smelled like a drunk slut.

"I'd love that. You're too hot to refuse." she said.

And I took a glance at the bar's mirrored wall to see if Lalisa is looking at me. Then I confirmed that she was.

Is she finally jealous? I can't clearly see her expression because of the distance but I am very sure she is looking at us.

"You think I'm hot?" I flirted more with Lalisa on my head. Well I have no plans on touching this girl in front of me. I will puke if I do but I need to continue my acting. I want her to come to me and ask me to be with her.

Yeah! That's what I want from Lalisa.

"Yes you are so so hot. The girl I don't even know the name closed the distance more and I feel disgusted with it. I don't even know why. "You make my pussy wet. Do you want to see how wet I am down there? Lucky for you I'm not wearing any panty." she giggled slightly pulling her dress a little higher.

"No, not yet" I panicked.

I don't want Lalisa to think that I am looking at other girl's pussy.

There's no pussy that I want to touch, kiss and fuck other than my wife's." maybe a little later. Let's drink first" I said and she smiled widely.

We both started drinking and I had to look from time to time at Lalisa's direction though the mirror and she was still looking at me even though she's now talking to Jisoo and Chaeyoung. I wonder what they are talking about. What she's thinking but my sister is now MIA and I won't be able to ask her what Lalisa thinks this time.

"So tell me, what are your plans later?" the girl asked and I stopped drinking to think. I don't plan on doing something with her but if it was Lalisa to ask me that, I would answer her. "I will eat you down there and I would fuck you so hard you won't be able to walk for days" I answered imagining doing it with Lalisa.

"That would be hot. I want a good fuck right now. Shall we go to my place then?" she asked.

"And when I was about to refuse, I heard a voice call my name.

"Jungkook!"

I turned my attention to the owner of the voice and my breathing hitch just by how my name sounded with her voice. She looked at me with a sad and hurt expression and that's when I realized I finally made her jealous.

Very good Jungkook!



Author's Note

On a scale of 1-10, with 10 being the highest, how dumb is Lalisa and Jungkook?



I swear if they're not dumb, the book could've ended in chapter 110. But we need a little drama before the story ends. Right?

The Old Rival

Jungkook's POV

I blinked my eye upon seeing who Lalisa bumped into.

Is that Wang?

What the fuck? That's really him! I witnessed how my wife almost fell and how he apologized to her but Lalisa just let it go.

Knowing Wang, I'm sure he bumped on her on purpose. Yes, I know that guy. He has the reputation of being the playboy of the century. I know him too well for me to hate him. If Jimin and I were fuckboys then, we are nothing compared to him. Wang is the worst nightmare every girl could have.

I've known him because our parents are friends. Well, he is just the son of the Prime Minister of China and he is the male version of Tzuyu. Arrogant, Spoiled and Brat. That's how he is. He can get anything that he wants may it be an object or a girl.

We became school mates back then when he tried to study here in Korea. But I'm ahead of him for just a year because he is a year younger than me. Even if our parents were close we didn't become friends. He is good friends with Jimin though. And I know he hates me so much just like how I hate him. There has been a time where he got really addicted to competing with me.

It all started when she liked a girl when we were in highschool but the girl turned out choosing me. It hurted his ego so much that after that, he became obsessed with competition. We fought a lot, in sports, in academics, in getting girls and many more.

And to be honest, he has been the biggest rival my life has ever got. Wang is very competitive just like me that I lost to him countless times. He is smart, athletic, a good singer and dancer and we share the same traits.

To be honest, I'm kinda nervous to meet him again and now that he is talking with Lalisa, I fucking don't know what to do.

"Is something wrong?" the anonymous girl asked. She's still dancing weirdly which is a turn off.

"Nothing I said and pulled her waist more to mine when I saw Lalisa took Wang's hand.

Fucking fucker! Are they going to dance?

He guided my baby near to where we are dancing and I stiffened because of it.

Dylan placed his hands on her waist making my eyes open widely.

Lalisa turned her face at me and smiled so so sweetly as if challenging me.

The fuck?

I pulled the girl more to me and I swear I saw how she reddened in anger.

Good thing, Dylan took away his hands from her waist and they danced with a little gap.

"Where are you looking at?" the girl asked when she noticed my attention is somewhere else.

"Nothing" I replied shortly and I focused on her. I dance more and glanced at Lalisa. Who is now letting her all self in.

Damn! She's so cool. I didn't know she's this great of a dancer.

She kept on dancing with Wang and I couldn't look away. She looks so hot and she's sweating like fuck. I've never seen her go wild like this.

She suddenly looked at me and our eyes met, I saw the way she flicked her lashes in a seductive way which almost made me forget how to breath.

I swear I love her so much. But when the girl I'm dancing with saw that I'm looking at her, she decided to turn her back at me and grind her ass in my bulge. Lalisa saw it and her eyes widened. So I guiltily turn the girl to me to stop her with what she's doing. Too late, Lalisa looked too pissed now.

I think I have done enough. I need to stop. I already saw that she can be jealous seeing me with another girl and that is enough for me to say that she wants me.

"Let's take a rest" I breathed heavily. I'm getting tired with all these dancing. And I want to talk to Lalisa already.

"Sure. I need to go to the comfort room" she tiptoed to press her lips on me but I was able to dodge it by looking away.

The girl looked disappointed but she still managed to smile and walk to the CR.

I walked to where my friends are seated and they all looked at me with a disappointment.

"What the hell are you doing Jungkook?" Jisoo started when I sat next to her.

"What?" I asked innocently as if I did nothing wrong.

"You know what it is. You are definitely flirting with another girl with Lalisa around! How can you do this?" Jisoo continued and I rolled my eyes.

"I'm not the only one flirting! Look at her!" I pointed at Lalisa who is untiringly dancing with fucking Dylan.

Good thing she's dancing with him with a decent distance because if Dylan tries to get closer to her, I swear I will declare war against China.

"She's just dancing. She's not flirting. Look how far she's dancing with him" Chaeyoung said and I stared at them more.

That's true but still she's dancing with another man and the worse is that it's even Dylan. And if Dylan knows that Lalisa is mine, he will surely do anything to get her just to prove that he is better than me. I can't let him know about Lalisa and me. I have to stop myself from dragging Lalisa back to the rest house.

The girl I am with spotted me when she came out of the CR and walked to us to sit beside me.

Jimin raised his brow at me while Chae and Jisoo rolled their eyes at the girl, Dr. Jin on the other hand seemed to be uncomfortable with the sudden addition to the table.

"Uhm guys, she is.. What's your name by the way?" I had to ask because I don't know her.

"I'm Yeon Woo" she answered shyly.

"Nice to meet you Yeon Woo." Jimin said and turned his head one me. "Can I talk to you for a second?" Jimin asked and pulled me out of the club.

When we were finally out, he sighed and looked at me.

"What shit are you pulling Jungkook?" he raised his voice. I know where this is going. He will be scolding me because of what I did.

"It's not a big deal. I'm just trying to find out if I can make her jealous." I said and honestly, I regretted now doing it.

"And is it satisfying having her see you like that? What if she gains her memory back, you think Lalisa will still accept you if you flirt with another girl?"

"But she's doing it with Taehyung too. I caught them making out Jimin and it hurts. She needs to know she made a bad decision of cheating!"

"But Lalisa is suffering from memory loss Jk! You have no right to punish her when she's sick! I can't believe you are doing this! I thought you would do anything for you to be together but you're doing the opposite. You said you're her husband, and with that you should be there for her. You should understand her condition. Because we both know that if the tables were turned, and you got the amnesia, Lalisa would definitely stay loyal to you. She would understand you. But instead you choose to do this childish act!"

His words silenced me. I don't know I've been a jerk to Lalisa again. Jimin is right. What I'm doing is so childish.

I need to apologize to her the moment we get back home.

"What do I do now?" I asked in panic. I messed up big time again.

She probably hates me now. She probably thinks I'm a flirt, playboy or what. How can I make her fall for me now that she saw me with another girl?

Shit.

"I don't know Jk. You just had the biggest mistake of leaving her on her spot a while ago. Now Dylan met her he would--"

"Don't he dare mess with Lalisa! I don't care if he's your friend Jimin. You know me!" I clenched my fists so hard.

"You also know Dylan Jungkook. You lost to him countless of times. And if he knows that Lalisa is someone very dear to you, he will do everything to take her. Have you forgotten the time when he bought every girl who likes you with cars, jewelries and many more just so they would leave you." it also reminded me how rich he is. Dylan owns a lot of businesses at a very young age. Being the typical chinese. He is good in the business world.

"He can never bought Lalisa! She is a fucking Queen. No amount of money can buy her. She's mine Jimin. She loves me."

"But she's forgotten about you, and now she thinks you're a playboy because of what you did. And aside from that, Dylan is a threat. He knows exactly how to make a girl fall for him with his tricks. It will be more fun for him to take Lalisa if he knows that she is a princess." he warned and It is effective. Yeah I'm kinda scared of that possibilty where he can take my Laliasa. But of course I'm confident with my wife's love for me. If she could only gain her memory back, no one can stop us from loving each other and for being together.

"What should I do now?" I worriedly asked.

"Just pretend that you're not into her. At least for tonight. He will not be interested in her if you are not. Dylan is only interested with those that you are interested with. Right?"

'Okay fine. I can act as if I don't like her but if he flirts with her, I don't think I will be able to stop myslef Jimin. I've had enough of these boys Lalisa is collecting!"

"It's not her fault for being the hottest you know" he chuckled and I frowned. "Don't worry, just act like I said and everything is good. We both know that Dylan does not easily fall for girls. He changes girls more than he's changing clothes. He will not like Lalisa unless you tell him that you like her."

"I know. Come on let's go back and tell them we need to go home" I said.

We both walked back to the club and met the group. Surprisingly, Lalisa is already there sitting with them. She's no longer with Dylan. But she didn't looked at me when I sat next to Yeon Woo. I know she's pissed because she's avoiding making an

eye contact with me.

"What took you so long? I'm getting bored. Can we go to my place now? You said you would fuck me?" Yeon Woo blurted out enough for Lalisa to hear.

Fuck.

Lalisa looked at me with disgust when she heard it and she stood.

"Excuse me. I'll just go to the comfort room" she said so I panicked and stood to chase her and explain but fucking Dylan came into view with drinks.

"You're leaving?" he asked Lalisa but she shook her head.

"I'm just going to the CR." she replied.

"Well go with you!" Chae and Jisoo walked away with her.

Dylan kept his eyes on her when she walked away and when he faced us, he was surprised to see me.

"Oh look who we have here? Jeon Jungkook?. The president's son." he sniled evilly and sat across me. "So tell me, how's your father's candidacy going? I hope he wins this election despite the issue of you with Taiwan's Princess." he laughed. He seemed to have an obsession with my life's drama.

"Good to see you too Wang" I replied not meaning it.

"So you are with this girl?" he turned his attention on Yeon Woo and I had to look at Jimin.

Jimin gave me a small nod.

"Yes I'm with her" I said and placed my arm on her shoulder. hoping he takes the bait and try to swoon Yeon woo over. I know him so well. He is gonna do anything to have Yeon Woo leave me.

I smiled mentally at the thought. As if I would care if he takes Yeon Woo. He can have all the girls in the world, just not my Lalisa.

"Oh I see." he said massaging his chin as if considering something. "If this is just a normal day, I would probably take this girl away from you. But good for you Jeon I have my attention to another girl" he smiled amusingly.

"What do you mean? Who is it" I asked nervously. He's not referring to Lalisa right?

Instead of answering me, he just stood and patted my shoulder.

"Just enjoy your date. I'm not interested" he said and he walked away.



Author's Note

I'm starting to not like Liskook. Well, I have read comments on youtube with Armys bashing Lisa. Saying that she just wants to be shipped with Jungkook to be popular. And I was like 'Excuse Me???'

Lisa doesn't need any man to be famous! She can stand on her

own. She stands out because of her talent not because of some ships!

I'm not mad at Jungkook though. It just hurts to read someone say those words to my baby girl.

Sorry for blurting this out here. But I kinda lost the motivation to write more Liskook stories. 🙄🙄🙄

The Dream

Lalisa's POV

"Are you okay Lalisa?" Chaeyoung rubbed my back when I was washing my hands at the sink.

"I'm fine. Why are you asking me that?"

"Stop pretending that you're fine. We clearly see that you are hurt because of Jungkook!" Jisoo said while crossing her arms on her chest.

"How did you know?" I asked. Am I too obvious? What do they think of me now? They seemed to know I have a feelings for Jungkook even if I'm with Jack.

"It's very obvious. You love him. We know that Lalisa." Jisoo have me a worried look.

"Are you mad about Jack? I mean he's your brother and we're supposed to be together but I ended falling for Jungkook. I don't know how it happened. I'm so sorry Jisoo." I apologized to her.

"Why are you sorry? You shouldn't feel sorry Lalisa. It's your own heart that you must follow. We can't dictate our heart who to love and not to." she said in a gently voice.

"But I chose Jungkook and broke up with Taehyung. And now that I saw Jungkook with another girl, I kinda regretted choosing him." I blurted out even if I don't mean it. I didn't regret breaking up with Taehyung. We're not for each other because I don't love him. It is Jungkook that I love.

"Lalisa, Jungkook is just playing around. That girl is not someone you should be worry of. Jungkook loves you too. We are sure of that." Chae said and I laughed at her joke.

"Love? How can you say he loves me when he danced like that with that girl! And you heard the girl right? She said they will go to her place to fuck each other!" I didn't stop myself from crying now. I don't know why I'm so jealous when he is not my boyfriend but it hurts so much.

"Lalisa, don't ever think like that. Jungkook feels the same for you. Please listen to us! You're just making it hard for the both of you!" Jisoo grabbed my shoulder to shake.

"Then why is he ignoring me if he loves me? It's very clear. This is a one sided love. And I need to stop this feeling before I get hurt more. I will go back to Thailand tomorrow. You all can stay here in

Korea. There's no more point for me to stay here." I said and their eyes widened.

"What the hell are you talking about?" Jisoo almost yelled at my face.

"I said what I said. I will go back to Thailand tomorrow. I don't want to see Jungkook again. But you girls can visit me anytime you want. Jimin and Taehyung too. But I will not see Jungkook again!" I announced with finality.

"Lalisa, this is too much! You need to think first before deciding like that! What will happen to you now? I thought we came here to have fun and help you gain your memories back!"

"I don't need to remember anything. I can live with or without my memories. I need to focus on my country. I'm gonna be the Queen soon. Love is just a distraction."

"Lalisa! Please talk to Jungkook first. This is just a misunderstanding." Chae pleaded.

"I tried to tell him how I feel a while ago but he just ignored me. That's enough reason for me to stop my feelings for him. I'm sorry girls. But I will go ahead. I can't go home with Jungkook. I will just take a taxi." I said and quickly walked outside. I heard the girls voices called for me to stop but I didn't look back. I walked out of the club's exit to not see Jungkook who is at the VIP area near the main door.

When I was finally outside the club, someone called my name.

"Lalisa?" I looked at the owner and saw him running to chase me.

"Are you going home?" Dylan asked while catching his breath.

"I am." I replied shortly. I don't want to prolong our conversation because I think there's no point in getting close to another man right now.

"Where's your car?" he asked when I started walking to the side of the road.

"I don't have one. I'll just wait for a taxi."

"What? That's dangerous! Wait, let me drive you home"

"No please don't! I can manage." I said.

"No! I will take you home! You will stay here and wait for me!" he said with full authority silencing me. I wasn't able to stop him from running to the parking lot.

The next thing I knew, I was already inside his car. He insisted so much that's why I gave him our address and he started driving.

"Thanks for driving me, you didn't have to." I said not looking at him. My eyes were just focused on the road.

"Not a big deal. But if you don't mind, can I ask your real name?" he said glancing at me from time to time. I looked at him for a while and thought if he could be trusted. Dylan's personality is too

strong that it makes me not like him. But I have no reason to hate him now especially that I can see a gentleman side in him.

"My real name is Pranpriya Manobal. But my friends calls me Lalisa" I answered thruthfully. What's the point of hiding my real identity? It's not as if he's asking for my number right? He's just asking my name and besides I'm going back to Thailand tomorrow. I will not see him after tonight.

"Your name sounds familiar. I think I have heard it somewhere." he said. I didn't tell him that maybe he heard it because I'm a princess. "How about you?" I asked.

"Dylan Wang. I'm Chinese. You're not Korean right? " he asked excitedly.

"No, I'm Thai." I answered. I don't know why I'm answering his questions like this. Maybe because I'm too hurt from Jungkook that I need a distraction.

My mind travelled to Jungkook and thought what he is doing now. Is he still at the club with the girl or they went to the girl's place to do it? I heard it clearly that he said he would fuck her.

So disappointing.

"So you came to Jeju for a vacation?" He asked and good thing he did because I think I will start crying if I continue thinking about Jungkook and that girl.

"Yes, I came with my friends for a vacation. How about you? You live here?" I asked him.

I'm starting tonget curious about him. What is a chinese doing in Jeju?

"Nah, I don't live here. I live in China. I just came here to see how my businesses are doing. But I have a house here."

"Really? That must be cool to have a business at a young age."

"It is." he chuckled.

"You own clubs?" I asked.

"Yeah, I have 8 clubs here in Korea alone. And have more in China." he answered.

"Woah! That's cool!" I said.

"I have a lot of other businesses. I don't want to be a politician just like my father. I want to be a businessman because it is more stable." he continued.

"Your father is a politician?" I wonder if that's the reason why he's friends with Jimin?

"Yes, he is the Prime Minister of China." he said and I blinked my eye.

What the?

"Oh my God." Is all I have to say. Why am I suddenly meeting the sons of the leaders of different countries? Is it a destiny or what?

But it will be a good thing to be friends with them right? If I take over the crown, it will be an advantage to have a good relationship with other countries.

He started laughing at my reaction.

"Why are you laughing?" I asked.

"Nothing. You're just cute." he said. If not for Jungkook, I would probably blush by now. But no. I will never fall for any guys flirty remarks. It will just hurt me if I lose my guard down. Just like how Jungkook hurt me. He made me think that he likes me by kissing me and now he's with another girl.

"We're near." I said when I spotted the Rest house.

"Oh. That was fast. I wanted to talk to you more." he said with a sad voice when we finally parked outside the house.

"Why?" why does he want to talk to me more?

"It's kinda refreshing talking with you. I usually talk to girls but they all end up being a gold digger who just wants something from me. You seemed different though."

"That's bad for people to take advantage of you. You seem nice." I said.

"I know right. So, is it okay if we hang out more? I mean not now because it's late and you're probably sleepy. Tomorrow maybe?" he asked with a hopeful expression.

"Oh I would want to but I'm sorry I'm going back home to my country tomorrow." I said.

"Is that so? Where do you live then? Can I visit you?" he asked.

Should I tell him I live in the palace? "Uhm.. I'm sorry I cannot tell you." I looked down.

"Why? you have a boyfriend that's why you don't want to tell right?" he guessed with a sad voice but he's good at hiding it by smiling.

Jungkook's face appeared on my mind when he mentioned the word boyfriend but he is not my boyfriend. He just owns my heart. I don't want to give Dylan false hopes so I answered him. "Yes, I have."

"Is it Jungkook? Or Jimin?" he asked again and I wish it is Jungkook but that jerk is with another girl right now probably enjoying his night.

"No it is Jack. Kim Taehyung is his real name." I lied. Jack and I are over now but I can use his name to have Dylan stop from getting interested in me right?

"Wow." he managed to say.

"Why? You know him?" I asked.

"Yes. We were schoolmates then. I call him Mr. Perfect." he chuckled.

"Mr. Perfect?"

"Well, he is good looking, smart, treats girls right and too kind for this world. We are not friends but I like him. You picked the right man." he said and I nodded.

Jennie is so lucky.

Now I wonder what those two are doing now?

"So, I'll get going. Thank you so much Dylan!" I said.

"You're welcome. I hope to see you in the future." he waved.

I bid him goodbye and walked back to the rest house.

My friends are still not here but I just walked straight to my room. I locked the door and dialled Kunpimook to tell him to have our private jet ready for tomorrow.

I need to go back home and forget Jungkook.

But I called him a lot of times yet he is not picking up. I wonder why? I shrugged it off and just decided to call him tomorrow.

After freshening up, I lay down the bed and closed my eyes.

I woke up feeling someone kissing my back.

Who is this kissing me?

I realized I'm lying on my stomach and I can feel his lips tracing kisses on my spine.

It's still dark and the only source of light inside our room is from the moon's.

"Sorry for waking you baby" I could feel his warm breath on my nape when he moved my hair to the side.

I don't know how but I'm already naked. Maybe he managed to strip me off without me waking.

"What are you doing?" I asked the man when he slide his hand to cup my sex.

"I want you." he answered. I tried to sit but he just pushed me back to the bed. May back is still turned on him and he continued giving me small gently kisses.

My body is responding to him too. I can feel the thing between my thigh getting wetter as he suck my neck while pushing his finger inside me.

It feels so good. But who is this man? This is not Jack I'm sure.

I woke up moaning from the sensation.

A dream? I looked around and see that I'm alone in this dark

room.

I was just dreaming but it felt so real. As if I really did that before.

But why can't I recognize the man?

Who is he? Why did I dream something like that?

If I sleep again, will I dream of him again? Will I be able to see his face?

I slid my hand on underwear and realized I'm wet.

What's happening to me? This is weird.

I have a feeling that my dream is not something that mind produced. I think it's a memory from my past that I had forgotten. Maybe I had sex with someone already but I'm sure it's not with Jack.

So that makes me realize, I'm not a virgin anymore.

But who took it? How did I let someone take it when he is not Jack?

I closed my eyes again and hope the same dream to come over me. If I can't have my memories back, I'm sure I can get them by dreaming.



Author's Note

My dear readers who wants some Liskook moments, please be patient. We're going there lol

And btw, thank you so much for the comments about liskook yesterday. I badly need those. I appreciate your comments guys! I'm not leaving this story. Promise.

Fighting Liskook!



The Team's Work

Jungkook's POV

"Where is she?" I asked both Chae and Jisoo when they came back to our table without Lalisa.

"She went home." They answered in chorus.

"What? How? I didn't see her pass by?"

"Why are you asking about that girl?" Yeon Woo raised her brow.

"Because I need to talk to her." I answered truthfully. I can't keep the act anymore now that Lalisa and Dylan is nowhere around.

"Thought so. You just used me to make her jealous. But thanks for the drinks anyway. I gotta go." she said and took her purse to leave. I didn't stopped her though.

"Now what?" Jisoo raised her brow at me.

"Now what what?" I asked back. Jimin, Dr. Jin, Jisoo and Chae are giving me this disappointed look. I know what's next, I will be receiving a lot of scolding from them.

"Lalisa is really pissed because of you. Why do you have to do this?" Chaeyoung asked.

"Listen guys. I know I look like the bad guy/boyfriend here. But I need to see her reaction to this. How she will react if she sees me with another girl. And I swear to God I don't have a plan on cheating. You always know that I love her. But her condition worsened our relationship. She's forgotten about me and went to Taehyung. Can't you see that I'm hurt too? Everytime they would hold hands, everytime I hear her say that she loves him, and I even saw them kissing!" I blurted out and the girls were shocked with what I said.

"It hurts. It fucking hurts that I can't do anything about it. That I can't say that she's my wife because I can't force her to remember me. She doesn't love me anymore. But when I kissed her, I feel like she likes it too. That at some point maybe she wants me too. But with just a call from Taehyung she easily pushed me like a toy. She doesn't love me anymore. I'm sure of that. But with what happened now, I can feel that she doesn't want to see me with another girl. Call me selfish but I'm happy with her reaction. At least I know that I still have an effect on her. Even if she doesn't love me like how she love loves Taehyung, I can still see a hope on us."

"Hope on us you dumb! How can you say that when you pissed

her so much." Jisoo rolled her eyes.

"I know. I will explain everything to her tomorrow. I will tell her that I just did that on purpose." I will admit it because I don't want her to think that I'm really into other girls besides her.

"That is If you will still see her tomorrow." Chae said.

"What do you mean If I will still see her tomorrow?" I started feeling nervous with Chae's words.

"She will be going back to Thailand tomorrow. Thanks to you!" Jisoo said.

"What? But how about our trip? I still need to make her remember me. And what about Taehyung? And by the way where is my sister?" I asked question after question.

"My brother got sick, and Lalisa played cupid for him and Jennie that's why both of them went home." Jisoo replied.

"Wait what? Lalisa did that? But what about her? I thought she loves him?" I almost stood from my seat with their words.

What's happening? I don't understand. Is that the reason why she left with Taehyung and came back alone?

Lalisa gave up Taehyung to my sister? Just how dumb can I be?

"Finally, Lalisa realized she doesn't love my brother and she broke up with him to confess to you. She even approached you a while ago to say that she's fell in love with you. But you've been a jerk and flirted with that girl more. Now tell me, how can you fix this up Jk?" Jisoo asked and I bit my lip in return.

Shit.

"I didn't know. I didn't know she would do that?" I can't believe she would broke up with Taehyung because of me. Why didn't I listen to her earlier? Now I really need to explain.

Now I feel happy, nervous and guilty for what happened. Happy because Lalisa just admitted that she loves me! And she even chose to be with me than with Taehyung. Guilty because I did this stupid stunt on her, nervous because I don't know if she will still listen to me. But I can try right?

"You didn't know because you're too obsessed with you ego. Jk, your feelings is not the only thing important here. You should consider hers too. Even if you're hurt because of what you saw, you still need to understand her. She's your wife, you need to be there for here no matter what. Right?" Jisoo again.

I sgshed and took a deep breath.

"I know I messed up again. I need to clear things out. Please help me guys. I don't want her to go home without remembering me first. Please help me."

"How about we go back to the rest house first and ask Jennie and Taehyung about this. Maybe they can think of a plan for Lalisa to

not go home." Chaeyoung suggested and we all nodded.

"Bro, what if she really goes back to Thailand and don't talk to me anymore?" I asked Jimin. When we were inside the car.

Right now, I need comforting words from my friends but the girls are too pissed to talk to me and I'm not that close to Dr. Jin. We are now on our way home and I'm nervous to see Lalisa. I don't know if she's still awake but I plan on talking to her the moment we get back.

"We will help you. Don't worry Jk. Everything can be settled with good communication. If we can get her to listen to you, I think she will understand. Lalisa is the most understanding person we know, right?" he said and I nodded in agreement.

Yes. She really is the most understanding wife. And I hope she'll listen to me this time.

Minutes later, my friends gathered in the living room while I walk upstairs to go straight at Lalisa's room. But when I knocked on her door, there was no answer. I kept on knocking and realized she must be sleeping or she's inside atahyung's room. So with that I walked to Taehyung's room and knocked on his door. But when it opened, I was surprised to see Jennie inside.

"What the fuck?" I asked her when I saw her messy hair. Did something happen to them?

I tried to peak inside to see if Taehyung is naked or what. This is just too weird for my eyes right now. Seeing Jennie inside Taehyung's room. But Jennie pulled me away from the room.

"What do you want at this hour? It's fucking 3am! Taehyung is sleeping!" she whispered shouted while giving me a glare.

"I should ask you that! What are you doing in his room? Did he fuck you?" I asked and smacked my head.

"Stupid! Not all guys are like you Jk! Nothing happened. I just took care of him because Lalisa asked me to." she answered.

So it's really true. Lalisa played cupid between my sister and Taehyung. I can't help but smile at the thought. My wife finally broke up with him and now she's all mine.

Jimin is out of the picture, Mario too and finally Taehyung. So there are no more competitions left. She can finally focus on me.

"Listen, I made a mistake a while ago and I need your help." I said and she raised her brow.

"Why do you always mess up Jk! I swear if you made Lalisa cry again I will forget that you are my brother!"

"Please listen to me first. The group is at the living room waiting for you and Taehyung. Lalisa is going back to Thailand tomorrow. Please help me plan out to stop her" I pleaded.

"Oh shit! But Taehyung won't be able to join us. He has a fever

and he's now resting."

"It's okay, you just come with me." I said and she nodded. We walked to the living room and we told her what happened.

"I think we can't stop Lalisa from going home. She looks too hurt awhile ago and she's determined to go home." Jisoo said.

Her words worried me more but my sister stood from her seat.

"I have a plan and I think it will work out!" Jennie announced making us turn our attention to her.

"What is it?" I asked excitedly. I believe a plan will work if it's Jennie who is talking.

"Who among you her has a number of her friend? That guy named Kunpimook?" She asked and Dr. Jin raised his hand.

"I have." he said.

"Good. You guys listen to me. This is what we will do." Jennie smirked and explained the plan.

Lalisa's POV

When I woke up, I took a bath quickly and changed to my casual clothes. Sadly, the dream I wished to come back didn't appear when I got back to sleep. Now it's all a mystery to me who the man was. But it also made me remember that I planned on going home today. As I don't want to see Jungkook's face anymore.

I will go home and that is final. So I took my phone and dialed Kunpimook's number.

"Hello?" he answered with a nervous voice as if he's scared to talk to me. I wondered but didn't asked more.

"I want to go home now. Can you prepare the private plane for me?" I asked.

"Sure Princess. It will be ready before noon." he answered.

"Thank you so much Kunpimook!" I ended the call and sighed.

It's just 9 in the morning, and I have to wait for hours first before I can finally go home. But what will I do for the moment? I don't want to go out of my room. I know I will see Jungkook if I go out and I don't want that.

I decided to pack my things back in my luggage and prepare. But when I was done, my stomach grumbled.

Right! I haven't eaten yet and I'm so hungry.

It took me time to finally decide on going out to grab something to eat.

When I went downstairs, everyone was there already including Jungkook.

I didn't look at him but I can see that he is watching me through my pheripheral vision.

"Good Morning Lalisa! Are you hungry?" Jennie greeted who is seated beside Jack.

It made me smile seeing them this way. Come to think of it? If only Jungkook and I are together, this group has pairs. Jisoo and Dr. Jin, Jennie and Taehyung, me and Jungkook. Too bad Chaeyoung and Jimin are siblings.

It didn't escaped my eyes how they all sit stiffly on their spot as if they are hiding something from me.

"Good! Because we prepared something for you and you will love it!" Chae stood and pulled me to the dinning table. Jisoo and Jennie joined me too. They made me sit on the chair and I was surprised that a breakfast was prepared before me.

"Is this for me?" I asked.

"Yes, we made it specially for you" They said and they sat with me.

"But how about you?" Why are they not eating with me?"

"We just finished eating. Come on! Try the food." Jisoo answered and I hesitantly looked at the food.

The girls are really acting weird but I'm too hungry to worry about it so I dived in and enjoyed the meal.

They all smiled when I started eating and Jennie cleared her throat.

"Uhm so Lalisa, I heard you are going back to Thailand. Is it true?" She asked and I nod.

"Yes, I will leave at noon. But I'm afraid Dr. Jin will come with me."

"Oh. Okay. I hope you could stay longer but we can't stop you right?" she asked again and I had to look at Jungkook.

Our eyes met and I saw the sadness in it. I don't know if he is sad that I will be going but I shouldn't care anymore. I don't want to stay here with him. After what he did yesterday.

"I will go home and that is final." I said and continued eating. Surprisingly, nobody objected.

We all got quiet after that. I finished my food and the juice they made me and sat with them in the living room.

Jimin suggested for us to watch a movie while waiting for the plane and we all agreed.

This is my last day in Korea with my friends and it's really memorable to be with them. Even if it's just a short amount of time, I'm still grateful that I met them.

After an hour, Kunpimook called to say that the private plane is ready. Good thing, Jisoo seemed to not be sad even if Dr. Jin will be going back to Thailand with me.

The group accompanied us to the airport. And when we got there, the girls gave me a tight embrace.

"We will miss you!" the girls said.

"I will miss you all too. Thank you so much! I hope to see you all soon!" I bid each of them goodbye. And when I was finally saying goodbye to Jack, he spoke something which confused me.

"I hope, you don't get mad at me with what will happen next." he said and I tilted my head.

"What do you mean?" I asked Jack who seems to be guilty.

"Nothing. Just take care of yourself." he said and I hummed yes.

I turn my eyes on Jungkook who's still stairing at me with intense eyes. I don't know what he's thinking now but seeing him now makes saddens me.

I'm starting to regret the decision to go home just by looking at his face.

I want to spend time with him more but I'm not sure if he feels the same.

But he should've stopped me from leaving if he wants to spend more time with me, right?

I didn't gave him a hug even if my body craves for it. I don't know if I will see him again after this. I don't know if he will miss me, I don't know if he will ever think of me when we part.

Because if he'll ask me, I don't think it will be easy for me to forget him.

Even with the short amount of time that we have spend together, a huge part of me says that he is the only one I would want to be with.

I gave him a nod and turned my back on him. But I quickly looked back at him hoping to memorize his face.

This is the man who makes my heart beat twice every single time. I bit my lip and opened them to talk.

"Goodbye" I said and blinked my tears away.

His eyes widened when he saw the tear that fell down my eye. So I turned my back on him again and walked ahead of Dr. Jin.

Don't look back!

Don't look back!

I hardly stopped myself from looking back at him.

I can't look back at him or else I embarrass myself because I know I will just run on him and jump on his arms wether he like it or not.

I kept walking and boarded the private plane with Dr. Jin. He started making jokes to lessen the heavy atmosphere. And I had to laugh at them even if they're not funny.

The plane finally took off. And I closed my eyes and held my chest because of the emptiness that washed over me.

I miss him already.

I miss him so bad.

I shut my eyes more and wished for sleep to take over me.
My eyelids got heavier and I finally fell asleep.



Author's Note

How are y'all?

Blackpink just announce they will be having a Global Project soon. I wonder what it is?

Hoping for AriPink lol

Btw, Happy Birthday to the cutest chipmunk ever! 🐿️

#OurMusicianRoseDay

Author's Note

Dearest readers,

I'm sorry for not updating yet. I'm just too down to write these days.

For the past few days, I have read armys' mean comments about Lisa and BP in general and it's not helping my ArmyBlink heart. I tried to avoid reading them but they just keep popping out.

To specify some, here are what I have read:

1. When I watched the most viewed fancams for 2019 and Lisa got the 10th, 7th, 8th, 5th, and 3rd spot, I read a lot of comments saying that even if she got 5 out of 10 spots her views are nothing compared to Jungkook and V. And Swalla sucks. She's not a true artist because she's not even singing.

2. There is an article about her opening her own clothing line and an army asked why are people being crazy about her 29M followers on IG. It's not a big deal she added. She also said If Jk or V has their own IG, they would have 40M by now. Lisa is just lucky BTS has no IG.

3. When I watched their interview on iheart, I left a comment about BP, but SOME of the armys replied saying I'm being delusional and BP are pathetic. I didn't even shipped them in the comment. I just pointed out that I was happy Jk mentioned Kyle Hanagami (Kill This Love's Choreographer) but they came at me like I'm a criminal for mentioning Kyle Hanagami's name saying that I'm a delusional shipper and I'm making a big deal out of it.

4. When someone comments that they are proud that KTL got nominated for best music video at iHeart Awards, Army be coming saying that KTL is a flop. It doesn't sound good. Boy with Luv is better blah blah. But we are talking about the MV here, not the music. I agree that BWL sounds better than KTL but let's admit it guys, KTL's MV is incomparable. We cannot deny that it's really good. I'm not being biased here. I'm just stating facts.

5. When I read the most searched idols on google by the year end of 2019, the order was this: Jungkook, V, Jimin, Lisa, Suga, Jennie, IU.

And when some congratulated Lisa taking the highest female kpop spot, they be saying that her numbers are nothing compared to Jk, V and Jimin.

6. When someone mentions that their Bias in BTS is Jk and their Bias in BP is Lisa, and they look good together they will comment like "Ew. Stop being delusional, Armys will disown you, come out of your brain it's not good in there." And these are the same people who is shipping Jungkook and V, V and Jimin, Jimin and Jungkook. I mean come on? We are shipping guys so why are we being butthurt if they are shipped with girls? Will you die if these boys started dating girls?

Those are just few of the mean comments I read. There are even worse like Lisa should kill herself for being a skeleton and more.

Seriously, I can't with some of those controlling and toxic fans anymore. I'm an army too but I never shove to other's faces how successful and popular these boys are now. Fans needs to understand that just because BTS is on top now doesn't mean that they can just look down on other idols. Every idol is sweating and working their butts off just like BTS. They all deserve the recognition. It makes me sad everytime people appreciates Lisa or other BP members, some of them will come at you and say they are NOTHING compared to the boys. It's like we are not allowed to appreciate other besides BTS. Like why are we always comparing? Can't we just appreciate all of them?

I know it's not BTS' fault. But SOME fans are just too much. 🤔🤔
🤔

My boys are spreading love around the world and SOME of their fans are doing the opposite.

Sorry again for blurting this out here on Wattpad. I just need someone to hear me out. I'm not generalizing the Armys though. Because I know 95% of armys are kind and understanding. And I'm not saying that Blinks are not toxic because some of them are as toxic too.

As an ArmyBlink like me, I just want peace for the both fandom. I really hope fans stop being mean to each other in the comments because it just worsens the situation. I hope BTS and Blackpink and all the kpop idols are not affected by this.

Let's spread Love not Hate.



The Time Alone

Lalisa's POV

Where am I?

I looked around confusedly. I am inside a room with wooden walls, the room is dim but it is lightened by a small lamp.

I looked at my side and noticed my luggages are there.

Am I dreaming?

But this place looks real.

I sat up and noticed there are also luggages which are not mine.

Who are those? I got really curious and nervous at the same time.

Was I kidnapped? Because I don't remember coming here. All I remember is I got on the plane with Dr. Jin and flew back to Thailand and then I fell asleep after that.

Are these Dr. Jin's things?

Maybe there is an explanation to this.

I stood and walked out of the room, but what surprised me more was the sound of the water coming out of the house.

Is that the sound of a waterfall?

This is very weird. Where am I?

I walked out of the house but the sun has already set making it hard for me to see the scenery but I can clearly see the waterfalls nearby.

The sound of the running water is too relaxing that it made me forget that I was nervous and scared being here in this cabin alone. I closed my eyes, smell the fresh air and focused on the sound of the water more.

This place is too peaceful. Too peaceful for my raging mind and heart.

Suddenly, I heard someone clear his throat that made me stiffen on my spot.

I looked at my back and got surprised seeing Jungkook behind me.

His hands were on his pockets as he was watching me.

My heart is thumping out of my chest just seeing him here. He has still this effect on me and I know it would be hard to stop myself from drooling.

"Uhm.." I started. I don't know what to say to him.

"I see you're finally awake." he said with a tensed voice.

"Y.. Yes.. I.. I.. Why am I here? Why are we here? Where are we? Where are the others?" I asked Jungkook endless questions because I'm too confused.

"They're not here but they left you a note." he answered and handed me pieces of small papers.

I took it from him quickly and walked back in the living room to read them because the front porch is too dark for me to read the notes.

Jungkook followed me inside but I tried to act casual around him despite being nervous.

I sat on the couch and started reading the papers.

I read the first note.

Lalisa,

You're probably confused by now but this is what's best for the both of you. I hope you both patch things up.

Jimin.

Then I read the second one.

Lalisa,

I swear this is Jennie's idea but we still agreed to her. We just don't want you to go home broken hearted. Ilysm!

Chae

Lalisa,

I will spend time with Jin for a while while you are settling your own heart problems. Fighting!

Jisoo

Princess,

Don't forget to take your medicines. I left it with Jungkook. And don't force yourself to remember things. Just take it slowly. You will remember them at the right time.

Dr. Jin

Lalisa,

I'm so sorry if we planned this. But you need to take a detour and talk with him. Please don't let anger consume you. Communication is always the key to every relationship.

Jennie

Pranpriya,

I didn't know about this plan but I think this is good for you. I hope that this time you follow your heart. Don't worry about us. I pray for

your happiness.

Jack

Princess,

I'm so sorry for not following your order this time. This is the only time that I disobeyed you and that is only because I want you to be happy. I hope you forgive me.

Kunpimook.

I placed the notes on the table and looked at Jungkook.

"So, they set us up here to talk?" I asked unsurely.

"Yes. They did." Jungkook answered back as he walked to sit across from me.

"Why?" I asked him. But I don't get this whole point. Why are my friends suddenly helping me to talk to him?

I am too overwhelmed with these people who took time and effort just to set us up. As a matter of fact, I'm not mad at them. In fact, this assured me more that they care for my feelings.

"Because there had been a misunderstanding between us. And you tried to leave because you thought I was with another girl." he answered worriedly.

Just the word *another girl* brought back the disappointment in my heart. I remembered how pissed I am with him.

"Isn't it true?" I said raising a brow.

"I wasn't with another girl. You just misunderstood it." he explained.

"Okay. You were not." I answered nonchalantly.

"You don't believe me?" Jungkook.

"Why would I believe you and why are you even explaining? It's not as if I'm your girlfriend. I don't care if you spend time with another girl!" I snapped back which silenced Jungkook. What I said was a lie because I will always care if he's with another girl.

I can see in his clear brown eyes how his emotions are fighting. It's a mixture of guilt, disappointment and sadness but I want him to express his feelings. Why is he even explaining? Am I a big deal to him?

"You are not my girlfriend.." he said.

Thought so. I rolled my eyes.

"But you are my wife!" he continued with a strong voice.

I didn't stop myself from laughing so hard at his joke. How can he joke like this when I'm too pissed at him?

"Why are you laughing?" he asked.

"Nice joke Jungkook. But please stop. I'm being serious here." I said.

"I'm serious too. I'm not even joking! You are my wife. I am your

husband." he said and I looked at him to study his face if he's serious or not but his expression says he is not lying.

Is he telling the truth?

"But that's impossible. If I was your wife why can't I remember you? And why didn't you tell me sooner?" I asked confused.

"Because of your memory loss. I don't know why of all the memories your brain will erase, it was your memory with me that it chose to delete. Lalisa, believe me please. You are mine as I am yours. I can't bare to see you with other man anymore. You are my wife and I love you but you forgot me and now you're in love with Taehyung!" he said with frustrated voice and my eyes widened.

Jungkook loves me?

Oh my God!

I can't believe I would hear the words from him.

"You love me?" I asked and he nodded.

Jungkook stood and walked in front of me, suddenly he knelt and took my hands. He squeezed them and locked his eyes with mine.

"I love you Lalisa. I love you so much. Please believe me." he said meaning every word.

I looked at him and decided to ask him questions that my mind is feeding me.

"I can't remember you I'm sorry." I apologized. "But will you mind if you tell me our story?" I added. I want to hear everything from him. How did we meet? How did I fall for him? How did we get married?

"I will tell you everything. Everything you needed to know about me. About us." Jungkook answered and he sat next to me. He leaned on the couch and pulled me to lean on his shoulder.

My body felt at ease and calm because of our seated position.

Finally, Jungkook took a deep breath and opened his lips to talk.

"So our story started when you beat me on a test."



Author's Note

Happy Valentine's Day Everyone!

I love you all so much!

The Story

Jungkook's POV

"A test?"

"Yes, It was an admission exam for the second year in college that I took and you despite being a transferee, perfected it. I as well as Jimin and Taehyung could not believe the result so we had to check it personally if you cheated or what."

Good old days when Limario pissed me so much.

"You did that? What school is that? I don't remember studying with you." Lisa asked.

"It was an all boy school named Yonsei."

"All boy school? But I'm a girl." curiosity is clear in her eyes.

"Exactly. Which we didn't know because you pretended to be a boy wearing men's clothes and a male wig. And you were using the name Limario." I chuckled remembering that name. Those times when Limario gave me a hard time because I fell for him and thought I was gay.

"I did that? Why?" Lisa got amused with what she learned.

"You were hiding from the person who tried to kill you."

"I remember you said my aunt tried to kill me. Was that true?" She asked nervous. Her palms started sweating and I know she's scared right now. Who wouldn't be? When you just learned that someone planned to kill you.

"Yes, your aunt is held in prison now because of it. Don't worry." I didn't stop myself from kissing her forehead to lessen the nervousness she's feeling. Lalisa on the other hand leaned to me more.

"That's sad. Why would she do it?"

"Because she wants the crown for her daughter." I answered and Lalisa got quiet.

"Lalisa, are you okay? Do you still want me to continue or you want me to stop?" I asked her. I don't want her to feel uncomfortable because of the story from her past.

"I'm okay. Go ahead, continue the story. I will just listen." she made me continue and I cleared my throat.

"Okay but just tell me if your uncomfortable about it already. Our story is not perfect. I made a lot of mistakes but I will tell you everything. I don't want to leave the parts were I messed up because

that would be unfair to you." I said and she nodded.

"Okay."

"When I finally met you, we didn't know that you were a girl. We shared the same room and you, me, Jimin and Taehyung shared the same dorm. Each day I got more intrigued and curious about you. Not just because you were too smart but also because you seemed to be too soft for a man." I said with a gentle voice. It's good to talk to her about this. About our story because it's as if I travelled back to the time where I first fell in love.

"I fell in love with you thinking that I was gay. I really thought you were a boy that time. But I would definitely embrace it if you were. Until Jimin fell for you too."

"Jimin?" Lalisa was surprised to hear about it.

"Yes, Jimin. He found out that you were the girl he fell for when you danced with him on a club. Taehyung on the other hand found out that you were the princess he was looking for. So the competition got harder for me. Especially that Chae and Jisoo help their bothers to get you." I shook my head remembering the time when I thought Jennie was useless.

"How about you? How did you found out that I was a girl?" Lalisa looked me in the eye and I gulped.

Fuck. Should I tell her? But I had to right?

"Uhm.. I hope you don't get mad at me. But.." I'm so scared to tell her.

"But?" she made me continue.

"But I saw you naked when I changed your clothes when you got drunk." I looked down. Remembering changing her clothes and saw her breasts and her beautiful thing down there.

"Oh my God! You have seen my?" she covered her mouth hunged open.

"Yes, I saw everything." I answered with all honesty. I saw everything. I saw her perfect woman body.

"What did you do then?" she asked and I know what she's thinking.

"Well I.. Uhm.. Uh.. I touched your breast." I'm blushing now too mirroring Lalisa's face.

"You did not!"

"I'm so sorry but I did. I squeezed them because I thought they were implanted." ughh.. Those dumb Jungkook time!

"What the?" Lalisa's forehead creased and I'm sure she got disappointed with me.

"Sorry." Is all that I can say.

"How about my?" She asked glancing down.

"Oh.. That I didn't touched but.." I bit my lip.

"Oh my God but?" Lisa's voice raised this time.

"But few days later, you got drunk again and I had to take you to a hotel because I don't want to let the boys see you drunk."

"You took me to a hotel? Did something happen?"

"Yes. That was the night you said that you love me." I smiled thinking about the it.

"Really? What happened then?"

"Uhm.. I kissed you but you were too drunk. I'm so sorry Lalisa but I took advantage of you when you were drunk. And I know you will hate me for it." I admitted. I'm really close to having her hate me with all these terrible things that I did to her.

"You raped me?" she guessed and I quickly shook my head.

"No, I..I rubbed myself with your couchie while you were asleep. And I regret it so much. That was so terrible for me to do but I don't want to skip that part. I want to tell you everything that I did to you." I really feel so guilty and I hope she forgive me despite hearing all of it.

"Jungkook, that was really terrible. How could you disrespect me like that?" she asked hurt.

"I know. But it was not the only terrible thing that I did."

"What else then?"

"Before I meet you, I have a girlfriend. She is a princess too just like you." I had to tell her about Tzuyu. If I told her about what happened in the hotel, she needs to know about my cheating too.

"Oh" Now it was Lalisa's turn to look down. Then she looked back at me.

"Is she pretty?" She asked with an insecure voice

"Not as pretty as you." I answered truthfully. In my eyes, Lalisa will always be the best. Sje's just so perfect. She's my goddess wife.

"Stop lying."

"I'm not! You are the most beautiful girl I met Lalisa" I said and she just rolled her eyes.

"What happened to her then?"

"Well, that princess was too controlling. I tried to break up with her because of you but she won't let me. Then she asked for my moms help so my mom asked me to stay with her." that was the worst decision my mom and I made.

"Your mom liked her for you?"

"Yes, at first she likes her so much. My father too. They didn't know about you then."

"Why didn't you tell them about me?" Lalisa asked disappointedly.

"I told them but they were scared that if I broke up with her it will ruin my father's image. Tzuyu's father was my father's sponsor for the presidential candidacy. And they were too powerful to break

contact with. My mom was too scared of scandals and how the backlash will affect my father's reputation so she asked me to not break up with her for the whole candidacy period."

"Oh. I get it." She said nodding. She might think that our family are opportunist this time but knowing how kind Lalisa is, I bet she will never think like that. She's so good and kind that she isn't aware how bad people can be.

"I'm so sorry. I was a coward for not fighting for you. You were braver than me. You proved me that" I recalled the time she went back to her country just to tell her grandmother that she will cancel the engagement with Mario just for me.

"Instead of fighting for you too, I spent time with that girl." I held Lalisa's body more to lean on me. I'm so scared to have her know all of this.

"What did you do with her?"

"Okay so this part is the worst. Tzuyu and I would sometimes kiss. But I don't love her I swear." Lalisa moved away from me when I said the kissing part. She looked at me with hate in her eyes and I know this time she's really pissed.

"But why would you do that if you don't love her?" Lalisa asked making me regret my mistakes more.

"I'm so so sorry for doing that. I admit I was never perfect and there are more imperfections in me than you know but Lalisa you still forgave me after that."

"Really? I have forgiven you?" her brows furrowed not believing me.

"Yes, but I will understand if you don't do it this time." I said. Suddenly, she started being quiet.

"How did we marry then?"

"Well it's not actually an official marriage because it was only us who were there that day. But we treated it as real as it can be. We pledged our vows in Jeju and we promised we would love each other till the rest of our lives."

"So this explains the rings." she muttered looking at our hands. My hand travelled to hers and squeezed them gently. Good thing she didn't pull away.

"This are just couple rings. Not the real wedding rings but I promised I will give you the real one when the time comes."

"When the time comes?" she asked hesistantly as if the idea is not possible.

"Yes, I will marry you. The Queen approved of it already and my parents too."

"The Queen? She knows about us? How come she didn't tell me

when I asked her that I would marry Jack." she asked her eyes wide opened.

"Because she doesn't want to cause you stress. because of your condition, we all got afraid to tell you the truth." I answered.

"I see. So that also explains why your mother mentioned about me marrying you when we were on the Blue Palace."

"Yes" I nodded.

Silence followed after and I managed to pull her back to lean on me. Lalisa just followed along and rested her head on my shoulder.

"Are you mad? Will you forgive me with everything? I mean with all those mistakes I made, will you consider forgiving me again?" I asked nervously. I really hope she says yes.

"You said that I have forgiven you before so why shouldn't I forgive you now."

"Really?" I asked with voice louder. I can't believe this!

"Yes, as long as you regret those things that you did, I can always forgive." she said smiling at me.

"Thank you! This means so much to me Lalisa." I said with almost teary eyes. I can't believe she would forgive me this easily. And I promised myself to never do anything that will hurt her again. I kissed her forehead and hugged her body tightly.

"Jungkook?" Lalisa brought me back to the real world.

"Hmm?"

"I.. I want to ask you something."

"Sure what is it?"

"I..uhm.. I had a dream about a guy. We were doing an intimate thing but I haven't seen his face. I just would like to ask if.. If.. there's a possibility that you were that guy? Because the dream looks so real like it really happened." she asked and I smiled. So she's been dreaming about me. Her memories can erase me but her dreams cannot.

"I believe it is me. We have done it many times." I replied and her eyes widened.

"Are you serious?" she asked surprisedly.

Lalisa's POV

"Yes, we did it first in Jeju before we got married and we did it again 2 days after." he said.

"Oh my God! I can't believe it!" Jungkook and I had sex? How was that even possible?

"You loved me so much Lalisa that you agreed to do it with me." he replied.

"Are you my first?" I asked. I wonder if he's the only guy I have been with.

"Yes, I am your first. We even went to a hospital clinic after the

first time."

"Huh? But why?" Jungkook's words got me so curious.

"Because.. Uh.. Uhm.. Let's talk about other things Lalisa." he wanted to divert the topic but I need to hear it.

"Jungkook, tell me. Why did we end up in a hospital clinic?" I asked more. I'm really curious now.

"Because I caused you to bleed so much. I'm really really sorry for doing it."

"What?" I quickly glanced down his crotch but looked away immediately.

Just how big he is?

"You weren't able to walk the next day." he said chuckling.

"Hey! Why are you even laughing?" \$ smacked his arm because of it.

"I'm sorry but it's just so funny. You were really pissed that day but still we did it after the wedding, and you liked it then." he smiled with those eyes sparkling as if he is daydreaming about it.

"I liked it?"

"Yes, you asked for more after a round." he answered and it made me blush. I never thought I would do a bold thing like that. That's very unlike me.

"Is it really good?" now I'm more curious. Because that dream made me want to feel it again.

"It is. That's what you said. Do you want to try it again?" Jungkook asked and I thought for a while.

I looked at him and I realized I really want to do it again. Maybe doing it with him would trigger some of my memories back. So I nodded to answer him yes.

"Are you sure?" he asked again with deep and husky voice.

Suddenly the atmosphere of the room turned differently.

Jungkook locked his eyes with mine.

"I'm sure" I gulped.

Jungkook turned his body to me and I waited for what he will do next.

He then closed the gap between our faces.

"I love you so much Lalisa." Jungkook whispered.

Then I felt his soft lips on mine.



Author's Note

Hi readers! Sorry for the late update because I got busy with work. I hope there are still some who's waiting for an update.

The story is coming to an end and I will miss you guys so much!!!

The Love Making

Lalisa's POV

Jungkook carried me without breaking the kiss. His tongue still exploring every corners of my mouth. Sucking my tongue lightly as I also do the same.

This is the second time I kissed him apart from the kiss we shared at the blue palace but I'm still awed how I can kiss him back like I'm an expert or so. Maybe because him and I used to kiss back then but I just don't remember it. Besides, my body seem to respond on its own when it comes to Jungkook.

I felt Jungkook's strong arms carry me upstairs. I know we are headed there even though my eyes are closed because of how the stairs squeak on his steps.

He led me to the room and when we are in, he finally broke the kiss.

"The bed is small" I uttered worrying we wouldn't fit.

"It's okay, we can still fit. It's either you on top of me? or I'm on top? How do you want it to be?" he asked without breaking eye contact.

The thought of me on top of him is so new and embarrassing so I answered blushing. "You on top."

He smiled.

"As you wish Princess" he gently lay me on the bed and removed his jacket then pulled out his shirt exposing his toned body.

What a beautiful sight he is. I can't help but stare at his body while I wait for his next move.

"Tonight, I'm gonna show you how to praise your body like a Queen that you are." he walked to me and grabbed my leg stopping on my calf, he kissed my shin. Placing gentle kisses up to my knee.

My dress hiked up showing him my black underwear and Jungkook's eyes locked with it so I closed my legs out of embarrassment. I know we did it before and he has probably seen it a lot of times but still, this is very new to me.

"What a tease." he said while breathing heavily. He looked back at my legs and continued kissing both of my knee, he parted them and run his tongue from there slowly moving north which earned a light moan from me.

Jungkook is very bold with his every move I see.

He licked my inner thigh then he stopped in front of my clothed core. He moved my light dress up and leaned closer to it.

"This is your favorite part. You usually like it when I do this to you" he said tugging my panties down and threw it to the side.

Even though I'm blushing just seeing him face my sex, I didn't stop him from what he will do next.

Is he going to kiss me there? But that would be weird.

I closed my eyes and stopped myself from thinking when Jungkook attacked my pussy with his mouth.

He kissed it as if making out with my mouth. So I grabbed my hair out of pleasure.

"Oh God! This is so good!" I moaned.

He started sucking one corner and my pussy started leaking out juices which Jungkook willingly licked in return.

I looked at his face which is now glistening with wetness and pushed him more to it.

He is now eating me, and drinking all of my wetness and I can't do anything but to moan and moan.

He then stopped so I looked at him confused. His eyes are still glued to my pussy but I got surprised when he rubbed it and slowly inserted a finger.

"Jungkook!" I closed my eyes again when I felt his long finger inside my walls.

It hurts.

Jungkook didn't say a thing but he moved his fingers in a come at me motion rubbing somewhere inside which triggered my pussy to cry out more juices.

"Oh my God Jungkook!" I feel so so good having him do it but just when I thought it was all of it, he kissed my pussy again without taking his finger. He sucked it so good while still moving his fingers inside. My body is now shaking with full pleasure and Jungkook inserted another finger.

The sound of his fingers clashing with my pussy echoed through the room. His fingers moved faster and my body went crazy for it.

"Jungkook!" I screamed when I felt the most satisfying climax through my core. My body felt numb and spent and my pussy spasmed around his fingers.

"You like it?" he asked proudly while kissing my pussy more.

"Uh huh"

He smiled then he hovered over me and kissed my lips making me taste his lips which just came from my pussy.

"I love you Lalisa!" Jungkook said.

His mouth travelled to my jaw, down to my neck and chest. Jungkook massaged my breast with his hand while his other hand

supports his weight. Both of his legs locked me in as if I'm going to escape.

Jungkook's kiss lingered on a mole on my chest. Then he began unbuttoning my dress. He got successful and so he removed it from me.

"Let's take this off" he said removing my bra after taking of his pants as well.

I was left all naked while Jungkook is still on his boxers.

Jungkook kissed me. Every part of my body devouring and praising it with his mouth.

He then stood and looked at me.

"You ready baby?" he asked and I nodded. I'm kinda excited for the main event.

Soon Jungkook pulled down his boxers and my jaw dropled at his revelation.

Oh my God!

I take it back.

I am not ready.

Jungkook is so

BIG

"Uhm" I I gulped nervously. Now I know why we had to go to the hospital the first time.

"Don't worry, It won't hurt that much. We did it before." he said when he noticed the fear in my eyes.

"Oh.. Okay" I answered hesistantly.

Jungkook crawled on top of me while holding his cock. Even his big hand looks small compared to it.

He brushed the tip of it to my opening and I waited.

Then, Jungkook pushed it inside which caused my eyes to widen.

"Ahhh" my scream where silenced by his kiss. He began kissing me while pushing his cock inch by inch in.

My cunt stretches for him and my eyes watered in pain.

Jungkook's moaned loudly as his cock filled my hole. But he never moved as if waiting for me to adjust to him.

"Is it okay for me to move now?" he asked. It still hurts but I wanted him to continue.

"Go on" I said and he pulled his cock out and slowly pushed it back. It felt so good that I moaned for him.

To Jk, my noises were an indicator that he can move more so he started moving in and out of me in a gentle manner. My legs are now wrapped around his waist as well as my arms are wrapped around his neck.

Our bodies began moving in a rythm that both of us enjoy. But I think I need him to move more. I can see that he is holding back.

"Jungkook faster" I said.

"I will baby" he increased in speed.

Soon, Jungkook fucked me so fast making it hard for me to breath. His cock slammed in and out of me and the pleasure it created almost made me lose myself.

"You're so tight baby!" Jungkook grunted.

His huge cock hit the end of my wall so good making me reach my climax. My back arched as my toes curled because of it while my eyes rolled back screaming his name.

"Fuck fuck fuck!!!" Jungkook shut his eyes and exploded inside of me.

I felt somewhat being filled with a hot sticky liquid from his cock but I was too focused on my euphoria to ask him what it is.

After spilling everyrhing in, Jungkook plopped over me catching his breath.

We were breathing heavily making it hard for us to talk. He probably noticed that he was too heavy for my body to hold so he lie beside me and pulled me for a cuddle so that we would fit in the small bed.

Despite being both naked, I felt comfortable around him. He really is my husband.

"Jungkook?" I called him out.

"Yes baby?are you sore? Did I hurt you?" he asked with a worried voice.

"I'm okay" I answered smiling, hiding how sore I am.

"Then what is it?"

"Something's leaking out of me. What is it?" I asked curiously. And his eyes widen.

"Shit!" he sat back and looked at my pussy which is now leaking with white fluid.

"I came inside you!" his expression was in great fear as if he murdered someone.

"Then?" I asked satting back up.

"That is my cum, it will get you pregnant!" he said and now it was my time to curse.

"Shit!"

Jungkook's POV

"Shit!" Lalisa cursed in horror when I said it.

There you go, I know she's going to hate me but I was very used to cumming inside her that I forgot that she's not taking pills anymore.

"I'm sorry. I was used to have you take the pills and I always cum

inside you. I did not do it on purpose. I swear." I apologized wholeheartedly even though a part of me wants to get her pregnant but still, I want her consent on it. I want her to gain her memories first.

"What do we do now? Can I still take those pills?" she asked.

"We can buy them but we are now in the middle of the woods and we have no car. The group planned for us to be stuck here for 3 days so that we can settle things out. Jennie said she would pick us after three days."

"Where are we? Where are they? We can call them right?" Lalisa asked.

"We are still in Jeju but they are back in Seoul now. Sorry baby... Even if we call them, they won't come here because Jennie specifically ordered them to never disturb us."

"Oh my god!" Lalisa started sobbing and it broke my heart into pieces. I held her naked body and pulled her to cry on my chest.

"Shhh..please don't cry. I'm so sorry" I rubbed her small back as she sobs in my chest.

"Don't you want to carry my child?" I asked her and she shook her head.

"Of course I want to. I love you Jungkook" Lalisa said and I got confused. Why is she reacting this way if she wants to carry my child?

"Then why are you crying like this if you want to?"

"Because.." she hiccuped "Because my grandmother will kill me if I get pregnant."

Oh.

So that's it? I smiled.

"Then worry no more baby. The Queen specifically asked me to get you pregnant before we leave Thailand."

"You are lying?" Lalisa blinked her eyes looking at me.

"No I'm not. I swore I will never lie to you again remember?" I said smiling and she finally took a sigh of relief.

"That's so relieving!" she said.

"You mean? You mean you are really open to the possibility of getting pregnant?" I asked in disbelief. This is the opposite of the other Lalisa.

"Of course! I would love to have a child with you!" she beamed.

"Really?" I jumped out of the bed in excitement.

I can't believe this! Lalisa just agreed to it. Now I'm kinda thankful that she got an amnesia.

Lalisa started laughing at my reaction.

"Then, can we do it one more time?" I asked for permission and she nodded.

"Sure!" she opened her arms making me jump back on the bed.

Few. Moments later, Lalisa is already having her 6th orgasm, screaming my name while her pussy clutched to my cock.

No matter how many times I fuck her, she still remains so tight.

I fucked her so many times that night. No, I made love with her so many times this night. And she kept asking for more which made me cum inside her over and over. Wetting the bedsheets with our sweats and cum.

I missed her so much and I'm so happy because for now, everything is good between us.

I can finally marry her. I can finally be with her. Forever. No one's going to stop us now.



Author's Note

I'm late again. Sorrrrrrrrrrrryyyyyyyyyyy

The Happy Couple

Jungkook's POV

Who the fuck is calling so early in the morning?

I opened my eyes annoyingly looking for the source of the noise.

Lalisa was still laying on my chest. Both of us naked with only blankets covering our body.

"hmmm" Lisa just hummed and moved her face to my neck nuzzling it while feeling her warm breath.

This moment is just so perfect both of us. Lying on the bed after rounds of love making but it just had to be ruined by some phone call.

Whoever this shit is calling I swear to God if this is Jennie or Tae!

I reached for the phone on the bedside table which is ringing nonstop without letting go of my wife.

When I saw the caller I.D, I was even more pissed that it is unregistered and the fuck is he or she even calling my wife's phone?

But what if this is the Queen or anyone important? Afraid at the thought of the Queen calling, I shook Lalisa's shoulders.

"Baby, someone is calling." I gently whispered because I don't want to ruin my precious girl's sleep.

"Who is it?" she asked, still with eyes closed.

"I don't know. Maybe the Queen?" I said.

"Oh God!" she panicked and took the phone quickly to answer.

She sat back up making me see how beautifully carved her back is. My hands automatically traced the line on her spine. While waiting for her to talk to the other line.

"Hello. Who is this?" she answered nervously.

"Wha.. How did you get my number?" she asked surprised. I got intrigued so I sat back up and leaned to hear who is talking on the other line. Lalisa quickly moved away from me as if she's hiding something.

"Who is that?" I asked my tensed wife.

Lalisa motioned me to wait as she continue the talk.

"Is that so? Uhm.. I'm still here in Jeju." she said and my forehead creased.

"Who the fuck are you talking to?" I mouthed.

"Uhm.. Sorry I can't.. I'm with my boyfriend." she said which made me smile like a creep.

She just called me her boyfriend and I'm beyond proud of myself. Last time I checked it was Taehyung she's calling boyfriend, not me.

But wait is someone asking her out? My heart beat faster at the anxiousness I'm feeling. So I grabbed her phone away from her. And decided to talk whoever the hell is bothering my alone time with my wife.

"Who is this?" I asked the person from the other line. Lalisa tried to grab her phone away from me but I stood so that she won't get it back.

"Jungkook? Is that you?" The person from the other line asked.

"How do you know me?" I asked confused. The voice sounds familiar tho.

"So, you are Lalisa's boyfriend. This is fun." he said and my brows furrowed.

"Dylan?" I asked and he laughed so hard.

"I never thought Lalisa and you are together. Wow. Just when I thought it would be bad to steal Taehyung's girl, you proved me wrong. Now it would be fun to steal your girl"

"I swear to God if you do that I will kill you!" I threatened through gritted teeth and Lalisa looked at me with worried eyes.

"You can try Jeon. But what I want, I get remember?" he chuckled and continued "See yah soon!" he ended the call and I almost throw Lalisa's phone but stopped when I realized it was not mine.

"What was that?" she asked. "Do you know Dylan?"

"I should be the one asking you why Dylan has your number? Did you gave him your contact number Lalisa?" I know this is not the right time to fight because Lalisa and I are just got back together but I'm so pissed that everytime we would finally be happy, someone will come and ruin it!

(What's your problem with me Authornim?)

"I didn't give him my number I swear. I even told him that Taehyung and I are still together because I know and I have a feeling he will try to make a move on me." Lalisa explained and I sighed.

"How did you talk to him?" I asked.

"He offered to drive me back home when we were at the club. I swear I refused but Dylan was so persistent so I came with him" she explained. Making me remember the shit I pulled out that night.

"Nothing happened?" I asked making sure. My head is running with scenarios like them kissing or...

"Nothing, he was a gentleman" she said making me frown more.

"She's not a gentleman! Lalisa you don't know him so stay away from him!" my voice got louder startling Lalisa. And I got guilty seeing her expression.

"I'm sorry... I was just. I'm just too worried someone would take you away from me again. Lalisa, we have been a rough journey and I'm so stressed. All I want is to be with you." I walked to her and held her shoulders to squeeze them.

"You don't have to worry. I'm here to stay." She said and pulled me to her. I willingly kneeled in front of her, in between her legs.

"Promise me you will never leave me for any guy."

"Promise." She said as she massaged my hair. She leaned to my face and gave me a soft peck on the cheek and I smiled.

"I love you baby. I'm sorry for being over dramatic, jealous and pathetic guy."

"I love you too. You have nothing to worry. I'm yours." Lalisa answered, a sweet smile still plastered on her face and I can't help but be happy for how everything is turning out.

I moved closer and planted kisses on her belly button.

How can she smell so nice when she sweated a lot last night? Her pink cunt is just below my face and I want to savor it for breakfast.

"Jungkook, stop! It tickles" she giggled but I just continued teasing her kissing her flat stomach.

"Hmmm...baby why is your pussy hairless by the way?" I asked and she blushed so hard.

"Why are we talking about hairs? That's uhmm.. weird!" she looked away, embarrassed.

"Because I'm curious." I grinned at her. Lalisa has this very beautiful pussy and I'm curious how she takes care of it.

"Uhm.. There are grooming things princesses must do for hygiene and stuffs." Lalisa said shyly.

"You are waxing or shaving?" I asked curious and she shook her head.

"No, it's permanently removed through laser" she answered uncomfortably.

I nodded and decided to change topic because I don't want her to get pissed or what.

"Are you hungry? I will cook for you." I offered.

"Really? You will cook for me?" she smiled like an angel.

"Of course, princesses should be treated well" I said and she chuckled.

"You sound like Kunnimook but thank you then, can I go take a bath first? I feel sticky." she said scrunching her nose. Which looks so cute by the way.

"Go ahead baby, I'll just be at the kitchen." I said kissing her forehead.

We both headed to our directions.

I went downstairs, walked straight to the kitchen. Opened the

fridge and smiled. This is awesome. It's full of food supplies and ingredients to cook meals enough to last for days.

Jennie and my friends are really the best in planning this. I should really thank them when I go back home to Seoul. Good thing, Mario helped me rent this amazing place.

This is a cabin for rent for those who would want to enjoy nature away from the city. This is actually perfect for honeymoon.

I grabbed the stuffs I need to cook breakfast for my wife and started cooking while humming.

I'm too happy right now to be worried about Dylan. Not that I'm not threatened, I still know that everything will be fine now.

Because this day I will give Lalisa a proper proposal. I will ask her to marry me. And hopefully she says yes.

I can't wait for her memories to come back anymore. Whether she's forgotten about me or not, I will still propose to her.

Hopefully if she answers yes, the problem with Dylan will be solved along with my heart problems.



Author's Note

I'm too lazy to edit so forgive me for grammar issues and misspelled words if you find some lol

The Waterfalls

Lalisa's POV

After taking a warm shower, I head downstairs and saw Jungkook by the dining table with breakfast prepared.

"You really cooked for me?" I said walking to him, a smile plastered on his face.

"Of course, anything for my princess." Jungkook pulled a chair for me to sit and we started eating in silence.

It feels so good to be with him like this. Like we are really married, I wonder if when will he try to ask me for real marriage.

I hope it is soon.

I love him.

I love him that I want to be with him forever.

"Baby? Why are you quiet? Is it bad?" Jungkook asked glancing at the food and I quickly shook my head no.

"No, I'm just happy I'm here with you. This place is amazing but it is more amazing because you are here." I answered making him smile.

"I'm happy too. Thank you so much Lalisa for giving me another chance. I swear I will do better this time."

"By the way, there is waterfalls near here and the water is just shallow, do you want to go there and swim with me?" Jungkook asked making me feel excited.

I want to go to the waterfalls.

"Sure" I said.

We continued eating and prepared for our small walk.

Later that day, we both walked to the waterfalls near the cabin we are staying at. Jungkook said, he just rented the place with Mario's help.

The place was really amazing especially that the water is crystal clear and it looks shallow so I'm not scared if we decide to dive in.

"Let's go?" Jungkook started removing his clothings while I watch. I could barely conceal my impatience as I enjoy the sight of him undressing. He slowly unlaced his boots and removed his socks. Next came his hat, t-shirt and finally his shorts. So I gasped because before he descended into the pool he paused.

I admired him in all his glory standing to attention before me, his cock pointing toward the heavens proudly. Despite the coolness of

the air on my skin there was the unmistakable heat of passion between my legs.

He dived down making the water splash at me.

"Join me baby" Jungkook smirked when he saw me all flushed.

Who won't be flushed when I just saw Jungkook's beautiful cock.

"It's cold" I said hesitating.

"No, it's not. Come. Let's swim together." He said splashing water at me.

"Okay okay.. Stop splashing water at me, you're wetting my clothes" I said.

"Then come here quick." Jungkook showed me his bunny smile. I really love this playful side of him.

I lifted my dress up and removed it in one go not wanting it to get wet. So I was left with my underwear.

I saw how Jungkook's smile faded, his eyes scanned over my body making me conscious at how I look like.

"Stop staring!" I glared.

"Am I not aloud to look at my wife? Take of your underwear" he commanded, eyes full of lust and voice with full authority.

I looked around first and decided to followe suit. I unclasped my bra and tossed it. Jungkook's eyes were still at me watching my every move.

Then I slid my panties down and saw how Jungkook gulped. I felt a bit proud of myself for having this effect on him. It feels so liberating from the constricting clothes

I walked at him and dipped my feet into the water, Jungkook padded to me and held me by my hips.

He pulled me to him and was able to catch me with his strong arms.

The frigid water made me gasp with cold. But my body soon adjusted to the temperature. He lifted me, one arm around my back the other beneath my legs and carried me toward the torrent of water above our heads.

"You're so beautiful. You know that?" he said with eyes looking intently at me.

"I don't think so" I would always doubt myself.

"You are. You are the most beautiful girl in the world. I love you Lalisa"

"I love you Jungkook"

Soon his lips crashed into mine. I closed my eyes and pulled him by his hair. He tilted his head and pushed his tongue inside my mouth. Moving it with my tongue and sucking each other.

Jungkook and I began kissing passionately not caring if we are doing it in an open view.

"Baby, is it okay for you if we do it here?" he asked after the kiss and I looked around.

Good thing the place is secluded and it seems like only him and me are here so I agreed.

We hid a small alcove which we discovered when we got closer, our lips locked through the curtain of water. Gently he placed me to lie on a flat rock wide enough to serve as a bed.

His eyes scanned my body as if admiring my whole existence while droplets of water fell on my nipples from Jungkook's hair when he hovered above me. He licked and sucked every inch of my breasts while rubbing my core with his big hand.

Jungkook kissed every part of my body but he was more drawn to the thing between my thighs.

Soon Jungkook knelt face first to worship at my yearning sex.

"Look at that. You are so beautiful." he said eyes locked with my wet dripping pussy. Crying for his touch.

"You're so wet baby." He couldn't contain himself. So he dined on my pussy lapping and sucking like a thirsty man. I made noises. Crazily pleased noises as my senses were overwhelmed.

Jungkook plunged two fingers deep into my wetness causing me to gasp whilst manipulating my clit between his forefinger and thumb. Just few moments later, I came, deep and hard against his fingers. He pulled it out and sucked his fingers as he smiled up at my grateful expression.

Jungkook must have felt he should give me some time to recover and so lay down beside me but no sooner had he settled next to me, I could feel my ass against a hard wood, Jungkook's wood. He began rubbing it on me and I wanted him to stroke my inside too just as he was doing on the outside.

His hand gliding along my back, over my bottom and down my thigh. He lifted my leg with his other hand. Immediately he answered my desire by entering my pussy. He had no trouble locating my hole with his fullsome, rigid cock. As he penetrated my core, I took a sharp intake of breath.

Then I relaxed and joined him in a satisfying rhythm that seemed to last for hours. I was mesmerised by the sight of his manhood disappearing into my cunt and re-emerging again and again.

He fucked me in that position while we were repeatedly splashed by and immersed in the falls. Jungkook was rough that I could feel his balls clapping against mine and every now and again a rogue, deeper thrust caught me off guard causing me to gasp.

"God! Jungkook!"

I am awed when he withdrew far enough for his head to be seen then he'd plunged in again and slowly withdraw until he could tell I

was going crazy.

In a flash, he flipped me into all fours, ass high and head low against the frigid rock. He pushed his cock unannounced causing me to plop down but he manage to pull me by my hips to meet him again.

Jungkook pulled his cock out and I whinned but screamed seductively when he slammed it back again. I will never get enough of him. He just feels so good inside me. His veiny cock brushing my walls not caring if it's too big for mine to hold but I love it.

I love every feeling of it.

"Let's come together baby" he said, voice hoarser this time. His hands were griping my hips to much.

"Uh huh" I answered and by then Jungkook started fucking me so hard. Hitting my insides over and over. When he reached for my clit, to rub it, I almost came before him.

"Wait for me baby" he said when my body started shaking. I'm on the verge of reaching an orgasm so Jungkook's pace fastened. Riding me, dominating my womanhood with his big, hot and hard cock.

"Fuck baby I'm cumming!!!" Jungkook's voice echoed around.

My vision blurred, and my pussy walls spasmed around his cock then he came shooting his load on me so hard and so good.

And it came flashing.

All the memories I had with him.

From the very first day that we met to the day I was pushed down the stairs.

"Jungkook" I called him, his eyes still closed enjoying the feeling of his throbbing cock while it is emptying its load inside my womb.

"What is it baby?" he answered catching his breath.

"I remember everything"

Jungkook's mouth dropped open.



Author's Note

Double update because of Lalisa's Good thing dance practice video which made my day

Btw, I know you all are tired that the story is not yet finished but I promise it will end soon.

The Proposal

Jungkook's POV

After Lisa got her memories back, we decided to tell the Queen about it.

I was really surprised to hear that it was Eunha's fault all this time. If I could just kill her for threatening my wife's life.

I'm so mad at her for causing me too much worry and stress for the past weeks.

But Lalisa stopped me from going back to Thailand with her because she was too worried that I would literally kill her cousin if I saw her. So yeah, she made me stay here in Korea as she settle things back home. And I agreed because the election is just days away and my family needs me for the while.

I've been away from her for a week now but I would always call to check on her. She said the Queen was so mad knowing the truth that she even wanted to give Eunha the worst punishment. But Lalisa being the kindest princess that she is, has forgiven Eunha.

Now, Lalisa asked the Queen to just let it go and just send Eunha abroad to live there away from her.

If I was just the Queen, I won't just let it go. But Lalisa said Eunha apologized already and it was enough for her.

I really can't understand why she is so kind like this but it is one of her traits that I love the most. And that kindness of her has been taken advantage of people even by me.

Looking back, I really regret doing those things to her. Especially my lying and cheating.

And being away with her makes me really miss her. It's so hard to survive for the week that we were apart and I was also worried of her safety. Good thing Kunnimook always gives me updates about her. So now, while I was away from her, I managed my time by focusing on my studies. I missed out a lot which lowered my ranking in school but I could only care less. As long as I have spent time with Lalisa, I don't mind dropping out from school.

I told my parents that I might be dropping out of school for me to be with Lalisa. At first they were shocked with my decision. Father even opposed saying that I'm not responsible enough but I explained that being with Lalisa is the only thing that matters to me now. If I don't marry her soon, she might leave me again for

another man to marry or forget about me again. And I will not let it happen.

I need to be with her.

After the result of the election, I wanted to take our relationship to the next level. And I will be needing my family's help.

My proposal to Lalisa was pushed back again because of her suddenly remembering the incident with Eunha. I thought it was not the right time yet to propose when I heard the truth about the accident. So now, I wanted to have a perfect proposal. I want everyone to be there including my family and friends.

My mother knows about it already and she's so excited. She can't stop talking about it with me. Father doesn't know it yet because he's always away from home busy with the candidacy and stuffs. While Jennie is still nowhere to be found. I don't know what happened with her and Taehyung but after our trip to Jeju, my sister is always out. Maybe she's hanging out with Taehyung.

I'm not complaining though. I want to my sister to be happy and I want my bestfriend to leave my wife alone. I just hope he is also happy.

Seriously, Taehyung is one who made me feel jealous the most. Basically because he is Lalisa's first love and it has gotten worse when she got an amnesia. But still, I am thankful to him for helping me out and teaching me everything I need to know on how to treat Lalisa the best way.

I was a jerk. I am probably the worst boyfriend and I don't deserve her but I have still a lifetime with her to correct and make up for my mistakes. I will love her and take care of her for the coming days. That I swear to Lalisa's beautiful face.

Moments after staying at my room, I walked to my sister's room trying my luck if she's there. I really need her to help me with the surprise proposal. When I was finally out of her door, I opened it and was shocked to see her inside..

naked with Taehyung.

"Shit!"

We both cursed at the same time.

"Don't you know how to knock!" she yelled and covered themselves with the blanket.

"Not my fault you don't know how to lock and what the fuck are you two doing?" I asked making Jennie roll her eyes.

"Praying... Well duh? Of course we are having sex if you just didn't ruin the moment you bastard!" Jennie annoyingly said. I looked over Taehyung who looks too uncomfortable with me seeing them here naked.

But who cares? As long as it's not my wife he fucks.

But wait..

They are having sex?

The holy Taehyung is having sex with my sister?

How did this happened?

"Jungkook I swear to God I will kill you if you don't leave my room right now!" Jennie yelled again bringing me back to reality.

"No.. No.. Wait.. I need your help with Lalisa" I said and she sighed.

"You always need my help when it comes to her. What's new?" she rolled her eyes for the hundredth time.

"I want to give her a surprise proposal. Will you two help me on this?" I asked.

"I guess it's about time" Jennie smiled.

"Sure. Anything for her to be happy" Taehyung found his tongue this time making me smile back.

"Now please leave the room first, I need my orgasm to happen. We'll just see you later." she said and I got what she meant. Of course I need to leave them ALONE first. So I walked out of the door smiling like crazy.

Taehyung with Jennie is the most surprising and shocking relationship that happened.

As I was waiting for my sister and Taehyung to finish, I took my phone first and dialled my wife's number.

"Hello?" She answered with a tensed voice.

"Is there a problem? Why is your voice like that?" I asked.

"Uhm.. Uhh.. Why? Is there a problem with my voice"

"You sound weird. Are you okay?" I asked her full of worry. I think there's something bad happening again.

"Nothing.. I was just in a meeting. I was surprised you called"

"I always call, what's surprising with that?" answered. "And what meeting is that?" I don't want to sound like a possessive husband by asking this but still, I want to know what she's doing and who she's talking to.

"Uhm.. Just visitors. Nothing to worry. How are you by the way?"

"I'm fine and still breathing even if it's hard to be away from you" I said pouting. I miss her so much.

"Jungkook.."

"I know, I know you will say that this is just temporary while the election is not yet over blah blah.. But I miss you. Don't you miss me too?"

"Of course I miss you. I can't wait to see you Jungkook"

"I can't wait to see you too. I love you baby!"

"I love you too. But I need to go now. I'll just call you later okay?" She said in a rush.

"Baby, wai--" she cut me making me frown.

That's weird? Why is she in a hurry all of a sudden.

Soon, Jennie and Taehyung came inside my room and I was surprised to see my sister. "What's wrong with her?" I asked Taehyung and he just gave me this guilty I-don't-know-look.

I looked at my sister who is limply walking.

Judging her this time. I know it's Taehyung's dick's fault.

Poor Jennie, his boyfriend just got the biggest dick in town.

"Okay. Let's plan the proposal." Jennie said when she successfully sat down the chair next to my bed.

Lalisa's POV

After remembering everything, I finally went home to settle things with Eunha. But I had to leave Jungkook in Korea because I know he will go crazy on my cousin for doing that to me.

Of course, he is just worried and mad because of Eunha putting me in danger but I don't want the situation to get worse. Besides, he needs to stay with his father. The election is days close.

The Queen on the other hand had the same reaction with Jungkook. She wanted to have Eunha imprisoned just like her mother. She said, her action for putting my life in danger is just the same with putting the country's future at risk so she needs the worst punishment.

Eunha cried so much and begged for my forgiveness. But I have forgiven her already before she even apologized.

That's why I ask my grandmother to just let it go and just have her live abroad where she can restart her life. Grandmother finally agreed after me pleading saying that she promised me she will agree with everything that I want.

So yeah, everything is fine now. I don't know where Eunha is but my grandmother made sure she cannot step foot on Thailand again.

Now, all I do is wait for the election to finish so that I can see Jungkook again. I really miss him now. But he would always call almost every hour which helps my yearning heart.

Though sometimes, I don't like it when he calls especially during those times when I had to attend a meeting with an important guest.

Yes, my grandmother is now training me to do the meetings when a VIP comes to give a courtesy call and to decide on other matters which concerns the country. She said that I'm ready to be the Queen and I agree. I have always been ready.

I will be the best Queen and I will treat my people with kindness.

I was imagining the future of my country when suddenly Kunpimook entered the room.

"Princess, he is here again." he announced which caused my smile

to fade.

"Let him in" I said with a serious face.

This will be the third day that Dylan visited me. Showering me with gifts and all and I don't like it but I don't want to be rude. He has done nothing wrong to make me upset. My Queen grandmother asked me to be kind to him because his father and my grandmother are really good friends.

Jungkook doesn't know about this but I don't plan on telling him. He will be jealous for sure and I don't want to cause him stress again.

"Princess!" Dylan smiled ear to ear while giving me a bow when he entered my office.

"Mr. Wang, come in" I said forcing a smile on my face.

If Jungkook knows about this, I bet he would fly from Korea to Thailand this very moment.

Dylan took the seat on the chair in front of me and continued explaining his plans which we talked about the other day. He said he will be putting up a Telecommunication business in my country and even if it's not my concern, he's still telling me this.

Suddenly my phone started ringing while we were talking. I almost cursed when I saw the caller id on the screen.

Jungkook is calling..

Shit. Of all the time that he will call, why now?

What if he learns I'm with Dylan?

"Let me take this" I said and Dylan nod.

"Hello?" I answered nervously when I was finally away from Dylan's sight.

"Is there a problem? Why is your voice like that?" he asked.

"Uhm.. Uhh.. Why? Is there a problem with my voice" I asked back. Trying to sound casual.

"You sound weird. Are you okay?" he asked me with a worried voice.

"Nothing.. I was just in a meeting. I was surprised you called." I said.

"I always call, what's surprising with that?" he said. "And what meeting is that?"

"Uhm.. Just visitors. Nothing to worry. How are you by the way?" I asked to divert the topic.

"I'm fine and still breathing even if it's hard to be away from you"

"Jungkook.."

"I know, I know you will say that this is just temporary while the election is not yet over blah blah.. But I miss you. Don't you miss me too?"

"Of course I miss you. I can't wait to see you Jungkook"

"I can't wait to see you too. I love you baby!"

"I love you too. But I need to go now. I'll just call you later okay?"
I said and ended the call.

Sighing. I went back to Dylan and sat back down on my chair to face him.

"That was Jk right?" he asked smiling and I nodded.

"Look, I know there is a grudge happening between you two but I would really appreciate it if you leave me out of it." I said. I don't want to play games with Dylan anymore. Jungkook and I's relationship has been through a lot and we need peace already.

"What do you mean?" he asked confused.

"I know you are trying to take me away from Jungkook but I will tell you right here and right now that I will not be with anyone but him. I'm so sorry Dylan." I said bowing down my head.

"That jerk is one lucky guy for having someone like you. What a faithful princess you are. You make me envy him more." he said bitterly.

"Don't be. I'm not even worthy of any guy's affection."

"You just don't know how amazing you are."

"Dylan..."

"Okay fine, I will stop but the business I plan to put up in this country is still on. If that's okay with you princess?" he chuckled.

"Thank you so much for investing in this country. I hope everything turns out well."

"It will." he confidently said.

"By the way, if your relationship with him turns out sour, don't hesitate to tell me"

"Dylan!"

"What? Jungkook is a playboy. It's impossible for him to focus on one girl only. One day he will get tired of you. I'm sure about that"

"You don't know him that well"

"Trust me, I know him for years. He's just probably whipped now because you are a princess"

I don't know if I will be threatened now with Dylan's words but I'm sure Jungkook will never do that to me. He fell in love with me thinking that I was a boy not because I was a princess.

"If he's so serious about you, he would've married you already now." he said with a challenging voice and I know I had to defend Jungkook on his behalf.

"We are married!" I blurted out which startled him.

"You are? When? How? Why are you not carrying his surname yet?"

"Because it was just a pretend wedding" I said looking down.

"See. Jungkook will always be Jungkook. Everything will be

pretend play to him. If I were you, I will think clearly and consider my offer."

"What offer?" I asked. Is it about the business? I thought I said yes already.

He smiled looking through my eyes.

"Marry me."

Silence followed after.

"Marry you? You don't even know me yet to ask for my hand in marriage?"

Dylan is being impulsive this time. To ask me as a girlfriend is already too much but to ask for marriage is another story.

"Well, I like you so much. I don't really get serious with girls but you're a different case. And your Jungkook's girl so it's an added point."

"You just like me because I'm a challenge?"

"Of course not. Even if you were with Taehyung, I would still ask you this."

"I'm sorry Dylan but I love Jungkook and nothing will change my mind. You are a good guy and girls would be lucky to have you but I'm sorry..my heart beats for him only." I said meaning every word.

"It's okay. I'll just wait for him to mess up which I'm sure he would and I will wait for you." he said and he stood. "I'm going now princess. Think about it again." Dylan took his leave and I just stayed there sighing.

"Princess, Jungkook is asking me who you are having a meeting with. What will I say?" Kunpimook asked.

"Anyone, just don't tell him it's Dylan please."

"Okay." he said and he left.

I really need to be with Jungkook. I hope he decides to marry me soon. I can tell Dylan will never stop until he gets, what he wants.

"Kunpimook, I need you" I called out my most trusted friend through the intercom.

"Yes princess?" he asked when he entered the office.

"Can you call Dr. Jin? I'm not feeling well." I said leaning on the back of my chair to rest my throbbing head.

"I will, just wait on your room princess."



Author's Note

Be ready for the final chapter.

Sorry for being late. I'm so busy with work



Not an Update (Lisa's Birthday)

Lisa's Birthday is far approaching and with this, Lilies and Blinks are planning different activities such as charity events, animal welfare events, cupsleeves events, advertisements and sending gifts and letters for Lisa for her birthday.

Here are some of it:

These are organized by Lisa's fans from Thailand, Philippines, Indonesia and South Korea. While Chinese fans are also planning a Birthday surprise for her.

So if anyone of you wants to help in making her Birthday extra especial, you can donate any amount you can.

Cummulative effort will always be the best in achieving a goal that is why there is no minimum amount for donations.

Lisa has been working so hard and as her fan, we want to make her feel extra especial and happy on her birthday.

For donations, you can send here:

Thank you so so much!!! 🥰

The Final Chapter

Jungkook's POV

My father won.

He is once again elected as the President of South Korea and I couldn't contain my happiness for many reasons.

One reason is that I know how good of a president my father is and I believe he can offer much more progress to this country.

Second, I don't have to worry about Tzuyu anymore. Although my father took help from Tzuyu's country, it's not enough reason for me to treat her like I love her. Our countries has been in a good relation even before we were in a relationship and it will remain as that even if we don't end up together.

Lastly, I will soon see Lalisa.

Jennie managed to invite her over for my father's Celebratory Party tomorrow but little did she know that I will propose to her the same day.

Everything is set. My family is ready. Our friends are ready.

I am ready.

I am so ready to leave my single life and spend it with the woman that I love.

Hopefully she is too.

I have prepared a surprise proposal. Something like you see on TV. Those romantic proposals which a romantic music is played, with candles and flowers everywhere and there are no other people except the two of you.

Seriously, before I met Lalisa, I cringed at those scenes but I changed a lot now. I'm not the cool, self titled playboy jerk anymore but a man who is willing to leave everything behind just to be with her.

Yes, I'm going to have to discontinue my studies for the meantime. I want to be with her first and settle our relationship. Career will just come next.

People might think that I'm just taking advantage of the situation because she is a princess and she fell in love with me but those who are close to me knows the truth that I fell in love with her not because she is a princess and soon to be Queen. I fell for her because of who she really is.

Lalisa will always be the turning point of my life. And I'm so glad

she came.

"Congratulations!!!" Lalisa said on the other line when she answered her phone.

"Thank you so much! Now that my father won, are you sure you can travel here to celebrate?" I asked her hoping I don't sound nervous. I don't want her to know the surprise I am planning.

"Of course, sir Rudolph prepare the private jet already. Expect me to be there in the evening. The party will start in the evening right?" she asked enthusiastically.

"Yes baby. Please take care on your way. I wish Kunpimook can come with you so that I can make sure you are safe." I said not hiding my worried voice. After what happened with Eunha, I can't stop being paranoid at her safety.

"Don't worry, Kunpimook will come with me along with my Grandmother." she chuckled and my eyes widened.

Shit! I forgot about her grandmother!

I forgot on telling her about my surprise proposal and the worst is I forgot to invite her.

What the fuck did I just do? I had just forgotten to include the Queen on my plans!

"Uh.. Oh.. I" I stuttered. Don't know what to say. What will Lalisa think of me now that I just merely forgot about her one and only family?

"Don't be scared Jungkook, she wants to see you. I don't know why but she seems to like you now." her words made me smile.

"Really?" I'm quite sure she's just excited to know if I was able to do what I'm supposed to do.

You know, giving her her great grandchild.

Yes. That's the main reason why she wants to see me. But it's too soon though, she's not yet pregnant and I hope I don't disappoint the Queen.

Lalisa must have noticed my silence. That's why she cleared her throat.

"Your father invited my grandmother. He also invited Mario that's why he is coming with us."

"Oh" is all that I have to say. Right now, I don't see Mario as a threat anymore but a supportive friend. He's been nothing but a good friend to all of us and now I give him my outmost respect. "So I'll be expecting the four of you will travel together?" I asked.

"No, the five of us will go there." she said hesitantly and I frowned.

"Five? who is coming with you aside from the Queen, Mario and Kunpimook?"

"Uhm.. I mean four" she took it back but I can definitely hear the

hesitance in her voice. I know she's hiding something from me.

"Lalisa, tell me. Who is it?"

"Please don't be mad. It was the Queen's idea. I didn't plan on making him come with us but he was invited too and he's here so they decided to just travel together." she spoke too fast that I wasn't able to catch up.

"Wait wait wait... Who's he? Why are you so nervous? And why would I get mad?"

"Jungkook...uhm... Dylan is coming with us on your father's celebration." she finally dropped the bomb and I almost blow out of anger.

"What the hell is he doing with you Lalisa!" I swear to God I'm flying to Thailand right now.

"He paid me a visit. Listen, you don't have to worry. Nothing happened. Everything is fine."

"How come everything is fine when fucking Dylan is there with you? I swear I'm going to break his bones if I see him!"

"Jungkook please calm down."

"I will never come down!!!"

"Okay fine fine, I'll just stay here and not go with them. I will just send your father a congratulatory message just to avoid Dylan"

"You are not doing that! You are coming here! Let Dylan stay there!" I said and I frowned when I realized he's been staying at Thailand. For how long now?

"But grandmother already decided for Dylan to come along. You know her"

"How long has he been in Thailand?" I asked and the line went silent. "Lalisa, tell me."

"More than a week now"

"I fucking knew it!"

"Jungkook I told you, you don't have to worry."

"Tell me, has he ever tried to brainwash you and told you that I don't love you and I'm the worst and you should leave me?" I know Dylan. He will say anything to Lalisa to make her leave me.

"There is nothing he will say that can make me change my mind Jungkook. I love you. You know that"

"I don't know if you love that much!" I said yelling. I'm too pissed to be comforted right now.

"Well then let's talk some other time when you're ready to listen." she said with annoyance.

"Wait--" too late, she ended the call. I tried dialling her number again but she's not answering.

Few more calls and I can't reach her anymore. She turned it off.

I just made my wife pissed because I was pissed.

Fucking Dylan!

Good job Jungkook for ruining your plans! I scolded myself.

Wait! What if she won't come tomorrow at my surprise proposal?

What should I do? It's my fault for being over dramatic. But what can I do? Lalisa collecting fanboys is her worst trait. I don't like sharing especially if it's my girl. And I can't let anyone take her away from me.

I decided to go to Jennie's room and ask her to call Lalisa for me. But she can't reach her too. I have no other choice but to wait for tomorrow.

Hoping she will come to the party.

The Next Day

I woke up feeling anxious. After our small argument last night, I tried to call her again hoping she will answer but she's still not answering.

"She's not answering yet?" Jimin asked while patting my back.

"Not yet." I said looking at the phone screen hoping for her to call me or what.

"I called Jin but he said he is not at the palace now. He's in Malaysia for a Doctors Conference. Why don't you try calling Kunpimook?" Jisoo suggested.

Why didn't I thought about that?

I quickly dialled Kunpimook's number and luckily he answered the call.

"Jungkook?" he asked.

"Is Lalisa there? May I speak to her?" I asked hoping he will let me talk to the princess.

"I'm sorry but she's not letting us in. We tried to enter her room but it's locked. She said she doesn't want to talk to anyone"

"Could you please ask her if she's coming with the Queen?"

"I'm not sure but I think she will. It was planned that she will personally congratulate your father."

"But could you please make sure?"

"I will try to ask her. I'll just call you later Jungkook"

"Thank you so much. I'll wait for your call" I said and the line went off.

I looked at my friends who are looking at me worryly. Jisoo, Jimin and Chaeyoung are here with me in the Blue Palace while Taehyung and Jennie are out making sure everything are ready for later's plan.

"What if she won't come?" I asked again for the hundredth time.

"I bet she will. Don't lose hope Jk. If she won't then just fly to Thailand and ask her hand for marriage there." Chaeyoung said which made me smile.

I really appreciate my friends help. I never thought they would be supporting me so much on this.

"By the way, Mario is coming tonight." I spoke to Chaeyoung and she hesitantly glanced at Jimin.

"Mario and I are over before we even started." she said with a bitter voice.

"Why? I thought you both like each other?"

"I thought so too" she looked down and Jimin rested his arm on Chae's shoulder.

"I told you. He is not good for you" Jimin smiled at Chaeyoung.

"What's happening? Is there something going on between you two?" I asked crunching my nose.

"Nothing!" they both said at the same time.

"Okay. If that's what you say, I'll believe you" I said raising a brow then turned my head on Jisoo.

"How are you and Dr. Jin by the way?"

"We are doing good. He's still waiting for me to finish my studies and after I graduate I'm going to stay with him in Thailand." she answered happily.

"You will live there for him?"

"Of course, I can live in Antarctica if he's there" she laughed at her own answer.

I thought Jisoo wanted to live here in Korea for good. I guess I'm wrong. Loving someone could change everything I must say.

Suddenly, Taeyhung and my sister Jennie came.

"Everything is ready Jk. All we need is you and Lalisa together!" Jennie announced happily but it didn't even lessen the anxiety I'm feeling.

"What's the problem?" Taehyung asked.

"Lalisa is not answering her phone yet. I'm not sure if she'll come" I said and we all got quiet.

"That's what you get for being jealous all the time! Can't you trust her for once? The girl took extra mile just to be with you and you just doubted her feelings. If I was her, I would be pissed too!" Jennie spoke this time making me realize that I really overreacted on her.

"What can I do? We are talking about Dylan here. He is the worst threat that will ever happen to us. But of course I know I overreacted at her." all of them shook their head at my reason.

'Lalisa, wherever you are please show up later.'

I don't mind anymore if she comes with Dylan or what, all I need is for her to come. I had planned everything out and I really wanted to secure our future together.

Later that night, the celebration started. It was attended by high

officials and VIPs from South Korea and other neighboring counties. The venue was filled with chats and laughter. Everyone was happy and rejoicing but I was nervously sweating as I look at the door entrance waiting for a specific girl.

Suddenly, I felt someone poke my back so I quickly turn around hoping to see Lalisa. But I was surprised to see another woman.

"Tzuyu?" I asked to confirm as my feet take steps backward away from her.

She noticed my frightened expression that's why she quickly pulled my hands.

"Wait... Don't go. I need to tell you something." she said holding my hands strongly.

"What is it? Can you make it fast?" I said nervously. I need her to leave me alone before Lalisa sees us like this. If I'm lucky enough to have Lalisa come.

I looked at Tzuyu who looks calmer now. Unlike before, there is no hint of the ones crazy and obsessed Tzuyu in her.

Before I was able to pull my hands away from her, she said a word I never would expect to hear from her.

"I'm sorry."

Lalisa's POV

Part of me wants to come to see Jungkook but also a part of me doesn't want to.

Of course I would want to see him but I'm really mad at him right now.

The past few days I have been irritable at slightest reasons. I don't know why but I get pissed easily.

Just for example a while ago when I shouted at Kunnimook for knocking at my door continuously. Good thing I was able to hold myself and apologized to him for being a bitch.

Kunnimook got concerned so he asked me to just stay in Thailand because he thinks I'm in no condition to travel. But when we called Dr. Jin who is at a conference now. He said that I'm fine and I can go. He even urged me to travel to congratulate the president personally.

Now I wonder why Dr. Jin really wants me to travel to Korea so much.

Maybe his girlfriend Jisoo wants to see me. Yeah that's why.

After hours of decision making, I finally decided to just go. So now, I patiently waited for our private jet to land. Yes, I am with my grandmother, Mario, Kunnimook and Dylan now. Though Dylan is beside me, I ignored him for the hours of trip to Korea.

I don't know what's happening to me but everyone just irritates me even if they did nothing to piss me off which makes me nervous

to face Jungkook. I don't want him to receive the bitchy attitude I have right now.

Ignoring Jungkook's call was never my plan but he somehow frustrates me. He gets jealous so easily even on mosquitos and I hate that. He must have known by now how much I love him but instead of trusting me, he even doubted me just because Dylan is here with me.

"We're near princess" Kunpimook said and I nodded with still closed eyes.

I swear if Jungkook does something to piss me, I will leave Korea as early as possible.

And just imagine how shock I was when we arrived and saw him holding hands with Tzuyu.

"This fucker won't stop cheating!" I said to myself.

And with that I turned my heel and left everyone to walk back out of the building.

"Lalisa!" I heard his voice but I didn't look back. I decided to fasten my steps so that he won't be able to reach me. But Jungkook having longer legs than me was able to stop me by holding my hand to make me look at him.

"What!" I said. Tears started forming in my eyes.

"Where are you going?" he asked with voice laced with worry.

"Leaving" I said. I regret coming here.

"Why are you leaving?"

"Why? You're asking me why? The nerve to ask me that when you were just cheating again! I'm so sick of this Jungkook! I don't want to play games with you anymore! Why do you always have to hurt me?" I asked with my tears falling endlessly.

Jungkook's expression softened at me and the next thing I knew, I was already wrapped around his strong arms.

"I'm not cheating baby. I would never do that again to you. You know how much I regretted those things." he said while brushing my hair with his hand.

"Then what are you doing with Tzuyu?" I asked. I won't believe him anymore at this point if he ever make up lame excuses.

"She apologized Lalisa. She apologized for everything that she has done to us. She even wants to talk with you to ask your forgiveness. That is if you want to talk to her." he said with sincerity in his voice. I looked at him to study his face if he's telling the truth.

"I don't want to talk right now" I said looking down. I'm not in the right mood to talk to anyone for forgiveness because I'm too irritated. But I believe Jungkook is telling the truth.

"I understand if you don't want to talk. But do you believe me?" he asked cupping my face with his hands.

"Yes." I replied. Looking at him now made me realize how much I miss him so much for the past weeks that we were away. Jungkook has gotten more hotter and more good looking than the last time I saw him.

"I'm so sorry for being jealous of Dylan. I swear I will try to hold myself back again whenever guys are around you. I know I should trust you and I should've never doubted your feelings for me. I'm so sorry baby. Will you please forgive me?" he said.

"Okay. I forgive you" I said making him smile. Forgiving Jungkook will always be easy for me. I don't want to fight him for so long. I just miss him and I need to be with him. We have been through a lot already and arguing about who is jealous is just a petty reason for us to fight.

"Really? Thank you so much!" he said and placed gentle kisses around my face.

"Jungkook!" I smacked his arms because I can't breath from his grip and he finally stopped.

"I missed you so much baby. I was feeling terrible without you."

"Me too. But I'm here now. So let's enjoy our night together." I said as I offer him my sweetest smile.

Jungkook leaned closer to my face and pressed his lips on mine. I admit that I miss this. Kissing him like this. So I wrapped my arms around his neck and returned his kiss.

We soon exchange a hot and loving kiss savoring each other's lips as gentle breeze fan over us. We were out of the building and good thing that no one is around. Jungkook's arms were wrapped around my waist as we continue our kiss.

"I love you" he said when we pulled away. His eyes were now locked on mine.

"I love you too." I said back to my ever gorgeous man.

"Let's go somewhere" he offered taking my hand with him.

"Where? Are we ditching your father's party?" I asked him.

"No and yes but you'll see. Come with me!" he said then he pulled me gently leading to a door just next to the main entrance of the building. I was worried and nervous at the same time. What is he doing? Maybe Jungkook wants to have sex. That's why he's pulling me to another place.

"Jungkook, if you want to have sex, it can wait a little later after the party. Everyone must be looking for us now. Let's go back." I said but he just chuckled and continued walking. His palms were sweating and I wonder why.

Suddenly, he led me at a dark garden at the back of the building. It was too dark and I can't see much.

"Jungkook, we can't do sex here. What if people see us?" I said

worriedly. But he didn't answer.

I heard a clicking sound and lights were turned one by one.

I gasped when everything was lighted. The garden was filled with red petals and lights are hung from trees. A sound of violin was being played.

I didn't notice Jungkook was already leading me on the center.

When Jungkook knelt on one knee and took a box, that was it for me. My tears started falling one by one.

"Oh my God!" I said covering my mouth which is now hung open.

"Would you mind to stay with me forever?" he asked as he took the diamond ring from the box.

"Please marry me Lalisa."

I froze on my feet not knowing what to say. Everything looks so perfect. From the scenery, to the ethereal man in front of me holding a beautiful diamond ring.

Then I heard someone shout. "Say yes!" I recognized Jennie's voice. And when I looked around, people were already gathered around us. All of our friends are here shouting "Say Yes".

The Queen, Mario, Kunnimook, Jungkook's parents and other visitors are here too. All of them are smiling at us. My eyes wandered more and notice Tzuyu and Dylan on one corner watching us. Tzuyu was nodding at me while Dylan has his blank expression. When my eyes landed on Taehyung, he gave me a reassuring smile and mouthed "Be happy".

I was so happy and overwhelmed that I forgot the time and how long Jungkook has been kneeling in front of me.

"Ye--" Just as I was about to say yes, everything turned black for me.

Jungkook's POV

"What happened?" I grabbed the doctor's shoulder when he entered the room.

Lalisa is still unconscious after she passed out a while ago. We were so shocked that all of them came with me as we rush her to the nearest hospital.

I'm at my breaking point right now. Just a while ago, Lalisa and I were holding hands and now she passed out? I don't know what to do anymore. The Queen and my parents as well as my friends are here with me at the hospital waiting for her to wake. Sadly, Dr. Jin is not here with us because he is in Malaysia right now. So we had to resort to another doctor.

"Nothing serious. Are you her husband?" the doctor asked.

"Uhm.. I'm her boyfriend." I said glancing up at my parents and the Queen. They are worriedly looking at me as we wait for the

doctor's report.

"She's fine. She's just worn out from travelling. That's a normal case for pregnant women." he said and I nodded.

Good thing nothing serious. She's just pregnant.

Wait what?

"She's pregnant?" all of us asked at the same time. So the doctor tilted his head.

"You don't know? Well she is pregnant and congratulations you are soon to be a father." he said smiling.

"Lalisa is pregnant? Lalisa is pregnant!" I jumped and jumped and jumped as if I won a lottery.

(A/N: Just imagine him reacting like this,)

"Did you hear the doctor mom dad? Lalisa is pregnant!" I was smiling like a lunatic as my parents witness how happy I am.

"We heard him Jungkook. We are very happy to hear this news. I can't wait to see my grandchild." my father said. And mom hugged me so tight.

"I'm so happy for you son." she said.

"Jungkook, please refrain from making more noises. My granddaughter needs proper sleep." the Queen spoke and when I looked at her. She was silently crying. I can see how happy she is. She's crying out of happiness.

"I'm so sorry. I just got carried away." I said and they all laughed at me.

I walked beside my girl's bed and sat beside her. I took her hand and pressed her palm on my face. I took the time to admire her beauty. My beautiful wife's face.

Then I placed my other hand on her belly. I can't believe how lucky I am to have this girl in my life.

And soon I will be spending it with her as we take care of our child.

"Let's leave them for a while" I hear Jennie said and all of them walked out the room.

I was left with Lalisa who is still sleeping. She was peacefully sleeping and I didn't noticed I was also drifting off to sleep while holding her hand.



Author's Note

Thank you so so much for reading this story. I really hope you liked it and enjoyed the journey. I apologize for writing slower than before. And I apologize for the hundred plus chapters.

Thank you also for the votes and comments. I will always appreciate it.

See you again on the Epilogue of this book and please support my New Book which I will publish soon.

Epilogue

Jungkook's POV

"No! I don't want to be a King! that's fucking weird!"

"Jungkook! Language!" my father warned.

"But you will be marrying Pranpriya and she will be the Queen that will automatically make you a King! " the Queen rolled her eyes at me.

"I will marry her but I will not take that position. That is too much for me!" I said panicking. I don't even know how to iron my clothes properly what more rule a foreign country?

"Jungkook, why don't you listen to the Queen first?" my father said.

"But.."

"Listen, I'm too old to stay in this world. And I can feel I will leave Pranpriya soon. The only thing which is keeping me alive is the hope to see my great grandchild. I need to secure everything before I die. I need Pranpriya to have someone she can rely on. And that person is you Jungkook. You will help her in the best way that you can."

"What are you talking about? you are not dying yet! You are stronger than a horse!" I almost yelled. I don't want her to die. I just can't imagine how it will hurt Lalisa if the Queen dies.

"I'm not dying yet now but soon I will. So please accept this. I believe in you Jungkook. I know you will be a good king." she said. I looked helplessly at my parents who are now listening at the Queens proposition.

"Okay. But I need proper training on this. I studied so hard thinking that I will be a president not a King. I have no knowledge on that." I said.

"Of course, you will receive your training. Don't worry Jungkook" the Queen said.

"Okay. But don't die yet. It will make Lalisa cry. I don't want her to cry!" I answered back. I don't know what to say anymore. The Queen just laughed at my response.

We are having a talk. A talk with the Queen and my parents for our future plans as Lalisa still sleeps. Few hours ago, we learned that she is pregnant and so the Queen ask for my presence to talk about our future together.

My parents and the Queen almost fought because of the baby. Mom and Dad urged her to have me and Lalisa stay here in Korea. Because my parents really want the baby to be with them but the Queen didn't approve. Lalisa will be a Queen so she needs to stay in their country. As for me, I will stay wherever my wife is so I will have to follow her.

Now my parents finally agreed to have the wedding held in Thailand. And I couldn't wait.

"Excuse me everyone but the princess is finally awake." Kunpimook announced and I fell from my chair.

Finally! My wife is awake!

I ran to the room where she is staying at and when I open the door, I saw her looking at the window.

"Baby!" Lalisa finally looked at me and smiled.

"Jungkook" she said and open her arms widely to welcome me. I ran to her and hugged her body so tight.

"You're awake!"

"Yes. But why am I here. This is a hospital right?" she asked with confusion.

"Yes baby. Listen, I need to tell you something."

"What is it?" her face turned with worry. "You cheated again?"

"Of course not!" Why does she always think like I would cheat on her again?

"But Tzuyu.. Yeah I remember you proposed to me last night" she said and started blushing so hard when she finally remembered.

"Yes and you weren't able to answer my question. So? Is it a yes or a no?" I gulped after asking the question. I know that she will say yes but what if she changes her mind?

"Of course Yes! I've been waiting for so long for you to ask me that." Lalisa answered so I was finally able to breath in relief.

I hugged her slender body so tight but let go immediately when I realized that there is a baby in her womb right now.

"Thank you Lalisa! I can't wait to spend the rest of my life with you."

"Me too. Let's spend it happily Jungkook."

"We will but for now, wear this." I said pulling the ring from my pocket. Lalisa saw the ring and an excited expression was shown on her face. She quickly offered her hand and I placed the ring on her ring finger.

"It looks perfect on your finger baby"

"Thank you." she said admiring the ring through her eyes. "But Jungkook... Why am I here by the way?"

She asked again and I remembered she doesn't know the truth yet. I breathed deeply and opened my mouth to answer.

"Don't panic." I satrted. "You are pregnant."

"I am pregnant?" she asked with big round eyes. Voice a little high pitched.

"Yes you are. We are having our baby!" I said and she blinked a lot. When the words registered on her, her eyes watered.

"I can't believe it. I'm so happy! Jungkook, you and I now have a family to call our own. Thank you." she said.

"No, I should thank you." I said as I held her by her neck and kiss her forehead.

"No, if it weren't for you cumming inside me over and over, I wouldn't be pregnant." she said.

"No, if it weren't for your warm and tight pus--" I wasn't able to finish my sentence because we heard someone cleared her throat and when I looked up it was my mom.

We looked at the direction when we realized that they were their the whole time listening to our conversation.

Imagine how awkward it is to have you parents and a Queen listen how you talk about how tight and good her pussy is. Too much for having the world on our own.

"Uhm.. Yeah.." I just said rubbing my thigh in embarrassment.

"Now that you're awake. Let us plan out your wedding." The Queen spoke and we listen attentively.

Lalisa's POV

A Month later

Jungkook and I finally got married. It was a grand wedding and was even called the Wedding of the decade. Thai people were shocked by the news. Who wouldn't be shocked when the princess married a foriegn man not known by the public. But thankfully, Jungkook was welcomed by our people warmly.

They expressed their gratitude to Jungkook for loving me and taking care of me. And Jungkook felt a little proud because of it.

Right now we are in the middle of our honeymoon as Jungkook's parents which are now my parents too had us go on a cruise ship travelling around the continent of Europe.

I took pictures of the beautiful scenery infront of me. Where the sea meets the sky.

"You've been taking pictures of the same exact water for an hour now" Jungkook stomped his feet while pouting and I laughed so hard because I can't believe that this exact pouting bunny man will be a King in a few months.

"It deserves to be captured. It is beautiful" I said as I look intro the camera's screen to browse my taken pictures.

"I'm more beautiful than that you know." he said pulling me by my waist.

"I know. And I have a lifetime to look at you but we only had days in this ship so I need to make the most of it."

"By taking pictures?" he raised a brow.

"Uh huh"

"C'mon! Stop that already and let's secure the baby." Jungkook said while kissing my neck. His lips moved down on my chest and even though I am wearing decent clothings, it's still can be removed effortlessly by his mouth.

"Jungkook, someone might see us!" I warned.

"Have you forgotten that my parents rented the entire ship for this purpose?"

"They rented this for us to have peace and time alone! Not have sex in the middle of the ship! We have a room on our own. Let me remind you." I said raising a brow but this devilish man just smirked at me.

"Then let's go there" he said and with one swift motion, he was able to carry me leading to our room.

The room we are staying at was the most spacious one. The bed is big too and I had a feeling it will be put in a good use for the both of us.

Jungkook took all of my clothes together with his. And as always, my eyes are blessed with the view.

"Why do you always look so perfect?" I asked.

"I never know you know how to give compliments. But thanks babe. You look like like a four course meal to me. I can't wait to make love to you for the coming days" he said walking near me.

"Jungkook, isn't it dangerous for the baby if we do this?" I asked.

"Why would it be?"

"Because you might hit our baby deep down there." I said in worry.

"Don't worry, I'll escape the part where the baby is." he said chuckling.

"That's impossible. Your cock can fill my whole being. For sure you'll hit the baby."

"Lalisa, try studying woman's reproductive system first before talking nonsense." he said and we both laughed. I can't believe we are finally happy now after months of trials and hardships.

Jungkook started consuming my whole body so I returned the pleasure back.

Just before I lost my sanity from the pleasure of his mouth in me, he quickly moved his face back to my face and entangled his tongue on mine. His cock finally lined on my drippingly wet core and then sank all of his length inside me that I had to grip the sheets.

He started moving making me arch my back but his mouth still

lingered on mine making it hard for me to breath.

We were so lost at the feeling of each other's warmth. And I can't believe sex can be this satisfying after a wedding.

"Oh god Jungkook it feels so good!" I moaned in delight as he keeps pounding his cock inside me.

Jungkook lifted my feet in the air and moved deeper in me with a rougher and faster motion.

"Lalissaaa" he shouted then pushed his cock for the last time before cumming in me as I also take my high.

We came together and it was perfect. My body never felt so good like this before. Only him could make me go crazy like this.

He lie down beside me and pulled my body to make my head rest on his chest.

"I love you my princess!"

"I love you too Jungkook!"

"Now go ahead and sleep first. I don't want to tire you on our first day" he said and I nodded.

We were finally able to sleep peacefully as real husband and wife.

6 years later

Jungkook's POV

"Lalice!" get back here!" I heard my wife yelling on the garden.

"What is it this time?" I asked Kunpimook why the Queen is loud so early in the morning.

"Your daughter took a sword and challenged a guard. The Queen was not pleased so she's chasing the princess because she's been running with the sword. The servants can't do anything about it. So the Queen had to step in." Kunpimook answered and I sighed.

It has always been like this.

6 years after marriage, We are finally nestling in the palace as a happy family. The Queen died a year after Lalisa had given birth to a set of twins. Lalice and Jacko. Lalisa finally took the the crown making her the Queen as I took the name of a King.

We had lived peacefully until both our children grow. What's funny is that Lalice being a princess doesn't act like one. Instead, she said she wanted to be a prince and not a princess which worries me and Lalisa. While Jacko grew up to be soft and gentle and he would always cry at the slightest reasons. Even when someone just steps on an ant is enough reason for him to cry.

As I observe both of my children, I had realized that they are exactly the opposite but both of them took the traits from Lalisa.

Lalisa is known to be very kind and gentle. A trait that Jacko got. But she is also brave and that's what Lalice got.

"Where is Jacko?" I asked Kunpimook when I realized I haven't seen my son yet this morning.

"He's taking care of an injured bird My King."

"Injured bird? Where did he found it?"

"At the garden. But sadly the bird is in bad condition and I think it will die soon" I frowned when he said this. Knowing my son, I know he would mourn for weeks if this bird dies.

"Please do everything to help the bird." I ordered and Kunpimook rushed out immediately. But not long after, Jacko came rushing in my arms with tears falling on his cheeks.

I already knew what happened.

"Father! The bird..."

"The bird died!" he said crying so hard in my chest. I wrapped my arms around my little boy's body as I calm him down.

"Hey! Stop crying. The bird can now rest in peace. Don't you think it's better for it to go to heaven?" I said with a calm voice. Lalisa has taught me to be considerate of Jacko's feelings. I know how soft he is and as his father, I need to support him and calm him on times like this.

"But.. I'm so sad father!"

"I know, but you've tried your best already so please stop crying and man up! Be tough Jacko." I said with a very gentle voice and his round eyes which he got from his mother looked at me.

"How to be a real man dad? I want to act manly just like you? Lalice told me that I'm a coward." Jacko asked and I can't help but smile. His twin sister can be a bully sometimes.

"How to be a real man? Hmmm.." I held my chin to think and suddenly thought of something. "I believe you should ask you mother about this." I said and confusion grew in his eyes.

"But mother is a girl? How can she answer my question?"

"Believe me, you mom is tougher than dad." I chuckled as I recall our memories back then. Those times that she acted more braver than me and fought for our relationship while I was more coward. If Lalisa didn't fought harder, she would have married Mario by now.

"Okay, then I'll ask mother!" Jacko hopped out of my lap excitedly and ran to where my Queen is.

At night,

The Queen finally walked inside our room.

"Finally, my baby is here. Where were you?" I asked.

"I had a long talk with Jacko and Lalice. Those two are having issues of their own at a very young age." She answered then sat on the vanity chair to remove the clips on her hair. I watch as she let her long hair down.

Over the years, Lalisa's beauty never faded. In fact she's gotten more beautiful as days goes by and I can't help but smile at how lucky I am.

Well, I just married a Queen. A beautiful queen with a beautiful heart and she gave me two beautiful children.

(A/N: Imagine them wearing these.)

"

Why are you smiling?" she asked when she saw me spacing out. She walked to me and lay beside me. She's still wearing her long dress but she's no longer wearing her shoes.

"I'm just happy."

"Why are you being sentimental suddenly?" she teased and lay her head on my chest.

"I just recalled our journey to this." I said pointing at us. "Thank you baby for bringing me joy. You just don't know how much you changed my life."

"No, I should be the one thanking you. Before I met you, I was really alone. I don't have friends and all. But it all changed when I came to your country. Since I met you, everything changed for me. You make me happy Jungkook." she said and I had to kiss her forehead for that.

"Do you regret choosing me over Taehyung, Jimin, Mario or Dylan?" I asked gently. I learned how to control my insecurities already. Lalisa has proven me enough that she really loves me but I just want to ask her again. I wanna know her thoughts on us.

"Of course I regret nothing. Besides, if I choose one of them, there would be no Taehyung and Jennie, Dylan and Tzuyu, and Lastly Jimin and Chae right?" she said and I nodded.

Well I can say that we all found peace on our other halves now. My sister married Taehyung and they now have their son They are both happily married and Taehyung is now the President of Korea. Which was really funny because it was never his plan to run for presidency but after Jennie said that she wanted to run, Taehyung got worried because she was already pregnant that time that's why he run in her place.

Jisoo and Jin on the other hand is now married and are currently living here in Thailand. Jisoo settled as a devoted housewife to her Dr. Husband. They now have one daughter younger than Jacko and Lalice.

Jimin and Chaeyoung was the most shocking couple we ever heard. Well, 5 years ago, Chaeyoung was taken by her real parents to New Zealand. It saddened Jimin a lot because she misses her. But what we didn't know was that both have already developed feelings for each other. So after five years of being away, Jimin followed her to New Zealand and now they are together. The news shocked us all except Jennie and Jisoo. I believe they know about the two's growing relationship already. Jimin's parents was very against it at

first. But they can't do anything about it now because both Jimin and Chae eloped.

As for Dylan and Tzuyu, after my proposal to Lalisa at my father's party. Tzuyu and Dylan were introduced which blossomed into a relationship. Now they are married and is currently staying China. They have two children now. We finally came to peace that we even attended their wedding.

Mario is still single and still focused on his position as a Prime Minister. You can say that I got really close to him and Kunpimook that we would usually talk about a lot of things. Those two young man serves as my adviser on decision making whether it is about a family matter or in rulling the country.

"Lalisa" I called her attention while I drew circles on her arm.

"Hmmm?"

"Do you remember the last time?" I asked and she smiled.

"A month ago?" She answered.

"We've been really busy with our children yeah?"

"Yes, we are."

"Let's make love." I said and hovered over her. I looked at her loving eyes and she smiled nodding her head.

I didn't wait any further and removed her dress. My fingers were quick but I maintained a calm expression.

She just lay they while she wait for me to finish removing all the obstacles. Too much for wearing these King and Queens' royal clothings. Sometimes I get annoyed with these. I can't tear them off simply because the clothes we are wearing now costs a fortune.

When Lalisa and I were finally naked, I looked at her entire body and memorized every edge and curves of it. Her body will always be my home.

Leaning closer, I sealed her lips with a kiss. Her lips are always soft and hot against mine. I kissed her. Every part of her body because it deserves to be pleased and praised. When I focused on eating her cunt, it was a moaning mess for her. She began panting and sweating a lot when I made her cum through my mouth.

"I love you" I said and sank down down my cock inside her wetness. I moved slowly helping her adjust to my size. She has always complained about the size that's why I need to be gentle to her.

Soon, both of us can't take the slow and gentle pace anymore. "Jungkook, harder please." So I began pounding harder, rougher and deeper.

"Yes..oh God yes Jungkook!" she was moaning so hard. Her eyes are watery and her skin and hair were damp from the excessive sweating.

"Jungkook, push everything in!" she begged, her voice laced with so much pleasure.

So I sank all of the remaining length of my cock that she had to grip my shoulders so hard creating scratches in it.

I kept a fast pace, pounding her pussy so fucking hard that Lalisa's pussy was so red from my roughness. Then, her body shook. Her legs stretched in the air and toes curled. When her body arched she had to scream my name expressing the pleasure I had given her. All of my senses worked and finally I came in her so hard and so strong. I closed my eyes and focused on my breathing as I spill everything in her.

A smile formed on her lips when she recovered and opened her arms to offer an embrace.

I embraced her and nuzzled my face into her sweaty neck still my cock was buried inside.

"Thank you baby! Thank you for choosing me, for loving me, for everything." I whispered.

"I never for once regretted choosing you. I love you Jungkook. Thank you for making me happy. And thank you for sacrificing your dream for me."

"Anything for you baby. Hmmm.. Would you like another round?" I asked and she chuckled.

"I would love too but we need to rest. We are needed by our son and daughter tomorrow."

"Yeah I remember. What did Jacko ask you?" I asked and kissed the tip of Lalisa's nose.

"He just came rushing at me asking me How to be a real man. I would really want to answer him but Lalice took charge of his brother and promised him she would teach him the ways of a man." Lalisa said and we started laughing.

"Our daughter is really something." I can't help but smile at how our daughter is.

"I know" she smiled. "So, we need to give those two more guidance from now on. Come and let's sleep." she said and I hummed in response.

"Goodnight my Queen!" I said and gave her a kiss on the lips.

"Goodnight my King!" she replied.

Then both of us sleep with happy smiles on our faces.



Author's Note

I'm so so sorry for the late Epilogue my loves. But finally I was able to come up with one. Thank you so much for reading this story and for voting and for leaving comments. It was a fun 3 months of writing so far because of you.

Then I hope you all support my new book titled Great Teacher Jeon. It's Another Liskook Story you would all love.

Unlike my other books, the story will be slow paced because of the struggles of each students. But I will do my best to satisfy you all.

As of the moment, our country is under lockdown and we had to stop working. So with this, I can finally focus on writing.

So please check this book out. I'm gonna publish it soon.

Thank you! 🥰🐼